

HENRY JOSEPH DARGER-

"THE HISTORY  
OF  
MY LIFE"

*Microsystems, Inc.*



VOLUME

THREE

*Microsystems, Inc.*

→ 71 tension + antipathy do not rest as much on personal qualities as on group attributes:

"We-group" - v - "They-group"

- tendencies to depreciate, dislike, +

under estimate other, usually somehow competing or rival group.

2 topics:

A) Nature of Race.

From: Scientific Aspects  
of the Race Question.  
Jennings, Berger.

@ univ. concept "biological concept referring to a group of blood-related human beings whose common hereditary physical traits (present in every member of the group) sufficiently differentiate them from members of other groups."

between 12000 - 30000 - "pops" each yr.

- skin - lips - nose - hair > all needed for race.

- The crit of membership in the colored "race" is less one of biological inheritance + physiological type than the

A) community's recognition of the member's possession of those characteristics

B) even - of his negro ancestry when those characteristics seem to be completely lacking.

C) + the member's own consciousness of his membership

Senator James Eastland - → Miss. Citizens Council.

- de-seg. = "monstrous crime" -

"those who moved our little children of both races in our schools are following an illegal, immoral + sinful doctrine..."

"We conclude: - interracial problem

defined - as that existing condition of social relations between the colored + non-colored population groups in which the phenomena of dissociation and conflict resulting from exploitation + discriminatory segregation of the weaker by the

stranger group is predominant.

- slavery U.S v Slavery S.A.

- Now, since the Civil Rights Act - Ruler report - "St. Negro"

- Volz rights

Rose - Race Psychology + Discrimination - p. 432.

Current Social Problems - M. H. Overholt Schreyer

- Philosophical - Analysis of word meaning.

Brown - Ray - on p. 4

2631 477

"Do know the reason?" asked Simon Segree.

"I don't suppose there was any reason except just wickedness" replied John Scanton.

"Tell us the reason" said I earnestly.

"Well in Dargen for weeks ago these four men and farmer Jones were friendly. They visited him and he visited them and every thing was pleasant between the five. At that the four living brothers were in love with a girl not too pretty was but they were not homely either.

They cast lots among each other and the eldest won. This farmer was also in love with her and really did need a wife to help him as cash and house keeper in his house.

The farmer had his mother and father while living, they were lovely yet and his mother taught the young woman how to do house keeping and excellent cooking, and many other things that added to her full happiness and content.

Finally it was the farmer who won and married her at the Sacred Head convent in So Salie, now burst by the recent tornado. That elder brother was very jealous of the fact he lost out and secretly tried to put out some means of revenge on both.

In this he was more clever than any one suspected. The three other brothers

stranger group is predominant

- slavery

478 2637

aided with him and to get even with the farmer set the wreckage fire on fire.

- Now

so that that, poor farmers wheat would catch and burn. The girls whom the elder brother lost said they will be furnished for this, for if this becomes a very big fire and miles of fields are destroyed, you if captured by the other farmers will be lynched.

- Vol 12

Rose

- R

Frightened by this threat they at once try to run off and disappear. Four persons two farmers and their wife and children witnessed this shocking scene and so did many other persons. The news of the captured party was carried to S. S. Sallie and as I know you ordered them turned over to the Guard.

The poor farmer was devastated by the loss of his wheat and was a long time recovering. His wife took good care of him by the help of his mother.

The result of the treachery of those four men you have seen and despatched fought. And the smoke had made the people of many places miserable and sick. That is why even so Sallie fears the stroke of the wind should change.

This story filled my heart with sorrow and the others with great feeling of defeat and indignation.

2637 479

"I now understand" I said, why the people in so Sallie fear should the wind change."

"Yes" Simon Segue answered "Now that you know the story it is easy to understand. Those four men set the debris fire, hoping to ruin his rival wheat anything would do and by destroying his wheat fields, ruin him financially. Then they could easily break him.

Also they had another reason for wanting to destroy his wheat fields. They feared he would make more profit than they. That was why they finally set the fires, at the time they would be captured by the farmers and their families. Of course too this setting the fire frightened all the farmers all around for the safety of their fields lay in keeping the debris fire free."

I smiled grimly but my smile was an angry one. I found myself confronted with a serious problem and although I had no thought of despairing, I realized the four men and trusted us in claiming the debris was on their property, that every one were in grave trouble and that unless we could find a means to prosecute them for they would get away with only six months sentences. I sent one of my men for the head of the National Guard.

The people of you will follow.

480 2634

"In such a dilemma" I said nervously  
nothing is gained by haste. Careful

thought may aid us and so may the  
course of events. The unexpected is always  
likely to happen and cheerful patience  
is better than reckless action."

"All right" returned John Manley  
take your time, Henry there's no bit  
of hurry."

As I learned it was true that all the  
people were frightened and anxious over the  
transformation of the conflagration into two  
enormous and smoking smoulders.

The smoulders were feared and hated  
for belief if the wind changed to east  
they too would be smoke out.

Several of the leading fighters came  
to ask from me advice and to question  
Simon Degree of whom they knew nothing  
except that he claimed to be a forest fire  
fighter and the highest leader next to  
me.

"If what you told Manley was the truth"  
they said to him "you are our lawful  
leader and we may depend on you to get  
us out of our difficulties."

"We will try to do that" I graciously  
assured them, but you must remember  
such smoulders like those in the  
country is something new to us and  
are such as ever a powerful force

2635 481

which could not overcome. However it  
is sometimes necessary to consider what is

really burning in order to accomplish  
good and by studying the nature of these  
smoulders I may be able to save every  
one from the smoke peril.

Do you promise to help me if I make  
some very desperate plan?"

They promised willingly.

Then I continued "I will go up higher on  
this hill. Perhaps what I find from there will  
be of use to me. In the meantime tell all  
the people to fear nothing about the  
smoke but have patience."

This speech cheered the men amazingly.  
Really it seemed they had no one now to  
depend upon us - but me and Degree, and  
in spite of the dangerous position caused by  
the smoulders, their hearts were light  
and eased by the hope everything will  
be well.

Far into last night I had sat in  
my tent studying a roll of scrolls in search  
of a way that would overcome this mysterious  
ground and blazing hot smoulder fire.

I had also made many experiments  
with small smoulders myself, much  
hoping to discover something that would  
aid me. Yet the morning found me  
still unsuccessful.

Usually five fighters have whipped

The people of your city

482 2636

any type of forest or ground and brush  
fire you may be sure but you must

realize that this smoulder fire was of very  
mysterious origin. It grew worse and worse  
into of smouldering out and therefore  
nothing would have any  
sort of effect upon it.

The only way to solve this  
strange mystery then to get the best  
of this smouldering inferno was to test  
the ground in this neighborhood. If this  
was done and the ground turned out to  
be inflammable heat nothing could be  
done to stop this smoulder.

This day itself even in the morning  
we had tried soles in various ways near the  
smoulder but without success.

Then we had to abandon this attempt?

There must be other ways to get at this  
dam smoulder and such ways we must  
find by study and the proper use of  
our powers to destroy it.

"It won't be easy," declared Simon.  
for we must not forget that others  
among us leaders understand considerable  
ways of fire fighting and have doubtless  
tried to cut out the smoulder in find  
out other means to defeat or  
destroy it.

"That is true" I returned but there

2637 483

way of fire fighting is not helping  
any at all while I or you are a wizard

and Sorcerer at it. In this way all of us  
leaders have a great variety of fire fighting  
experience to work with and if we should  
all fail it will be because the ground  
is inflammable heat off of

which none of us is acquainted with. My  
idea is to work by such means as we  
possess to accomplish our object by  
another way. I've got dry dusty ground in  
this part I'm going to experiment with.

I've made a small hot wood fire here  
on which now you see me place the bottom  
of this part. If when the bottom gets  
hot this dust begins to burn then it  
is inflammable heat.

So? did this? I saw a woman, a teen  
aged girl and three well dressed men coming  
up to me. The woman came first the others  
quickly followed and gathered in a wonder  
my group just within ten feet of me.

I was sitting beside the bucket, my  
feet lazily extended, my hands clasped  
behind my head. I was leaning back  
at my ease and calmly smoking a long  
tube. The leaders my men were gathered  
around me.

"Well well" I said when the 'invaders'  
had stood in silence for a moment  
staring about them. This visit is an

The people of your city

stranger group is predominant

- slower

484 2638

- Now

- Volby

Rose

unexpected pleasure I arrive you? know  
for some reason you were coming and?

know why you are here you are not  
welcome, for I cannot use you or any of  
you to my advantage but as you insisted  
on coming I hope you will  
make this noon time as

brief as possible, you may  
have craftily slipped past the guards  
because I left orders to them not to let  
you come here no matter who you are under  
no conditions

It won't take long to train you but  
mean with me. You will ask me to  
release the four prisoners and my reply  
will be that you may try to force me  
if you can.

"Sir" answered the woman in a tone of  
rebuks, "you are a cruel and heartless man,  
I suppose you imagine because you sen-  
tenced my husband to six months in  
jail that you are more powerful than a  
circuit judge is and will be able to  
triumph over us."

"Yes," I said, "nicely filling my pipe  
from a copper bowl that remained  
at my right, that is exactly what  
I imagine." It will do you, and good  
good to demand from me the  
four prisoners who set this big  
fire. Neither will I return to

2639 485

return to you your husband or the other  
three who were captured and jailed. They did

this to get even with a farmer. Besides I did  
not sentence them, the military Court  
Marshall did, but I am not so foolish  
to go back on them and not release  
them though I have power to do so.

But bear this in mind, you came up  
here without permission or a pass and if  
I so desire I could place you under  
arrest."

"My man is still my husband  
whatever he did," declared the woman.  
This town age girl is my eldest  
daughter and this oldest man is my  
father, the other my grandfather.  
And you be bear this in mind, miserable  
fight fire fighting leader. We intend  
to liberate them or rescue them in  
time, but I first duty and pleasure  
will be to find means to conquer  
you and get even and break into  
the jail.

They will break into the jail and also  
conquer," I said. "I really like to see  
how you can do it." The way to conquer  
is to act, and he who acts promptly  
is sure to win. They are in a very  
good prison of which I am sure they  
cannot escape. Please amuse yourselves  
in any way you like, but I must beg

The people of your city



486 2648

you to excuse me as I have business with this bucket of earth or dust

Saying this I looked at the stuff inside the bucket for it was smoking very badly. I shook it up and red-hot dust appeared. The smoke was like smoke from burning leaves but much stronger.

I was amazed to discover this. I was also shocked, grieved and discouraged. The fire was also burning just as well something almost impossible to put out. And all this because of those four men. Why did they do such a wicked bold thing?

And who could wish them five bags to be set free. And why did they wish just because the farmer won the girl to deprive him of his fields and stock.

Five that wiped out a vast country side and ended up in this infernal smoulder and hell of smoke.

I was thoughtful for a time considering the consequence of the loss of wheat to so many hard working farmers.

I was both angry and alarmed over the fact of these Dela Sob pleading for the suspects. As the interceders seeing they could get nothing out of me and that noticing the men showed hostility, moved away I sat down on the summit of the hill and how tired

to think how this extra 2648 487 ordinary incident could have taken place. It was evident that the four suspects were some persons of very great

importance or already three times the pleading for their freedom could never be accomplished.

But who in all the State of Ill was the type to plead for persons who had been skillful enough to do this awful thing.

And who having the nature could also have an object in defying a military Council of 20. Sallie Till. I thought over this perplexing matter for a full hour at the end of which time I was still puzzled how to explain it.

Just now the head officer of the National Guard came. I told him everything confirmed by Simon Segue of the delegates coming three times to plead for the prisoners, and the threat to break jail to free them.

"I want you to see that the jail at Mountstown is strongly guarded," I said.

"I see will be answered," two men to keep the Dela Sob brothers and sister from coming to bother you?"

"Yes indeed. Have the soldiers to arrest the next corner."

This was soon to be obeyed.

"I don't you suppose those four men would listen to reason?" asked Manney. I explained to them how wicked they had

The people of your are



488 2642

been in setting the big fire don't you think they'd be sorry and confess their

sin to a priest?

"And make resolution for the awful loss they caused?" added Jim Scanlon.

"Yes yes won't they say they're sorry and get on their knees and beg our pardon?" cried Simon Lee turning a flip flop to show his scorn of the suggestion.

"When they do that please do knock at the door, a front door and let me know. And what are they, men who consult them, unless alone others? In this case these four men have been naughty enough to cause a whole township of wheat and grain to go up in flames, and it is more wicked to be an incendiary than to be any other sort of outlaw."

While I was walking around to look over the stubborn snowdrifts I overheard this strange conversation.

"Who is Mr. Darger. I'm a woman. They say he's sentenced my son in jail for the charge of making this big fire. I want to please to him to release him if possible."

"Why he is a great fire fighter who lives in Morris town. He's come here since the tornado and this great here. I'm told he uses the ruins of

of that Wachen castle on the top of a fine hundred foot hill east of here beyond what was Jamez. You see Mr. Darger became such a powerful fire

fighting leader that he didn't care what would happen as long as he could conquer this vast field and country fire.

So he took up headquarters in the ruins of that splendid Wachen castle which was so strong that it was believed a million battering rams could not batter it down, until the tornado tore it up like a box of card board paper. But there you may interview him."

"This is good news" I heard the woman declare "for I think this is the man I am searching for to free my son. But why is he called a experience forest fire fighter?"

Once he was a very common citizen in La Salle, and also in Lincoln Ill and Chicago, and worked on a farm when young. I heard the woman reply partly reply. But she was descended from the greatest forest fire and ground fires who has ever lived in this or any other country and who fought fires out in the Western States - and one day, Mr. Darger the forest fire fighter discovered all the books and recipes of his famous father which had been hidden away in the attic of his home. So he began to

The people of your area

490 <sup>2644</sup> study the papers and books and to <sup>pract</sup> practice fire fighting and in time he became so skillful that

as I said he won many stubborn fire fights and during the conflict here which was a draw he took up headquarters in that castle"

"Do you think he would be merciful enough to free my son?"

"Well I heard the man reply, I won't say that he is an easy mark exactly and I suppose he would not be too proud to refuse your request, if he is inclined to do so."

"Why would he refuse otherwise" questioned the woman.

"Don't ask me my dear woman Mr Darger doesn't tell me why he does things I assure you"

"Then I must go and ask him myself," declared the woman.

"I wouldn't do that if I were you" I heard the speaker advise. "If Mr Darger has really sentence your son as a fire bug because of this fire, he will surely keep him a prisoner for those six months in spite of all your threats and entreaties. And with all his supreme authority, he would be a dangerous person to even threaten. Therefore if you are wise you will go back home again and

wait until his six months. 2645 491 sentence is up. But perhaps it is not Mr Darger who sentenced them. Perhaps it is the military court Marshall, as we heard"

"The only way to settle that question" I heard the woman reply, "is to go to Mr Darger, Cattle and plead with him there. If he won't free my son I'll repeat the matter to the Supreme Court in St. Gall, and I'm pretty sure they will find a way to free my darling son from the jail."

"Well do as you please" I heard the speaker say. "If you are also jailed don't blame me for not warning you. I don't see either how you got through to here. He placed guards to prevent you kind of people from coming in here."

"So that's what he would do is it?"

I heard the woman say in an angry defiant tone. "I should think he'd be ashamed of himself for not wanting to free her son. But I mean to face him in that Wicker Castle and force him to free my son."

"To me" I heard the speaker say in a reflective manner. "It looks like a dangerous person against people pleading for persons in jail. I hope he won't be so unkind as to sternly argue the matter with you."

"Dunce" I heard the woman shriek. I then saw her before Teddy shaking her long finger under his nose. "Why

492 246  
2647

do you stand there idle when my son  
is in jail. He is in danger of losing his  
reputation as a jail bird, his comrades are  
in danger, & his mother is in danger  
of being ruined in character utterly utterly  
utterly "utterly"

I saw her rise around in a frozen  
circle, and appeared to tear out handfuls  
of her hair and cast it upon the  
ground

"I must think muttered the man in  
a faint voice"

"Think if you can" I heard the woman  
suff "Can you think of my darling  
son in a prison for nothing at all? Can  
you think of a way to save this mould-  
ering grounds & even, and my son is  
blamed for this"

"Has your ladyship forgotten he  
was court-martialed by a Military Court  
and not by our leader?"

"The Military Court" chattered the  
woman, "No one told me that. I will  
go to the National Guard then"

"The National Guard" muttered Teddy  
"No one would help you out there. You  
would face extreme danger of jail your  
self following you is no cause"

"What do you call this" demanded  
the woman indignantly "Is there  
any proof he with the others brought

the enormous holocaust  
to be imprisoned for six  
months for something he says he never  
did without me lifting a finger to save  
him?"

"It is a pernicious and wicked thing to  
interceded for those who started this hell"  
fumed Teddy shaking his finger at the  
woman "How do we know you are truly  
his mother and not another of those Sister  
Dala Gobs?"

"I have proof to show right here"  
snobbed the woman. "I have pictures of him"  
the woman paused to wipe her eyes "Here  
are pictures of him"

Pressing her head in her hands she  
began to weep afresh

"There there" begged another leader  
that sounded a like Carter Green. "Don't cry  
my dear. Mr Danger may relent for your  
sake."

"Set her cry, roared another man stamping  
furiously up and down. "The mischievous  
wench should have brought her son up  
right. He with the rest has ruined us  
all. Nothing but a big long devalued  
ruin can put out this smoulder in-  
ferno now Set her go to Mr Danger.  
If he yields to her all right. If he don't we  
won't and won't do anything. Where is  
your husband? Or got any?"

"He had come with me but a great crowd  
crowd of your men have gathered. At

"The people of your...

494 2649

First at a distance they had feared at him suddenly, wearing their arms shaking their heads and looking so hostile and menacing that my husband was frightened. Turning his back upon them he started to walk away, away as one of the men advanced threateningly upon him.

Then despite my entreaties he began to run, and the crowd to run after him. Dodging, dodging as best as he could the sticks and stones and other missiles of his pursuers my poor bewildered husband ran on screaming very large: he soon outdistanced them. He is somewhere but where I don't know. They called him, molly coddle, brother del. rob. and sympathizer of firebugs.

"Sir," began Simon Regree looking at me "I have jotted down for you great convenience the problems to be solved and the mysteries of this smouldering to be accounted for. First we must find the means of conquering it.

Secondly we must undo if possible as much of the conflagration mischief as we can, destroy the smouldering furnace, any more person that come pleading for the release of the

prisoners and return to 2650 495  
"the farmer their loss" will do it" asserted.

As the woman had went away nothing. We saw two strangely dressed dressed tall men approaching us, wearing clothing the like of which we never had seen before. None of us however relaxed his dignity or showed a movement that we were startled.

I stood still where I was. Simon still remained seated, along side of me, Stanley stood with his muscular arms folded and Manley, he stood between us. With one consent we remained, silent eyeing with steadfast looks the intruders who were making their way into our domain.

"Well met brothers" said one of the strangely dressed persons coming to a halt beside the group of us while his companion a little taller lagged far behind.

"We are not brothers" returned Stanley sternly. "Who are you and how came you past the guards? Are you more of those pleading for those damn prisoners?"

"No we are delegates from Joliet" said the shorter man. Our head-quarters is in Joliet and we have come to warn you that the people

The people of your city

496 2657 of Joliet who remained on  
spite of every thing, are about  
to make a serious complaint if you  
leaders don't soon find means to make

war on these two big smoulders and quench  
them so they'll become subdued or out of  
existence so we can be rid of all that  
damn smoke and smother"

A low roar of anger arose from the near-  
est crowd of fire fighters-

"Who expects us to do that?" asked Stevens  
"We can't get within a mile of its awful heat,"  
and he arose to his feet

The people of Joliet said the first man,  
"But how will we be doing it? Even the  
fire departments that can be spared from

La Salle and near by places can't reach with  
their hoses because of the heat so how do  
you expect us to do it?" inquired John  
Scanlon

"That's what I've come to talk to you  
about"

You needn't talk. Even a big host of angels  
can't fight this fiery smoulder" screamed  
the nearest men. "We'll be working a  
tremendous miracle. We'll transform this  
inferno into a pure bubbling lake of water  
full of fish. We'll make it into a  
sea of restored wheat we'll -"

Silence? growled and the crowd of  
men obeyed although still trembling with  
wrath. My gaze very steadily wandered  
over the two strangely dressed men

### Memo of Telephone Numbers

| NAMES           | NUMBERS | NAMES    | NUMBERS |
|-----------------|---------|----------|---------|
|                 |         |          |         |
|                 |         |          |         |
|                 |         |          |         |
| DOCTOR          |         | DRUGGIST |         |
| FIRE DEPARTMENT |         | POLICE   |         |
| MADE IN U.S.A.  |         |          |         |

## MOY'S HAND LAUNDRY

DRY CLEANING AND GOOD SERVICE

Open Daily 7:30 A.M. to 8 P.M.

Sunday 10 A.M. to 1 P.M.

948 W. Webster Ave.

Chicago 14, Illinois

teeth  
The people of your city Joliet

2652

Monday

Monday  
 "Why the people tell me all this you  
 know, it appeared the man and my  
 comrade from garden turning to his companion  
 come from about hotel and we heard  
 the people telling this how he and  
 must have come and make it go out  
 all the way from  
 that they are coming a theater  
 and it is a high rank  
 man who we do not  
 know who he is  
 to be called only help and asked my  
 teeth people of your city hotel in 1914



265 I have not been our special friends  
or acquaintances, they have not been  
our enemies. They have let us alone  
and we have let them alone. There is  
no reason of friction between us  
be cause of this smoulder. They could  
not harm us, and we won't harm  
them. I again say I believe you're tell-  
ing us lies, you clownish dressed  
men who I once said before as most  
some sort of mixed up phantoms  
who are neither one thing or another?  
I turned to Scanlon "What do you  
think John?" I asked.

Heard these mixed clowning away?  
Henry replied. "They are mis-  
chief makers!"

Don't do that - don't do that - said Simon  
nervously. "The stranger said he would  
tell us what to do. Let him tell us  
then are we fools not to heed a  
warning?"

I turned to Scanlon, then the stranger  
speak stranger. "Common and, this way.  
Well said the man it's a fine country.

Joliet says this was a fine country  
until this fire ruined it. I saw you  
had hard work to fight this fire, and  
never had a bed to sleep in for all  
this time. But you're better than most  
fire fighters. So why should you not  
find means to successfully fight that  
smoulder out, and not our town of all  
that smoke. So I propose that before  
this smoulder gets worse, that all  
of you get together and make the  
magnificent river put out this lay

"What good would that do us?" asked  
John Manley.  
"It would help you put out this  
smoulder for one thing and you could

266  
enjoy the victory as if you had  
beaten an enemy army."  
"How are we to flood the smoulder?"  
"We have no means to make the  
river flood the fields," said Scanlon.  
"But this is only a part of my  
plan," insisted the "clown".  
"to the rest of it. When you have  
opened a levee the smoulder will be  
wiped out as soon as possible."

"For a moment no one spoke," then  
I said:  
"Prove it!"  
"Prove what?" asked the man.  
"Prove that you can make the river  
transform this smoulder into a flood.  
If you are a river engineer transform  
this smouldering inferno into a lake of  
water. Then we will believe it can  
be done. If you fail you'll have  
to get out of here."

"All right," said the man.  
He went with his companion towards  
the river. He was not long in  
coming back.  
"It can't be done," he said. "This  
land scape is high above the  
river."

As I turned around I caught a  
sudden hush to fall on the nearest  
of the assemblage.

"Brothers," I said through my loud  
loud speaking trumpet. "Two strangers  
has come among us who is a planner  
and thinks we can swamp this  
smouldering fire by means of the  
river. Then these two strangers has  
come to us from Joliet to  
warn us of a danger which  
threatens us all and to offer a way  
to escape from that danger. He  
says he is our friend. Will  
you listen to what he has

2655 to say to you - to the mess-  
age he has brought to you  
from Joliet. "Set him speak" came in a  
great roar from the great and  
large company of assembled men

So the clomped dressed man  
came forward, and another man gentle  
this time showed how astonished  
the men were at the sight of  
his curious dress. His appearance  
filled all present with awe, cur-  
iosity and wonder.

The other man, stayed down below  
and half hidden by a shelf of rock  
from the hill was scarcely noticed.

"Men and recruits, what field fight-  
ers" began the speaker "my comrade  
and I are your friends. We are of the  
high court investigation delegation of  
Joliet and from our headquarters map  
we can see and trace everything  
that is going on. Also we can and  
did hear what the people in the  
city are saying.

That is how we heard the mayor  
who is head of the city say to his  
people "the fire fighters claim  
that there is no way to overcome the  
smoulder, that is smothering so  
many of us from town. I believe  
they are lazy or overtired now  
and are of no use to us. Let us

2656  
go to the scene of the smoulder  
until we find out ourselves  
our selves what is wrong and when the  
people heard the mayor say this  
they were glad and raised a great  
shout and said, "we will do it. We  
will investigate and see what is  
wrong."

The man could say no more just  
then for such a fierce roar of anger  
rose from the multitude of fighters  
that his voice was drowned by  
the clamor. Finally the roar died away  
like distant thunder and the man went  
on with his speech.

"Having heard the people decide to  
investigate we watched to see what they  
would do, and they secured very  
long hoses with which to put out  
fires from the river which I know they  
can't do without your consent.

"You are angry, but we also were  
angry. And my comrade and I said  
"we will save you people from  
humiliation and so we came here  
to tell you of your danger and of  
our plan to outwit them."

"If we can't approach within a mile  
of that smoulder the cause of its heat  
how can they fight it?" I asked. The  
bravest of my men and I  
can't fight this smoulder unless you  
can work a miracle by producing  
a long heavy rainstorm."

I now stepped forward  
"you have heard the stranger  
speak" and now you must  
answer him. It is for you to



as to decide. Shall we allow  
265-266 to come and try and fight  
this inferno ~~them~~ themselves or  
not?

"Yes" shouted some of the men.  
"No" shouted others, and some were  
yet silent. I looked around the great  
circle.

"At more time to think" I suggested.  
Your answer is very important. Up to  
this time we've had no trouble with  
the people of Joliet, but we are forced  
and free and never will allow any  
one to try and show us off. I think  
carefully and when you are ready  
to answer, I will hear you.

Then if my men decide to find  
means to fight this smouldering hell,  
I will lead my forces to pierce  
battle."

There arose a great confusion of sounds  
and as all the men began talking  
to their fellows. Such a tumult had  
never been known any where before.  
and each man argued with his neigh-  
bor until it seemed that noise would  
never cease. The strongly dressed man  
waved his arms to try to make  
them listen to him again, but my  
men paid no attention. Some wanted  
to fight the smoulder at all hazards,  
some wanted a big storm to  
come, and some wanted to do  
nothing at all.

2658  
The growling and confusion  
had grown greater than ever when  
in a flash silence fell on all  
the men present, the arguments  
were hushed and all gazed in  
astonishment at a strange sight.  
The smouldering inferno was bright-  
ening up, it was hard to tell just yet  
what the vast assemblage of men  
thought of the new arrivals,  
but some glared angrily at them  
more of them seemed to be  
curious and wondering.  
+ all were interested, however, and they  
kept very quiet and listened carefully  
to all that was said.

Now of all the surprised men in  
this large clearing not one was so  
surprised at the sudden increasing of  
the glare. He was frightened too, for  
he recognized the smouldering  
infernos as our most powerful  
enemies, but ~~that~~ he also rea-  
lized that my men could not  
know what that meant, because  
of the sea of fire the smoulders  
presented, which disguised their fiery  
and threatening fury. So he did  
as I see take courage and resolved  
that the inferno should not do-  
feat his plans.

His companion who had re-  
mained unnoticed in the shadow  
of the rock was at first more  
alarmed by the coming

2659 began coming of the increase of the glow than his companion was and I bet by the look in his face that he was telling himself that unless he acted quickly and without waiting the advice of his companion their conspiracy against the smouldering inferno, was likely to be outwitted and all their plans to conquer and destroy the smouldering shell be defeated.

Another thing that disturbed the man as I could see by his face and expression was the fact that the smoulder was much more extensive than he thought, which was said to extend from Kaneohe all the way to the Kankakee and the two great rivers and within four miles south of Joliet and the smoulder was possessing hellish fiery powers that nothing except a long severe rain storm could subdue. He and one his felt, after all, and all the people in Joliet could do nothing against this. All these things passed through my mind while the rest were still talking to gether.

All the nearest men were frightened too, fearing they would be swept by the increasing heat, so a stampede began when the foremost men started to the south, and soon followed as quickly as they could. Some of

the men of the regular and 2660 locked into the remaining fields and all the other men big and little rushed after them scattering over the ground and through the fields while some of the clearing was far behind, into the fields to others scrambled in and they were so quick that they distanced all the rest.

A panic of fear seemed to have overtaken them and they got as far away from the terrible new fire-spout as they possibly could.

Suddenly there arose a very loud harsh clamor of sound from some distant section of the smoulder that swelled and echoed on every side until I as well those nearest to me were nearly deafened by the racket and had to put our fingers to our ears to keep the noise out.

It was like the firing of many cannon only no cannon balls or other missiles were seen hurling about it was like the roll of the mightiest thunder, only the sea of smoke clouds covered the sky, it changed gradually to a roar of countless breakers on a rugged sea shore, but only a sea of smouldering fire was visible. No one to this day could never know the cause of the turmoil which died out as soon as it began.

Many thought the smoulder was so bad that we did it fight it good enough. It can't be said we had never tried to be 2. you t fighters against it yet the smoulder

2661 so to those in Gallet, was considered a very bad fighter indeed. Having decided to conquer and destroy the smoulder, I kept planning ways to do this thing to the beautiful inferno and the more I planned the more I believed I would be able to accomplish it. I wanted to conquer this inferno and I firmly believed I was and am the only one who could really conquer it.

I did my plans well there would be no failure. Yet the trouble with me was that I can't think carefully enough. I would foolishly go ahead and march against this hellish smoulder inferno and get defeated by its terrific fan reaching heat and be driven back. I won't this time, and the reason I won't is because when I march I'll have all my plans made and a host of allies to assist my men.

What do you mean by that?" asked Stevens.

"I'll explain Stevens, I intend to attack a smoulder inferno and a mighty smoulder too. The smoulder isn't general like the two configurations were, but the heat also burning has a much greater heat and the smouldering fallen in heat. It's an unusual chicken and the north the smoulder is more general and hotter yet which actually surrounds the other sections of the

inferno also. I have friends (2.6) heard that there is a wonderful center to the inferno. So you see it will be no easy thing to overcome all this inferno. "We have thousands of well equipped fighting men" cried John Manley proudly.

Yes but none of us are able to face that awful heat" I remarked, taking a handkerchief from my pocket and wiping the sweat from my forehead. "The men are as brave as men can be, but they can get overcome by that heat. Unless we are careful you and all us men would have no show at all yet what do you propose to do?"

"I propose to obtain the power we need" I answered. "Here are a good many good wise clever persons who have sufficient knowledge to help us destroy or conquer this smoulder. We will get them on our side, band them all together and then take the inferno by surprise. It's all very simple and I say when you know how to do it we should be hopeless the aid of those intelligent men we can summon we shall easily succeed."

My advisors were delighted with this idea for they realized how clever it was. "Truly Henry you are the greatest leader we ever had."

2667 exclaimed Stevens his eyes  
up arching with joy "I will go  
at once and make arrangements  
with these men to assist us"  
I knew perfectly well that to  
fall in my plans meant awful  
disaster to us unless it rained  
yet I was not at all anxious  
anxious or worried I hated this  
smoulder and longed  
to force it to end at any  
cost therefore I put in myself  
this dangerous position quite  
willingly feeling sure in my  
mind that I would be able  
to do a lot of mischief to  
this fire enemy and finally  
conquer it for good.  
Yet I determined to be very  
careful and to lay my plans  
well so as not to fail.  
I urged with myself that  
careless people fail in what they  
attempt to do.  
I decided on trying the skill of  
the men under Stevens and Simon  
regret they had proved themselves  
terrible fighters against my fier-  
fire no matter how fierce it  
was they were strong and very  
muscular and seemed to have  
not sense enough to know  
when they were defeated.  
I sure felt the men under  
these two leaders would be a  
great help to me in the con-  
quest of the smouldering hot  
inferno for under their leader-  
ship they could be induced to

fight as long as they could 2664  
stand up. I said to Stevens my  
next highest leader:  
"We are going to conquer this smoulder  
at any cost before it flares up again  
and destroys this whole estate and  
I want the men under you and  
Segree to help me."  
"Will there be more fighting like  
before?" asked Stevens.  
Plenty I replied.  
But Segree said  
"We have no chance with the far  
reaching heat of this smouldering  
ferdution."  
"But you and your men love to  
fight and here is a splendid chance  
to do so" I urged.  
"I'll talk to Simon and Manley"  
said Stevens. "It seems all the world  
trembles when this smoulder is  
mentioned."  
I continued "do you know the  
second conflagration defeated us and  
only was stopped by the Kankakee  
and another near by river gap.  
I marched my army against  
it to prevent it from spreading  
along to the right and left  
along the river bank. Nothing  
interfered. With us was the brigade of  
five extinguishers. Bombers and they  
marched directly among the heart  
of the flaming wheat. I have they  
urged that part out and stole along  
the bank attacking them and  
carrying all before them. That  
way it was I draw between the  
river and us. So now I decide

2/10/65 Tussman, J. + Ten break  
- "7/6 = per. ~~change~~ of the laws"

266 - to by fence fighting to tear a  
wide path between the smoulders  
by means of mowing machines  
and water in wagons so we can  
fight through it from one end  
to the other when we get through  
it we mean to conquer and  
destroy all this fiery smoulders  
and save the state from  
being wiped out. It is an awful  
risk but the risk I'm willing to  
take if you help me in this  
desperate conquest"

"Go on" said Stevens.  
"We will need help in this con-  
quest" I answered "for we need the  
mighty aid of our best fighting  
men. In order to make sure we  
shall not be defeated at any cost,  
we have among us many of the  
strongest men and best fighters  
in all the world and you hate the  
smoulders as much as we do.  
I am sure it will be a great plea-  
sure to you to show the world we  
can lick this inferno and  
in return for your valuable  
assistance the whole State will  
reward you all."

"How about you" said Sygna "you  
supposed to receive a reward too"  
"All right, all right" I had to  
agree. For I had no doubt at all  
that we would be able to destroy this  
miles of smoulders and show  
that many of them the strongest

people in all the world as  
replied to my opinion"  
"The deadly heat has kept us from  
getting near this inferno before"  
remarked. But now my plan will  
be easy so let us make the great  
attempt especially so we can rid the  
northern part of this state from all  
this smoke"

"When you are ready" said Simon  
Segree send me word and we will  
march all my warriors to your full  
aid. But we must take no chances on  
failure now. We must be certain of  
success. Then when this conflagration  
is destroyed we shall be the  
greatest fire fighters in all the world.  
Why not? Because we are more ex-  
perienced and stronger than the  
mollycoddles even if they are our  
friends. If we get us some headway  
we shall have nothing to fear  
at all"

My plan was after all not a pleas-  
ant proposition. The defeat by the  
second fire had not improved my  
the quality of my temper, for to  
myself when I was I, I was and  
raged at the recollections of the wrongs  
I had suffered the cause of the fires  
and vowed to take vengeance  
upon the four prisoners after their  
six months were up to again drum  
them far out of that city. That  
woman had gone seeking aid from  
the National G. A. Guard but was in-  
formed that they cannot release  
her son without my consent and to  
appeal to me. Yet she knew I would

I felt not release from I was too  
much angry over the extent and  
fierceness of the conflagration the  
loss of so many men and women  
burned or maddened by the fierce  
heat and the noise, not as defeat-  
ing the second conflagration to have  
any sympathy for her or her  
fire-bug son  
and besides after all they had  
undoubtedly suffered for nothing  
the fire it wouldn't do me good  
for her to come to me bleeding  
and she never did. Why should  
I release her fire bug criminal  
son. I was no safety for any  
male or female brother or sister  
Daisy-rob.

I knew very well if something  
caused the smouldering inferno to  
get out of hand it would be  
much more dangerous to us than  
flow of our first conflagration.  
I felt to gether, but I thought my  
self no closer that I believed  
that I could manage to overcome  
them and then the smouldering  
to absolute destruction and bring  
relief to the smoke-bomb cities  
and town up north.

It was seen by us that the  
heat from this sea of infernal  
smoulder and the poisonous smell  
from the smoke was so unbearable  
terrible and both so unbearable that  
even all kinds of birds flying  
small over flying birds and  
butterflies and all refused to fly  
if they were only brought out with

circled around it, all living 2668  
things and all farm animals  
kept a great distance away the great  
smoulder. The great smoke clouds  
were most awful in appearance. They  
looked not high towering thunder-  
heads, and also like clouds from  
terrific volcanic eruption, a lot lower  
down spreading northeastward on the  
strong southwest breeze. Some of  
the clouds were more awful in  
appearance, having the shape of  
large or smaller frightful beings  
or like many large tree trunks  
gnarled and twisted like huge  
serpents, dragons or lizards.  
The smoke thunder heads and  
volcanic like clouds must have  
rose to many thousands of feet into  
the sky, as I heard it was seen  
way up as far as St Louis South  
and Chicago, also Benton Harbor  
north. It was though when not  
a remarkable thing to me as I  
was too angry about this inferno  
and the four who caused it.

Just then a dreadful scream  
was heard and I turned around  
hastily to find a scene of  
great excitement a little way  
down the road.

A bunch of my men  
were crowding around two strange  
men and a young woman and  
knowing everything they could  
find at hand. The three  
showed a little as the assortment  
of known articles struck them  
but they stood still with heads.

2667 bowed and arms uplifted  
to ward off the missiles, until  
all 7 ran up and engaged what  
the matter was.

"Matter?" cried a foreman most  
indignantly "why these damned 2000  
reb. came and threatened us because  
the National Guard wouldn't release  
the women's son and are now  
threatening to make a new fire  
for revenge."

"Oh is that so. How could they?"  
I retorted.

"Yes and you nearly put my eye  
out striking me" shouted one of  
my men, shaking his fist  
at one of the strangers.

"What's that? What's that?" I asked  
as I joined the group. "Oh what  
a misfortune - what a terrible terrible  
misfortune!"

"See here" said the young woman  
delivered to defend her men  
companions. "I think we've treated  
you all pretty well. We've been  
kind to you but my brothers  
can't be expected to see my  
mother's son languish in weeks  
in jail on the charge of not  
paying this big fine when there's  
no proof of him having so  
and because we can't understand  
your senseless and merciless ways  
as I do." I want him released  
at once."

"You said you had at once"  
I said to my "all you have got to  
hold out if here."

"Suppose we won't go?" 2670  
asked the young woman, whom I  
knew was now much provoked.  
"Then" said I "we will place  
you under arrest and place you  
three in the jail for next six  
months with them."

I saw very threatening looks  
upon the faces of all my men and  
some shook their heads very  
threateningly. So the three decided  
to go and the young woman call-  
ing to her two brothers to follow  
her she marched up the road,  
with as much dignity as possible,  
considering that the three were  
followed by the hoots derision  
and mocking cries of my men.

About this mid-after I looked so  
anxious that John Manley asked  
"There is not anything wrong  
with the smoulder is there?"

I shook my head.

"Not yet" I said. "But I'm afraid the  
time has come when I must tell you  
some very very bad news friends."

"Oh what is it?" cried Scanlon  
"Do you know how deep down is this  
smoulder?" I asked.

"I remember its now thru five  
feet" he replied.

Stevens and the rest were much  
surprised to hear this.

"How did any one find out how  
deep this smoulder is?" Stevens asked.

"They can tell by the amount  
of smoke and flame."

"Of course" said Stevens, "I might  
have known that, and what after all

2671 "Are you going to do?"

"I cannot tell," was my reply.

"Booh" cried John Manley. "We are not afraid of this smoulder. See that water tank near here. If we let loose all that water it'll swamp more than half of this smoulder."

"Why that's true enough" explained John Beardon. "Some other fighters somewhere once conquered a great heat fire with water from a water tank."

"But you do not understand that our plot is frustrated dreadfully," I continued. "Simon Segree is clever and he knows that should solve the problem, so he has bargained with the railroad to allow us to use the water to keep us dry. Men are not afraid to try this or anything else and they're very powerful. But I climbed up to the top of that tank. There's not a drop of water in it!"

They were all startled to hear this and I noticed every face was a troubled look.

"Is your former plan all ready?" asked Stevens.

Ozzana sent me word two hours ago that the plan is all completed, when the smoulder gets under. I offered to remain at the fighting men and march to Lakota assistance but he said no. "I wonder why?" asked Beardon.

2672 "He answered that all the inhabitants of Lakota gathered together were not powerful enough to fight and even come the evil forces of the inferno. Therefore he refuses to fight at all. He says we must wait for rain."

"But it will gradually spread and ruin all our lovely land," exclaimed Simon Segree greatly disturbed by this state of mind.

"I fear it will," I said sorrowfully. "And I also fear that it could start up a new and more fearful conflagration, as well as destroy all trees in this section."

"What can be done?" asked Stevens, shuddering a little at the prospect of this awful fate.

"Nothing can be done," I gloomily replied. "But Kaliko refuses my army. I will go myself to inspect the smoulder. He least I may do is to scout on it and see what I can find out."

This amazing news had saddened every heart and all were anxious to go to interview Carter Green also a great fighter, so we started without loss of time determined to make a brief halt there and confer with him.

"Carter Green is probably the wisest man in all Lakota," remarked Manley. "He has brains and often he has told me things I might never have thought of myself. I must say I rely a good deal upon Carter Green's brains in this emergency."

Had



2763 As Carter Green heard of this trouble "asked Jim Scanton. "I do not know an" was the reply

"Poor Villanova" some body who heard 763  
763 "It is dreadful to think of all this lovely country being destroyed"

We reached where Carter Green was stationed and finally told him of the smoulder getting dangerously worse and how other sections of the inferno had allied themselves with the main smoulder for the purpose of destroying the whole country"

"Well" said Carter "it certainly looks bad for Henry and all of us. But I believe it is wrong to worry over anything before it happens. I am sure in time enough to be sure and when our country side is destroyed, we let us not deprive our selves of the few happy hours remaining to us."

"Ah that is real good wisdom" declared Simon agree approvingly, "after we become really unhappy we shall regret those few hours that are left to us unless we enjoy them to the utmost"

"Nevertheless" said Mr Green "I shall go with you to Kaliko and offer him my services" "He says we can do nothing to oppose the smoulder" announced John Stanley.

which  
he can

"I doubtless is right sir" answered 2764  
answered Mr Green "Still he will appreciate our sympathy and it is the duty of Mr Green's friends to stand by his side when the final disaster occurs" "In one this has not troubled me & let comrades" I said then looking around at the sad faces of my friends I added "I have you all been worrying about the increase in this smoulder?" "We have" they exclaimed in a chorus.

"Well perhaps it is more serious than I thought or imagined I admitted. But I have not given the matter much thought We'll talk it over" "As you plan you were thinking of ready to be put into play?" asked Stanley of me.

It was completed this afternoon" replied.

"Who will assist us" inquired Scanton. Reinforcements of the best men from Rock Island and Davenport" I replied. "I'm waiting for the messengers whom I sent to those cities to send all these men to assemble in the fields they have arrived"

"Set us go and see what they're doing now" suggested Simon. "Soon before me stood the chief of the new corner and the Grand leader of the moving machine surrounded by their most skillful leaders. Very strong and powerful they looked so that

"to a party of the power to fix the qualifications of persons is delegation. It is a matter who stood near by seemed a bit fearful that even they might not win on the smoulder. They came by the order of the delegation. Now a still more formidable column entered the fields.

Then leader demanded of me the right to lead his forces against the smouldering inferno in advance of all the others. Throughout the fields leading into the many series of wood still unburned which that day lay beyond the smoulder could be seen column upon column and rank after rank of the reinforcing men standing in long series lines thousands of them while behind them were massed the thousands upon thousands of my army of fire-fighters.

"Is all ready?" demanded the head of the nearest column.

The preparation is finally completed" replied John Manley.

"How long will it take us to clear away all this wheat along this river road?" asked another leader.

"If we start now" I replied "we shall arrive at the end with the morning sun. After that we will find means to destroy the smoulder itself and march through the fields to prevent further burning and devastation."

"Good said the leader. I have us

may

⑥ A  
dis  
ated  
vital

- print  
of the  
church

- Class  
on To  
so. m.  
state ad  
or from  
the prin

⑩ 7  
sent  
vote

get through with this smoulder 2766  
it will be a black dead desert  
and under no man and my men  
go first for nothing on earth can  
oppose our power."

They all agreed to that knowing  
his men to be the mightiest of the  
combined forces. Then I turned to  
my friends and said.

"They'll begin work sooner than  
I expected what do you advise me  
to do? We don't win on this awful  
smoulder with their help?"

"It is not too late to accomplish  
our men again" said Kaliko hope-  
fully "If you allow me we too  
might put up a good fight and  
destroy this smoulder before it gains  
a headway."

Stanley's men are good firefighters  
too" said Carter Green "and so are  
all the rest."

But they do not wish to fight  
this smoulder because of its most  
immeasurable heat" I declared firmly.  
"They will not fight it - even to  
save the whole nation."

"The smoulder is not so part-  
ticular" remarked Scammon.  
"It intends to destroy and ruin our  
beautiful state."

Because this smoulder infers of  
an earthly hell intends to do  
evil, is no excuse for my  
doing the same by making  
the lives of my men need-  
lessly" I replied.

2178 "You're right" said  
Stanley "They say the  
preservation is the first law  
of nature"

"I said readily "Even there  
new men are not ordered by  
me to fight the fire directly  
only clear all the other fields  
beyond it so another conflagration  
can start from it. But I would  
like to discover a plan to save the  
rest of Johnson Delmonore without any  
fighting"

That seemed a hopeless task to  
us but realizing Kalihar man  
was determined not to fight  
because of the dangerous heat of the  
smoulders we tried to think of some  
means that might procure  
escape.

"Couldnt we outflank or cut off the  
smoulder and so save our own out its  
life?" asked Simon.

No "because we believe it able  
to take in every territory the State  
has" I replied.

I have thought of something said  
Dorothy who was with us again with  
Angelone.

"What is it dear?" I asked  
"Let us use our Rosary and pray  
for rain which all of us wish for.  
We could pray the Rosary and sing  
Salve Regina for"

"A clever idea" exclaimed Reddy  
The Rosary is a very powerful  
prayer. I have heard of it before.  
John

11. Stat  
for all  
names  
the po  
of the so

-The part  
character  
agency fr  
dishes in  
it by dit

-State  
→ dit

12. u  
them  
because  
quity  
4  
po

That is an excellent idea 2678  
approved! Simon Segre.  
"Is an excellent idea if it works"  
I said decidedly "Yet if the Prayer of  
the Rosary works or not we will  
never desert this territory in its dire  
need of succor and leave it to so  
cruel a fate. We will all say or  
Pray the Rosary and send for priests  
to come to bless this disaster  
area if you wish, but still if those  
prayers don't bring the well needed  
rain and if our beloved State  
must be destroyed and all my  
fighters defeated I will remain  
and share their fate."

"Quite right" asserted Carter Green  
sighing "I will remain with you to  
the last"

"And so will I" declared John. Man-  
ley and the others in turn. Simon  
also said he intended to stand  
by me "For said he I should be  
of use otherwise"

"For my part" announced little  
gravelly "I the leader of our men  
must not desert the fire struck  
country I have no right to give  
up either I'm willing to fight  
on with the rest of you so all  
we can do let some of the  
others go back to their towns."

"I've been an experienced fire  
fighter all my life Carl Staley  
replied with considerable cheerfulness  
and so has Reddy and  
the others I guess we won't go back  
home either. We'd rather take our  
chances with the rest of you."

2679 I smiled upon them all  
gratefully.  
"How is no need to despair  
yet?" I said. We got to do some-  
thing though for all this smoulder  
smoke is making all the people  
north and northeast very miserable  
unhappy and even apprehensive.  
That is the worse of the sit-  
uation. If it was not for the  
smoke and fumes going so far  
north I would worry how long  
the smoulder continued. I've read  
often of the great Chicago fire of  
October 9 1871. But other places  
north of Chicago was not at  
reputed to be bothered by  
smoke and fumes. Therefore I'll  
dare to say this is the greatest  
fire on all record. I believe a  
dozen big forest fires put to-  
gether as one could beat these  
two conflagrations and these two  
big smoulders.

over this smoulder. I've burned  
up the little towns of Glinda  
and Cheona. All people who fought  
this fiery Holocaust - court and all  
driven from their cities and  
towns will always remember  
this fiery honor and for years  
will still be afraid to think of  
the fact. Some had said it  
could be possible that those four  
prisoners may be like jumping  
I they would be frying pan into the  
from the frying pan into the  
fire. My men would make the  
wish they would make the  
attempt. But way they would  
have them and hold a funny

Concl. pple  
not just.

"neck tie party" The 2686  
neck tie would be a rope  
I they are too wise to make an  
escape. They know they'd be caught  
by men even in that town and  
be lynched. No one will forget  
the wickedness of their deed. They  
set this holocaust as other witnesses  
told me to get even with a  
farmer because he won the hand  
of the girl one of them wanted in  
marriage. I interrogated the farmer  
and got all the distressing details. It was  
more than a Saint believes. I  
even like a furnished school boy  
when leaving the poor fire as  
when ruined for life. Later on I'll  
see to it that they'll get 20 years  
on the State Penitentiary at Joliet.  
Therefore when the time comes  
they'll never forget me for what  
I'll do to them. They'll be sentenced  
by a city Criminal Court in Chicago  
Ill. I've already had them sent  
to Chicago. Chicago. The farmer  
and others will witness against  
them. And my men now are for  
any of you who are on guard to  
arrest all other Dale Dobs and  
bring them before me and I'll see  
that they are properly prosecuted  
and convicted no matter when  
whether they be men women or  
the like. But for fear some  
might come again to plead for  
the four I have had signs put  
near every road way of blinding all  
Dale Dobs to come near this  
territory under penalty of prosecution  
and conviction.

They had listened intently to  
to my story and when I  
finished speaking there was a  
long period of silence while all  
thought upon the curious almost  
magical power of the tremendous  
power, and the coming conviction  
of the four men who started the  
holocaust to get even with the  
poor farmers.

Finally Kaliko's face took on a  
broad smile that radiated as far  
as it would go.

"How thankful I am to God," he  
said "that He gave me such an ex-  
cellent second mind of brains."

"He must have given you the  
best brains He ever created," I  
declared with an air of pride.

"Yes indeed," agreed Kaliko "and  
they work so splendidly that they  
have found a way to save the  
northern part of the State, to  
save us all from final and  
ugly defeat."

"I'm glad to hear that," I said.  
"We never needed saving more  
than we do just now."

"Do you mean to say you can  
save us from final defeat from  
this awful inferno?" asked

Dorothy eagerly.

"I'm sure of it my dear," asserted

Kaliko still smiling generally,

"I tell us how," said Soyres.

"Not now," said Kaliko "you  
may all forget your words  
just as completely as if this never

had happened and pray  
the Russians as you proposed. I'm  
going to stay here and tell my  
plan to Mr. Wager alone but if  
you will be all here two two  
hours from now you'll see  
how easily we will save northern  
Illinois from this smoulder."

So they went away and left  
Kaliko and me alone but I heard  
little Dorothy say to herself:

"He is not much of a planner and  
I'm not so sure that his brains  
are as clever as they think they  
are. But if his plans we are all  
lost in defeat but still I must  
have faith in him."

I myself marshaled my own men  
in battle array and at my word  
of command we marched across the  
road and began the long tough  
job of cutting through the other wheat  
fields to prevent the smoulder  
from starting another big fire from  
its far reaching heat.

The man who was to act as  
the first and foremost leader.  
I suspect intended to take most of  
the fields all to himself, to  
kill if possible all of the  
smoulder or down it to frustration  
before it could destroy and lay  
waste the whole State and after-  
wards conquer the rest of the  
inferno and prevent its removal.  
He knew his power was  
to be sufficient to enable him to

Purpose of R.  
exclusion

30 sign  
39  
agreement  
Nogin for

Thyself a  
shilling

respond.  
out to safe

2684 do all those things easily.  
Next marched into the fields  
the army accompanied by the  
moving machines, with Galeput  
going at their head, they  
were brave men indeed and  
longed to get through the fields  
till they might turn Galeput  
Grant was a little afraid of  
the outcome but had a cunning  
plan to devastate or destroy  
that powerful infernal smoulder  
and secure the result.

George Whimpson now marched  
his troops into the fields,  
in his head was a plot to  
destroy the two smoulders at one  
time by flanking them and  
closing in to cut off its re-  
treat.

He intended to let Galeput  
Grant to conquer the left wing  
of the smoulder since they he  
insisted going second but  
would afterwards destroy all  
sections as well as the center  
if possible and keep on going  
until all was accomplished.

after all my allies had  
marched into the field, I  
and my officer started to  
follow them at the head of  
fifty thousand armed fire  
fighting men. I saw "It look  
though as that smoulder was  
mischief I intended to make

reliable.

conf

Can  
see  
P.L.  
70  
39

Public  
14 Ar

Canterbury  
old action in

Report:-  
participation  
attendant  
action in

State cont  
officer in  
cooperation  
action

headway and leave us 2685  
no show."

"I know" I replied "if we only  
we had the magic belt that is  
described in the Oz Books and  
it would work here we could  
wish these infernos all wiped out  
and the Belt would surely make  
it happen."

"It would be a good excellent  
plan" said Kaliko of the Magic  
Belt would also work here. And  
save the inferno from ranging  
this state. But its magic only works  
on the Sand of Oz. It would be  
useless here."

So you see there was only  
one thing that all were all agreed  
upon - that the inferno must  
be destroyed before it spread too  
far. On and on the vast ranks  
marched filling the fields from  
side to side with a steady tramp  
tramp they advanced every step  
taking them nearer where they all  
begin their work.

"Nothing can save the smoulders  
now" I thought scowling towards  
it.

"The smoulder is as good as des-  
troyed already" muttered Kaliko  
shaking his big scythe fiercely.

"By evening this smoulder  
will be a thing of the very  
past" said Mr Whimpson with  
an evil laugh.

2866 "My dear Stevens?" - he  
marked to my assistant "at  
last my vengeance upon this  
smoulder is about to be really  
accomplished."

"You are right" declared Stevens  
"this smoulder is surely lost"  
now the foremost leader who was  
in advance and nearing the  
goal began to cough and to  
sneeze.

"This territory is terribly smoky  
I heard him growl angrily "my  
throat and eyes and throat are  
getting full of smoke and fumes  
and I'm as thirsty as a fish  
because of this parching heat  
and radiance."

"Gallipoot Grant was coughing  
too and I felt sure his own  
throat was parched and dry  
"Why so much smoke" - here  
what a smoky place - he  
said "I'll be glad when we reach  
our destination where we can get  
a cup from this heat, and a  
drink."

"Where is our water wagon?" asked  
George W. Thurston gasping and choking.  
But none of them were yet com-  
ing though they went for through the  
haunted on to get through the  
smoky territory to the place  
of fighting.

"Where does all this smoke come  
from, is the wind changing dire-  
ction?" demanded Stevens trying  
hard to swallow but finding

his too throat so dry he 2687  
couldn't, and the smoke tormented  
his eyes dreadfully  
"I don't know where it is com-  
ing from" answered, the wind  
is not changing, and I never did  
notice any smoke in this territory  
before. I believe the smoulder is  
back-firing."

"It's hurry" cried Stevens "I'd give  
half the gold in the us treas-  
ury for a drink of water. At  
the water wagons are coming  
now."

The smoke grew thicker and  
thicker and our throats and eyes  
and noses were filled with it.  
How our eyes did smart and burn  
from it and how we choked. But,  
not one of us halted or turned  
back. We hurried forward more  
fierce and vengeful against the  
smoulder than ever.

The water wagons came up to  
us and we all rushed towards  
them and drank eagerly of the  
water.

Many of the other men drank  
too in order to clear the dry and  
smoky throats. But now Gallipoot  
Grant curved rushing forward with  
a hoarse cry of mingled rage  
of thirst. He too saw the water  
wagons and hastened to drink  
of the water. The others were not  
slow to follow suit and even  
before they were finished drinking  
George W. Thurston and his men came

2655 to push them away while  
while they one and all call all  
precaution to the winds that they  
might slack their thrust at the  
wagons. When heide and his  
men arrived they too made a  
dash to drink and they were so  
mad with thirst that they  
could hardly wait their  
turn.

All my former rage against the  
inferno now inflamed me as fiercely  
as ever. The sight of it astonished  
and maddened me seeing all  
the men assemble again & turned  
to & order them to continue their  
advance after filling their water  
containers.

"Still the smoulder may get the  
best of us unless it rains" said a  
foreman.

"Why do you interrupt our in-  
operation and hope?" asked Whorn  
frowning at the speaker.

"I say what I'm afraid will  
happen" answered that fore-  
man.

"And you are right" I declared  
& myself have been thinking  
of this very idea and it seems  
to me that there are cri-  
tically too much extent to  
this smoulder which continues  
to expand and there  
also entirely too many ways  
for it to spread and the  
intense heat is one of them.

We thought at first that 2687  
the Kankee River that blocked the  
main conflagration was enough  
protection but that is no longer  
the case. The smoulder started  
the second and bigger conflagration  
that only the river could stop  
and I am told the fierce heat  
is spreading the smoulder and  
threatening the wheat and grain  
and such that escaped so far.  
Why maybe it'll do it and  
maybe it won't asserted Dorothy  
firmly.

"But in time the smoulder  
may cause us further trouble"  
I continued "for if these men  
don't succeed in their purpose  
and find out how to manage  
this smoulder we will be over-  
run by it and then it would  
totally ruin our lovely State  
and all its cities and towns."

"That's true enough" said  
Gaspoot Grant.

"Also the river fails to pro-  
tect us in other ways" I went  
on thoughtfully. The smoulder  
could spread along its banks  
toward north and south, and  
if a wind would spring up  
God help us. And still there  
is no rain coming so I  
believe something out to be done  
to cut all the other fields  
off from the smouldering hell!

judged in  
// and you  
enjoyment

jud. of  
unint. in  
- part. day  
- prop. right  
- by 8

R.C. against  
the com.

Fund:  
14- night  
individual - p.

hist:  
prim. com  
basin with  
pub. right  
granted  
preserved



2690 entirely so that none of it can start a new conflagration which may be worse than either one of these last two? "How will you do that?" asked Stevens.

I do not know but in some way I am sure it can be really accomplished, I will ask Jellipoot of his advice since since the future of the State of Illinois to a great extent depends upon it."

"Yes I know all about it" said Kaliko.

"Then" I said I suppose you know what to do in my mind and I am seeking a way to prevent the smoulder from spreading upon the other untouched fields."

"Yes I know that and as leaders have thought of a way to accomplish your desire for it seems to me unwise to allow the smoulders to have a chance to start new general fires, or leave any way open for it to even spread over unburned ground,

Let us make it impossible for any part of the smoulder to communicate with other fields, in any way now when it will have to burn out sooner or later."

"Your advice is wise" I returned. I had thank you Kaliko for your promise to assist me."

"But how can you do it?"

2691  
Kaliko asked Dorothy "How can we keep it from spreading when its burning forward three feet an hour?"

"By having all grain and wheat removed all around it," replied Kaliko smiling. We have the platoon of mowing machines, scythe wielders and so on, all powerful enough to really accomplish that wonderful feat, and now that we have been warned of our danger by the increase of the smoulder, I believe

we must not hesitate to separate the other fields from this new inferno from all the rest of it."

"I agree with you," I said, I stood a moment motionless as if turned to stone, for a terrible cry reached my ears a cry so full of desolation and defiance that my heart almost stopped beating. Immediately there was a very extensive scurrying of feet as every one in the fields started their desperate work. Many of my still idle men rushed from their resting places to see what had happened.

Even both Dorothy and Argeline sprang up from their sitting posture and followed the others through the nearest fields coming up to the fields.

2691 Coming down a road towards the fields which was but a few steps from where I myself stood were in a long line hundreds of wagons every one filled with a throng of well equipped men force warriors against the awful smoulders. They sprang into the fields with shouts of defiance and rushed towards the direction of the fiery smoulders waving aloft their fine fighting weapons of spears and shields and so on.

I was so surprised so completely surprised that I was bewildered that I gazed at the approaching host with hope and great expectation.

"They are the men of Baranport and Rock Island and also from Quincy!" I said to myself "If they don't win, we are lost indeed, indeed lost!"

I gazed upon a wonderful sight a great stretch of stubble wheat and grain and all tall weeds had already been cut away and bound in great bundles with ropes.

At once they began carrying these bundles towards the rear of the nearest fields tossing them unceremoniously to the ground as if they had been bales of merchandise.

No low  
marionette  
6 m - in  
Markwell  
Two cold  
facilities  
substantially

Cal -

Decl. qu  
state pr  
attribution  
14 Amer

Const.  
narrow

U. of T. h  
16 feet  
450  
65,000  
has  
most  
side  
date

Lab  
object

2692 I looked around for them Stevens but failed to find him among the men nor was Kaliko to be seen anywhere about. The men were swarming over the fields like bees in a hive seeking a way to cut and slash through the toughest fields and after the search had been successful the leader waved him paternally. "Do you find an opening?"

"Yes we are cutting our way all the way through his men" told him "we are carrying all before us."

Then I heard the commander say "Remove all that cut away and tear up the rest so that the smoulder can't start a new major blaze."

While the warriors were busy with this task I will return to the fields where the fog of smoke had driven so many mad with smothering eyes and thirst amid the terrifying cries of the men mingled with the shouts of whole companies of others they too joined in the work. Manly saw the great fleet of wagons with strange banners that he had never seen before.

He saw one large separate wheat field surrounded by a

horde of fighting men working most to through it from all sides.

2693 When Manley knew the truth that the fields had been invaded by fresh troops of men from other cities, the warriors were now engaged in carrying much many bundles and all other grain and barley bale up to the wagons or elsewhere where they were known in or on. It was a wonderful encouraging sight for Manley to witness but he sat still. He soon would have his turn to help in this work.

Now a procession of the men passed between the wagons and the nearest fields bearing countless bundles of the crops of which the fields were being stripped together with such weeds and other trash as they could lay their hands on. Some helped by all the farmers and their hard hired hands or eldest sons and also the farm women, anything usual be done or it would be powerless to avert new destruction by the steadily advancing smoulders, while the fields were being stripped some of the warriors entered their wagons and drove along the crop where the loads of manure in while the others marched in a great body along the fields for a great length laying

waste as they went. They 2694 were so numerous that they formed a line stretching from field to field and they destroyed every acre of wheat nearest the smoulder they came to and took every precaution not to leave anything behind that could catch from the smoulder. Within a few hours that

late afternoon a great amount of wheat had been removed from before the inferno. Many of the wagons were piled high in the wagons and watered down. So complete was their victory progressing that it is no wonder the warriors sang songs of triumph as they hastened on with their tedious work.

Even outside the awful smoulder on every hand was ruin and desolation. Many farm houses were burned even Kaliko many hearted as he was found it hard to smile in the face of this mighty disaster. Even John Scamlon contrary to his usual habit refrained from saying anything disagreeable. Tears came often to the eyes of many of us as their eyes gazed upon the ruin of the beloved country side. Even all the fighters found other sections swept as bare as the rest and their grief too was

more than they could  
 hear every thing had been swept  
 from that part of the state fields  
 and country in two days time  
 and our bewilderment was equal  
 to their sorrow.

I wondered which had been worse,  
 the tornado or this?

Without paying any attention to  
 anything else the fighting men ad-  
 vanced but slowly and many others  
 kept pace with them and when  
 Carter Green saw how they were  
 being successful he gave one of  
 his big merry laughs. Manley  
 eyes grew big with surprise as  
 all his men steadily advanced,  
 so he forced his men forward.  
 now was he free from excite-  
 ment himself at the progress  
 every one made.

As for some of his warriors  
 they became over confident and  
 attacked with the speed of terror  
 stricken men fleeing in a panic.  
 and Manley was obliged to chase  
 after them and show threats of  
 if punishment before he could  
 halt them from their desperate  
 and reckless and from them  
 into a line of battle.

All his men bore scythes  
 sickles broad swords and guano and  
 wheat cutting knives and the  
 officers had bigger and longer  
 scythes and long knife hay  
 mowers so Manley ordered them  
 to advance more cautiously and  
 mow down everything in their path.

as they advanced this they set out  
 set out to do, Manley being in  
 advance the warriors steadily  
 followed.

It seemed to me that all the  
 grain must needlessly perish  
 as the waves stood facing the  
 hurricane of cutters. The workers  
 came soon almost dangerously  
 close to the smoulder, but the heat  
 so far did not injure them  
 in the least although they came  
 almost too close to it.

I following with my men  
 stood for a moment looking  
 upon the lines of working men  
 in silent wonder then recovering  
 myself I shouted in a loud voice  
 "Altogether my men, no  
 complacency shall ever defy our  
 might and live"

My men suddenly made a  
 rush forward and cut their way  
 through along their own front.

Taking I then by surprise by  
 the attack of my men and yell-  
 ing with fury turned also cut  
 their way through as fast and  
 as hard as they could go.

I was very much relieved  
 at the sight.

At once I took command of  
 most of the men personally  
 and ordered them to work carefully  
 all along the line.

Manley was somewhat annoyed

at this I  
 have said  
 "exp. but"  
 from 26

historical ca  
 of 14 and  
 some light  
 NOT BANNED  
 Now.

2 yrs. ~~ago~~ ~~ago~~ - ~~real~~ ~~amazing~~  
2697 - ~~many~~ ~~facts~~ - ~~from~~ ~~left~~ ~~of~~ ~~the~~ ~~psychologists~~  
- Sweden ~~in~~ ~~the~~ ~~the~~

a greatly amazed and - ~~containing~~ ~~vulnerable~~.  
somewhat worried but he de-  
fended upon the strength and  
numbers of his men and  
commanded them to con't continue  
to slash untill everything was  
cut down along their front

A regular shower of darts  
descended upon the grain  
and all went before them as if  
before a tornado.

The ground was thickly  
covered with cut down grain.  
When everything was cut  
down that was available and  
not hardly any  
wheat and grain remained  
before them my gaze amazed  
warriors saw Teddy's men  
- like rounder wheat as fast  
as the warrior men fleeing  
before an enemy and carry all  
before them. A hundred thousand  
of men could hardly have  
accomplished this feat yet  
these men did it with seem-  
ing ease.

Manley was now as ex-  
ultant as were his warriors  
warriors. He and his  
men were accustomed to  
win and strife against any

husband  
of the  
unhappy  
last of

conflagration whatever 2698  
and they had carried terror into  
many forest fires but here  
they have saved large fields  
from this mighty smoulder  
along their front. Moreover  
they not only defied the awful  
smoulder and its heat but  
they had cheated it off the  
other grain fields as easily as  
a cyclone would, and such an  
exhibition of enormous strength  
made Manley very exultant  
and defiant.  
A greater bravery seized him  
and he turned and rushed  
on headlong. The warriors were  
like him and swarmed of Man-  
ley and all the others.  
There all along a long and  
wide front was a most desperate  
and ferocious struggle, but finally  
every fighting man had  
gained their goal cut away  
whole fields upon fields hoping  
the slowly spreading smoulder  
would have no chance to  
start a new big fire in this  
location.  
Stories of the marvellous  
strength of all these men had  
already spread to the west-  
ern towns and cities and although  
some one had told them no one  
could save the rest of the fields  
from the smoulder the city people  
and authorities saw that this way

2699 not true so they deemed it wise  
not to dispute the reports they  
were very grateful as you may  
suppose and agreed to support  
the fine fighters in whatever  
action demanded.

I formed others of my big  
companies of men into long  
fighting lines each rank having  
its own commander.

Then I called the leaders  
together and instructed them to  
march in good order on the  
narrow roads through the fields  
towards most of the untouched  
grain and there I would tell  
them what to do next.

They obeyed and coming  
themselves with their various  
equipment they began their  
march.

I heard some say  
"Mr. Dingar must be a wizard  
in fire fighting no fear can  
stand against him or oppose him."  
Yes and so is both the  
smoulders good as conquered this  
very minute. What shall we  
do? Will he have us fight  
on? He intends to remove  
the wheat all around the entire  
length of the smoulder from  
Jureville to the Kankakee  
river. Nothing can prevent  
him from doing this with  
all his men at his command  
and whatever else he pleases.

to do."

"The States greatest worry?" 2700  
said another. "Can this part  
of the State ever be restored to  
its former condition?"

"It'll take many years of  
hard continuous work and toil"

responded another.  
As I saw it was a great fleet  
of hay and other wagons that  
was now loaded with all  
the hay from the fields, as high  
as they could be piled.

The Negroes as some believe does  
not exactly match in width the  
Kankakee River though it does not  
seem to be able to the dam of  
the regular course there in flow  
ing into it near Kankakee. I  
firmly believe the Kankakee stretches  
north west of the city by that  
name passing near the road  
which is called Channahon Park  
way and through Joliet.

The country east of there  
is separated by the river or  
from the river by farms of  
mostly low crops corn and  
the bad like and have few  
wheat or grain fields. They have  
tomatoes, potatoes and melons  
too.

The west and east shores of  
the river is a sort of dirt  
or sandy waste that is open  
on one side of the river and  
on the other side has no barriers.

Must  
edu.

Imp. F.  
STATE.

WHERE  
PROVIDES  
PROVIDE

2701 to separate it from the  
rivers sandy shore slanting down  
down to the waters edge therefore  
it was this situation that  
checked the progress of the  
second big conflagration.

yet the still living <sup>2701</sup> ~~2701~~  
is very great in extent and is  
only separated from Joliet  
by the Illinois river. At first  
it had badly smoked <sup>2701</sup> ~~2701~~  
but now the southern side of  
that place has been burned  
out.

Illini, Gelhard, woods the town of  
William C. Elation and moves  
were badly but not totally  
burned. Joliet was threatened but  
saved by the two rivers Illinois  
and Kankakee and Channahon  
lake.

It was found true the smoke  
fog or fog traveled further  
northeast than Milwaukee and every  
place northeast of mous in  
cluding Chicago and you got  
much smoke fog enough  
to darken the sky and  
thickly fog the streets.  
like a London fog driving  
most people away to the  
northwest.

It clearly crossed that part  
of the lake not only encompassing  
Grand Rapids Michigan but  
also Battle Creek, Benton Harbor,  
Muskegon Kalamazoo but also was

smelled as far as Flint 2702  
Michigan, Shelbygan, Oshkosh,  
Oshkosh and Muskegon also  
noticed both in the sky and  
streets. Evenson below Kankakee Rock  
ford and over some of the smug  
went as far as down south  
Bend, Indiana.

The fires spread both the  
main conflagrations and the latest  
hellish smoulders they left ex-  
tended in length to Channahon and  
Channahon Parkway a distance of  
more than seventy miles east  
and probably forty miles  
in width at the widest at the  
widest parts.

They think of all that size  
of smoulder at one time giving  
forth all that dense cloud  
of dead sea like smelling  
smoke. How were we going to  
remove grain around all that?

It would take a month.

Many persons would have thought  
this an unusual and ex-  
traordinary and thrilling sight and  
something about beyond reason  
to think about. The whole area  
of the smoulder could not be  
crossed by birds of any size no  
matter how high up they would  
fly and all animals kept  
kept miles away from it. People  
far away thought it a strange  
wonderful spectacle but the my  
thoughts of it saddened me like a wet  
blanket.



2707 I've never heard of or even  
witnessed a fire of so great an  
extent that burned down deeper  
instead of smouldering out, and  
spreading five feet an hour.  
As I was pondering over all  
this and leading the fighting  
men a delegation of me  
came up to me and thinking  
they were some more Dale sobs  
who got through despite the  
strickness of the guards, I said  
gruffly "What can I do for  
you?"

"To my desire Sir said the  
leading man respectfully, to  
get information about your four  
prisoners held in the jail at  
Moline and are so carefully  
well guarded to prevent them  
from escaping for it is said  
by your men they have the  
cunning of foxes and are not  
lured."

"What of it?"

"The prisoners returned another  
man "are those truthfully accused  
of setting this enormous hole  
cave to get even with a  
farmer who won an wife a woman  
who one of the four who was  
in love with I or doing such  
a thing they are very evil  
men and caused a quarter  
of the fields of Northern Ill  
to be wiped out with a  
loss that no one can even  
estimate. Also whether intent  
or not they caused the ruin

itself

is,

re

to

in on

ig.

59 (548)

yakin

g.

hale

it. well for

.48

81

)

of all the beautiful towns 2708  
east of here but by good fortune  
two farmers and their wives and  
elder girls and boys defeated and  
captured them, turning them over  
to the National Guard. However  
like you we in Sa Salle were  
fastened by Dale sater and brother  
Dale sobs who were trying to  
find these four scoundrels and  
got them set free that they may  
continue their wicked deeds.  
We threw them also in jail on  
the charge of trying to harbor  
the prisoners. I therefore as we  
all this information and the  
unfortunate farmer and his wife  
to testify, I wonder if you could  
come to Sa Salle to keep free  
prescute the four culprits and  
land them in prison for a very  
long term?"

Sir spoke up another man  
addressing me with great in-  
dignation "Every one every where  
believes this to be true. Don't  
let this get beyond you? im-  
agine? it's all the truth, that  
poor farmer is in the hospital very  
ill and prostrate by his sad  
loss. His wife help take care  
of him."

"I know it" I said bitterly "I  
consider it a most evil and  
clever crime on record. Its really  
too bad, yes very bad that this  
was not known at their trial.  
However they'll face the consequences."

2705 I know all about it from  
from the farmer. It is a clever very  
clever truth though because it is really  
woven with a long thread of full  
circumstances. It is my business to  
see that they are prosecuted to the  
full extent of the law. The fact  
remains that more guards have  
been placed so that no Dala  
Bobs rescue them by breaking  
the jail or that they will be  
unable to escape.

And why should I not please the  
law of the State in this matter?  
There were two mighty conflagrations  
the big smolder is worse and a  
greater conflagration nearly  
eighty miles of country side  
is desolated and countless number  
of people scattered from their  
towns because of the smoke.  
In my heart friends I cannot  
sympathize with the Dala Bobs  
and as a matter of fact  
State Lawless State Police,  
we powerful officials must stand  
together and trample the criminals  
under foot.

I was surprised to find my-  
self so candid and so well  
informed and it had paralyzed  
me by and measure when  
the Dala Bobs both men and  
women had tried to argue  
that the four culprits did  
not deserve their "cruel" fate  
and that it would be kinder  
for me to side with them  
than with the verdict of the  
court.

I continued to the delegates 2706  
The fact that the four are  
prisoners is evidence that the military  
court and though as far as I am leader here of  
everything which puts them under  
my orders I prefer to deal with  
the State military. I even ordered them  
to hereafter arrest all suspicious  
persons on the charge of being  
Buster and brother Dala Bobs. By the  
way I added warning to the leading  
delegate "did the prisoners set fire  
first to the wreckage piles or to  
the wheat?"

"Why do you ask" said the head  
delegate.

"Because I cannot prosecute them  
properly otherwise" was my reply.  
If they first set the farmer wheat  
and that part nearest the debris set  
it also a going then they're surely  
in for it. I am very powerful  
in my leadership as you know  
but God is more powerful than  
I therefore if they started the  
debris first we're out of luck.  
and therefore could have no  
means to prosecute them or have  
nothing to do with them."

"I assure you that scores of  
witnesses testified the prisoners  
had nothing to do with the  
debris fire. The debris caught from  
the wheat field fire close to the  
piles." one of them hastened to  
say. The other being questioned  
admitted this was true.

But about that one jealous  
of the farmer you mentioned?  
I asked.

2707 He was a hard loser and put the other three up to it, so he's the main scoundrel they say all his life he is very very ferocious and obdurate and he was assisted by his three companions, as far from him in person he's a neighbor of the farmer and the girl - he lost to him. We heard of him and from all reports he's very, very, very, every time he is defeated.

is defeated, "I'll keep prosecute them" said  
and especially him, Be content  
that they'll never get away with  
this, your state ments and full  
representations will work wonders,  
I'll see to it even without a  
new trial however?"

When I continued  
"I ought to know why these Sisters  
and Brothers date sets come for  
They wanted to get the prisoners  
away from me, but they could not  
do it. A woman and girl claimed  
one of them was their husband  
and father and said they intended  
to liberate them no matter  
what

- Some of my men were near  
 by with their glittering weapons  
 and the two went quickly  
 away. Right here you can see a  
 part of my army of fire  
 fighters. These two had come  
 here thinking to force me  
 to free the captives in the  
 jail at machine, and I was  
 able to convince them that  
 my power more than the  
 National Guard is too mighty to

to oppose or any one to oppose. 2208  
I was told the woman's husband  
was a sort of a wizard or something,  
and depend upon magic to keep  
him but I told him that he  
must know that I understand  
some magic myself so if we  
are obliged to fight magic with  
magic the chances are that we  
a hundred times more powerful  
than he can be and to realize  
that he is in my power I told  
him I do not believe he can  
force me or the head of the  
Nation. I guard to liberate the  
prisoners and I knew they could  
not cover me to do so for I will  
not go back on the National  
Guard though I have the authority  
to do so. Where for as I do  
not wish to jail you also  
I ask you to go away and  
leave me alone. himself said

leave me alone.  
But the woman herself said  
"forgive me if I do not agree  
with you, and however difficult and  
dangerous my task may be  
I cannot leave your son on  
untill every effort to release  
my darling son has failed,  
and left me completely  
discouraged."

yet noticing the threatening attitude of my nearest armed men they left I heard they then appealed to the the National guard and got no results either.

2704 Night soon came on for a  
my eyes were nearly blinded  
by the glare of strong light  
which came from the nearest  
of the flaming smoulders. I  
covered my face with my  
hands until I gradually got my  
eyes used to the light and  
could be able to gaze without  
blinking upon the severe glare  
that had so quickly brightened  
into the night.

Even where I was walking  
the heat that came towards  
me was fearful.

My heart sank within  
me as I realized the terrible  
sea of smoulders still con-  
tinuing on.

I was slumped down besides  
Kaliko and stared morosely at  
the smouldering fury.

"If I knew how to ~~to~~ end  
this smoulder" I muttered over  
and over "I must think."

"Don't you mind" Kaliko patted  
my shoulder kindly across of  
Rosaries and Litanies ~~up and down~~ ~~Galili~~ -  
Regenas have been ~~instructed~~ and  
but the Blessed Mother will  
do something soon."

But I refused to be com-  
forted and long after most of  
them had retired I sat  
hunched sadly on the ground.

all of a sudden I got a 2710  
heck of a start.

Then I said said:  
"What in the world are those?  
They look like lanterns float-  
ing upwards from the smudge."

A strange phenomenon.

All of a sudden they  
flew high up into the  
air in changing colors of  
light. Some even low  
down rushed past me gas-  
ping ringing heat and  
foul foul smell.

"If those strange lantern  
lights light among the  
still standing wheat some-  
thing will happen" growled  
Kaliko. "What is causing them  
I wonder?"

"Probably some gas from the  
smoulder" I answered.

One flew at me but  
missed and rose high  
into the air. There was even  
a smell like gunpowder  
in the air.

Now I had encountered  
many strange incidents  
in this country and had  
usually thought myself out  
of them, but as these  
lanterns came nearer and  
nearer and nearer to me

2710 and no idea present-  
ing itself I began to feel  
extremely nervous.

at that minute a  
mighty roar went up from  
all the men not sleeping,  
for a big smoke swarm  
of those lantern like  
objects seemed to have  
been jerked fifty feet  
into the air and there for  
time they hung suspended  
over the smoulder kick-  
ing back and forth. I  
was as surprised as they  
and as for Kaliko he  
fell straight way on his  
back.

The "lantern" flew  
higher until not one  
could be seen through  
the smoke clouds.

Then down whirled  
the army of "lanterns"  
into the smudge sea  
and each one fell into  
the into the smoulder  
with such force that  
fiery sparks in clouds  
seemed to rise as high  
as a skyscraper.

The strange frightening  
phenomenon was over.

When P. threw.

The air seemed to

grow very hot" I observed - 2712  
ved after, Kaliko and little  
Dorothy had walked along silently  
for a time unable to sleep  
because of the excitement "What  
noticed it Kaliko?"

"Yes and it seems as if I had  
reallowed some of it" he  
answered looking suspiciously  
wards the smoulder.

"I'll step forward and see  
what it is" I said. As I disappeared  
in a smoke fog I believe  
the truth dawned on little

Dorothy

"Wait! wait! Don't go please  
please Henry come back!"  
cried the little girl running  
after me as fast as she  
could.

"What the matter?" mumbled  
Kaliko thudding behind her.

Then both coming sudden-  
ly out of the smog gave  
a terrible scream which  
so startled me that I fell  
over backwards.

Just in time too for  
another step would have  
brought me too close to the  
deadly heat of the awful  
smoulder which destroys every  
living thing within three  
hundred yards of it.

"What befell" I puffed

2713 getting to my feet naturally  
I forgot about the dangerous  
far reaching heat.  
you did not wheeze Kaliko,  
in an agitated voice  
"was I one of those crazy  
scaterms again?" I asked  
towards them hopefully  
"but down" Kaliko mop-  
ped his brow with a piece  
of cloth, one yard further  
and it would have been  
one long good night"  
"should it would shut  
tered Dorothy and explained  
to me the deadly nature of  
the heat as if I didn't know  
it "and do you know what  
this means?" Dorothy

Dorothy was nearer to tears  
than I ever I like to think  
about "I mean this awful  
smoulder is spreading in every  
direction and that there is  
danger of another big fire  
or conflagration"

"Hush" I warned as I hear many  
foot steps. (come here) called  
I hastily to Kaliko. He ran  
awkwardly over to where I sat  
and rattled down beside me,

The magnificent  
Rosary Procession

what ever happens we must  
stick together  
unphatically

Dorothy held fast to 2714  
a rock she was sitting on  
with one hand and to a small  
tree, there was a loud crash of  
drums, a band playing the hymn  
"queen of the most Holy Rosary"  
rush of feet and through the field  
down a field road marched  
the most splendid company  
Dorothy or I have ever seen in  
our whole life time  
a parade" whistled Kaliko lunch-  
ing to his feet "how nice"  
we took a good look at the very  
magnificent procession of men  
women and children boys and  
girls.

Mr. P  
July  
I first came the musicians  
their trumpets and flutes. Priests  
Priests followed attired in their  
priestly clothes of slate. Then came  
nuns next appeared a palanquin  
bearing a bishop carrying the  
Blessed Sacrament followed by  
a whole company of splendid  
cavaliers, and after them as  
many of the men that had  
joined, reciting the Rosary  
and singing hymns to Our  
Lady.

"The Procession" puffed one of its  
leaders for he was worn out  
by the long march has been  
chosen to save the rest of  
this state

2775-19 shook my finger in his face

"Dorothy, processions and so on are all right" I said. "But not without my permission. Of course I cannot disturb it now so go ahead with it. But don't dare do this against my men are fighting, fire not to march in Religious processions without my consent."

Dorothy was blinking her eyes between shock and comprehension and evidently was trying to understand what it was all about.

Kaliko had by this time struggled to his feet but at the sight of the long religious procession he nearly lost his balance.

As for Angelina and Carter green after one horrified glance at the spreading smoulders she and Dorothy seized hands and dashed to ward, the only thing open towards them straight it seemed for the halted procession.

"Wait" I thundered as the errand shot a long tongue of flame thirty feet into the air. It appeared so fierce that even at that distance the fire and smoke blocked my very eyes. With a grunt of surprise and very great displeasure I pounded

2776  
after Dorothy and Angelina.  
"I thought you said that in this smoulders things would be different." I shouted flailing some of the low wheat stems under my feet lightly.

"Why is it this different?" shuttered green tripping over some of the wheat stems and sprawling upon his nose.

"Oh hurry" begged Angelina as she and Dorothy jerked him to his feet. Here it comes.

At another time they would have paused to admire the night scene and magnificent grandeur of the smouldering volcanic like glare, but with all its heat and smoke like a puffing smoke monster seeming to be at their very heels they scarcely glanced at the startling scene.

Deeping flames rushed through the center and it was no easy task running through the roots of the cut down wheat.

The glowing brilliancy of the smouldering sea lighted up the horizon five hundred yards away filling the air with a sulphurous smoke all it enclosed like a mullin south of July combined into one at every change of the glare we would wince and shudder.

feels like...

2777 "A little more nearer the  
smoulders and we'd all be a ash  
heap groaned the unhappy  
Carter Green leaping wildly from  
boulder to cut down hay "Wow  
what a beautiful anome?"

"What shall we do now wailed  
Dorothy stopping in dismay  
for they had come upon the  
marching procession which had  
forbade any more to join and  
they could run no further.

"I don't know what a real  
person would do I I panted  
glancing around desperately  
"But I'll do something quick  
squeeze through that highest  
wheat and continue on"

There was just time for  
Dorothy and Angelina and Green  
to pass through the high  
wheat walled down by the workers  
before I dragged myself out of  
a narrow muddy road and  
also flung myself onto  
the wheat.

"Where is the rest of the  
leaders?" I roared as I placed  
myself between my friends  
and the sizzling fiery widespread  
monster. "Why can't it turn  
off its sea of fire works. What  
better move before its fur  
reaching heat will burn us  
to a cusp. "and can't it burn  
without so much smoking?"

winning us quite black" 2778  
Waving the cloud of smoke from  
before my eyes I peered anxiously  
towards that awful wide volcanic  
ground sea.

"What are you going to do about  
this Religious procession?" Kallio  
asked anxiously.

"Set it go on ahead!" I answered  
promptly. "Maybe it'll cause the  
Mother of God to send rain soon  
to us. Since starting it must go  
on all right" I continued combing  
my hair. "Maybe He at her re-  
quest will send a sweeping rain"

"I was about to snap my fingers  
at the leaders face when Angelina  
tapped me sharply on the wrist.

"Don't make him angry or he'll  
call off the procession" whispered  
the little girl. "Maybe if I tried  
it too by joining the procession  
for a while we could find  
a way to gain God's favor  
in this awful situation"

I ingested at the thought of  
the little girls joining a Religious  
procession started without my  
permission I nevertheless real-  
ized that they were more  
experienced in the ways of  
this Religious procession than  
I was I submitted.

"Will you promise to take  
care of them and not let them  
get hurt?" I gruffly asked the  
leader.



2778 "Not at first" agreed the leader steadily enough "as it's not going to safe where we are going to much further. I have fair enough to it".  
Remember now not too close to the emerald heat? -  
guaranteed" and no nonsense either."

"Look!" sniffed the nearest part of the emerald so vigorously that an enormous cloud of blinding sparks was blown five hundred feet into the air like a fiery volcano cloud and the girls were only saved by my quick action by throwing them down amongst the wet wheat they had plowed into.

"What shall I do first in the procession?" asked I, bowing timidly to the procession leader.

"You can sing the Hymn Mother, or pray for me or other hymns you may know." turned the leader (and) also when we start on now you can sing Our Lady of Good Counsel or Mother dearest."

"Well are you going to stand there all night?" demanded in a furious voice.

"What's keeping the procession? What's delaying it?"

2779 "You said you forbade" answered the leader. "I did not, I only said it was started without my consent or also without my knowledge. And also without inviting me or my officials in it. Do you think we are going to stand for this?"

"Hush" warned the leader "I'm thinking" and putting his finger to his wrinkled forehead he gazed intently at the two little girls. "I'll just be outside the procession so, so, don't try backing out" he advised them.

"Well exclaimed Angeline clapping her hands resignedly "I've never tried singing in a Religious Procession before. But I suppose there must be always a first time. I know by heart plenty of them, having learned them in school. So here we go to join it. I hope God doesn't let us down though."

"As the two little girls started towards the procession now on the move I wondered if it would cause God to send rain."

"Hasn't He not refined us?" returned some man. "I'll dance on his hands, I'll thread on his back and pull out his whiskers."

"Hush up" I shouted "Don't dare talk like that again or I'll send you flying with a left hook!"

people = can

people = can

2,500 "Maybe there's another way out," mused Manley, removing his eyes from the smouldering glare. "Set look" proposed Carter, green darting eagerly toward the still higher grain. Hurriedly we we ploughed on without success, on the other side was a field of high grass. "I wonder what's beyond that?" muttered Kaliko, looking at it thoughtfully.

"It's only high grass so I'll just take a look," said Manley, and before we could stop him he stepped right through the tall grass and disappeared.

"He's gone" some one wailed dolefully. Manley looked very upset as the others for even in this short time we had grown fond of our comrade, as we discussed in anxious tones what we had better do. The face of Kaliko looked out through the high grass.

"Come on" he cried excitedly. Run through. Beyond is a long stretch of bare ground."

Taking a deep breath with my hand Manley plunged into the wet grass. Kaliko seized

us just in time for a terrible rush of smoke took our breath and Carter was limp and helpless when we slipped out on the other side.

"I'll carry him" decided Manley as Carter made an unsuccessful attempt to walk. Kaliko was beginning to enjoy all these strange adventures and excite merits.

"Hurry" he puffed picking up poor Carter who was overcome by smoke. "That monstrous heat is still too near us - I feel it badly."

Before we reached the level stretch of ground a wave of withering heat almost overtook us.

"Faster, faster, you go on" urged Kaliko. "I'll try and stop it."

With the stifling heat coming around us we ran as never before all the way through the grass field and rushed headlong upon the stretch of clear ground. Kaliko realizing that we could never out distance the withering heat stopped directly in its path first placing Carter on the ground beside him.

He threw a big grenade

towards the nearest part of the  
smoulder. Then again he smothered  
up later and followed after the  
others. They had almost reached  
the end of the grain field  
before the smoulder reached  
the shock from the excited  
wing hand grenades.

Jan. times as furious  
as it had been before.  
It flew up in long tongues  
of flames.  
None of us dared look over  
our shoulders and I felt  
that nothing could save us  
now. Without plan or hope  
we dashed on till an  
ear-splitting screech brought us  
to a sudden stop.

"You look" begged Kaliko  
covering his eyes with  
both hands as the smoky  
atmosphere smothered his eyes.

I swung around then  
instantly gave a shout of  
relief.

"The forward speed of  
this section of the smoulder  
is stuck" I cried very  
exuberantly. And so it  
was a few hundred yards  
behind them.

Smoking screaming

and sending up cloud 200  
upon cloud of dense shower of  
sparks the smoulder in that  
section was jammed between the  
the wetted grain and the stretch  
of bare ground. So if at last  
we were winning the we scarcely  
noticed where we were going.  
What caused the strange loud  
screaming sound from the  
smoulder as it was a thousand  
times as loud as the loudest  
voiced person could yell.

A narrow escape for us but  
not for the smoulder remarked  
John Mancy in a whisper.  
Scarcely able to see through  
the black smoke the was sending  
out an almost "deafened" by  
the strange whistles and roars  
we ran on then we reached  
the open ground and came to  
an abrupt stop.

At a distance we could see  
the Religious procession chang-  
ing course.

"Well we can't dare go back  
righted Kaliko,  
later had come too and  
was able to stand up.  
The procession came much  
closer on its return march

2804

"Well well" I began querulously  
"Why don't you come on past Don't  
hast" "Come on come on come on"  
I'm mighty sorry to see you"

Another great and  
fierce explosion"

"Sorry?" gasped Dorothy as  
the leader continued forward  
drawing the others with him  
Why? And she stepped out of  
the line.

"You'll soon know that soon  
enough" I mumbled journeying  
in and swinging along ahead  
of them. "This way please  
and mind you don't get out  
of step"

"Where are we going now?"  
asked Angelina following the  
procession cautiously.

"To the Wicker Castle Hill"

I answered sadly.

"Do you call this" awful  
smoulder a mere hell?" sniffed  
one of the marchers looking  
sorrowfully down the narrow  
paths through the wheat opening  
to the right and left and  
the Magnolia River flowing  
north of us.

"No" I don't call it a mere  
hell" I wheezed "I don't call it  
anything at all because I'm  
not suppose to use that kind

2805

of language - But you better  
not let the evil spirits hear  
you uttering this smoulder it will  
go hard enough with us as it is"  
Sighing to myself I went along  
with the religious procession "Wait  
until we see the main part of  
the smoulder sea" I mumbled very  
mournfully.

"They were very silly" said Kaiku  
who started it" and he picked  
up a large stone and hurled it towards  
the big smoulder "Here four darn fools"

"Humph" chuckled Manley walking  
at Dorothy "We know many fire  
bugs who acted silly enough to  
make many fires in cities and  
who when caught paid the penalties  
but we never met one who made one  
like this. Do you mean to really  
say they did this just to get even  
with that poor farmer?"

"Yes" I answered solemnly because  
he won the girl one of these comrades  
was in love with" I added as  
the procession stopped again. "That's  
all anyone believes here it's a  
wonder they didn't get away with  
it" I said gloomily.

"Gotten away with it?" gasped Dorothy  
and Angelina at the same time.  
Putting one hand to their cheek  
and looking around uneasily  
"Why what do you mean?"  
"Are you a promiscuous" demand  
ded another man running around  
and planting himself in front

2806 me "If you are not get  
us out of this dangerous terri-  
tory we're tired of this terrible  
heat, we're not attached to it  
and are trying to be attached to  
us, and nobody can hardly  
stand it either."

"No me" pointed another  
man, turning his heels to-  
gether with a click - a resound-  
ing click, "Show us out of the  
way from here before we  
perish from this heat and  
smoke."

"There's no way out unless  
we fight our way out." I  
quavered sitting down on a log  
and waving my hand sadly,  
"I've seen big conflagrations  
forest fires, and other big or  
small blazes for years ever  
since I became old enough to  
be a experienced fire fighter or  
forest ranger and ever since  
this one occurred and sent this  
part of the country into a  
predator of blades."

"Blades! Why we should have  
been able to put this fire  
out two day days ago" ex-  
claimed Dorothy dropping down  
upon the same log besides me,  
"Do you mean to say that  
this smoulder is burning more  
than the roots of this wheat  
and are these grounds some sort  
of infernally peat?"

"Where did you hear the ground  
is peat peat?" I inquired eagerly  
"Do you see the ground actually  
burn?"

The little girls shook their  
head quickly and I covering my  
face with both hands began  
to rock to and fro with grief.

"If I could...but see the end of  
this smoulder inferno right now  
if I could only see all this  
smoke go away" I mumbled  
miserably.

"Then this is a losing fight  
after all?" asked Angelina leaning  
forward sympathetically.

"Who are you?" asked one of  
the men of the still retreating  
procession "And how is it that  
this smoulder is so extensive?"

"Because the main conflagrations  
spread so fast" I said disdawnfully  
and I then told a strange  
change story for I might as well  
as because of my worry and  
of so much heat I couldn't  
sleep this night.

"My name is Henry Joseph  
Dargun, of German descent" I ann-  
ounced sadly "and I believe  
I was leading the greatest fire  
fight in history right here, from  
the first late afternoon until  
morning I and my men and  
the men of other leaders tried  
to drive the fire to its end to

3/3 2808 bring it under control  
for many hours throughout  
the night we fought it like  
men possessed, but it not only  
resisted us fiercely, but tricked  
us, outflanked us, drove us back  
time and again. It gave us no  
rest, when at one fighting  
front we had it actually over-  
come another position drove us  
back by a flank or rear  
attack.

We finally with the wind the  
right direction overcame it by a  
counter fire, but its terrible  
remoulder started a bigger and  
hotter one that with all the  
serving ornaments, fighting equipment,  
and chemical bombs could not  
stop.

Many during this fight against  
this second blaze were burned  
or scorched, overcome by smoke,  
or hospitalized including my  
best leaders. Some were even  
killed. That didn't happen  
during the fight against the  
first fire excepting there were  
some losses in men hurt by  
the explosions.

"Are all of the men as  
good fighters as you" interrup-  
ted the little girl "or to  
have they equipment like those  
fighting forest fires?"

They are all just as good as you  
fighters as I am and the  
specially in these parts and the  
others had been mostly forest fire  
fighters like myself, I exclaimed  
regarding the little girls with  
a puzzled frown.

"Let him tell his story and  
then we'll tell him ours,"  
addressed Angelina who was extremely  
interested in my recital.

"There isn't much more," I  
sighed gloomily. I had some  
success in counter firing the  
first big fire and everything  
went well and happily, till  
the day the remoulder grew big  
and fierce from the first con-  
flagration.

Then the new conflagration  
started but we smothered that one  
in the bud and wiped it  
out in short time.

Some time later a second one  
was produced by the remoulder  
and came rearing across the  
fields.

One by one it devoured the  
acres of wheat despite what we  
tried our hardest to do to check  
it until it became a much  
bigger and hotter than the first  
and spread much faster in  
three directions. Whichever I would  
to head it off, it beat us to  
it. I lost many men by

2810

smoke and heat. Some were killed. Ruggeds Daniel Jones and others were badly burned. The fire was stopped by the broad width of the Kankakee River. I had refused to dare to fight the awful smoulder because of its far reaching heat. I have been forced to work out plan after plan without any success.

"Just wait until the author-ities at La Salle hear this" cried Dorothy indignantly. "That monstrous smoulder tried to catch us too but its caught now near the Newberry road and will never get any more head way in that direction now."

"Do you mean it?" I sprang to my feet and looked joyfully from one to another. Angelina hastily told me how the smoulder toward the north had been stopped at on its forward course towards the road.

"I wish Ruggeds knew about this. If he knew he from his bed would order his men to attack it" I cried excitedly.

"We'll tell him as soon

2811

as we are out of this trap" proposed. Kaliko cheerfully "and help him hold it there." "How are we going to get out? By the river?" I groaned. "Nully. I've been here for more than thirty six hours."

"If we can get started at it," I fight this smoulder to the last" declared Kaliko, picking up a rock and glancing belligerently from left to right.

"Hush" warned Kaliko in a low voice. "We are being I believe shadowed."

"What, that?" said the girls as a strange, very hot draft of air went whistling past their ears and a long series of siren siren of howl and wail came echoing across the distant smoulder.

Iery gaze from the smoulder I whispered quickening my pace with the renewal march of the Procession. "Look out that they don't get us."

"They won't get me" blurted Kaliko, brandishing his scythe in one hand, and a chemical hand grenade in the other.

"Why is the procession slowing down?" cried Dorothy.

28/2 seizing Kaliko's arm,  
"They look like live shadows  
in the glare of the smoulder."  
"How about smoulder glare full  
marching lighthouse?" connected  
placing myself ~~bold~~ boldly  
in front of the little girls.  
Rushing along both sides  
of the field came a large  
number of more men and  
women to join the procession,  
shouting ~~for~~ and yelling  
prayers or singing hymns  
and waving their fire fighting  
equipment.

"Look who afraid?" stammered  
Angelina as the new numbers  
joined the procession. "We're  
far from the smoulder."  
"No one will surrender to the  
smoulder" called a woman armed  
with a scythe. "We will  
never surrender to this con-  
flagration."

"It would be nonsense to  
do so" puffed, Kaliko shaking  
his fist at the smoulder  
grow while some one threw  
a chemical grenade toward it.  
It plunged into the field  
with a terrific thud, but not  
landing in the smoulder  
it did not go off and  
none other did not seem  
to even notice it.

At the same time for some 28/3  
unknown reason we felt a strong  
inescapable force pushing us forward  
Some other objects were moving  
backwards.

"Well I'll be ~~fat~~ pebbled" I  
parried. For even my weight could  
not withstand the restless force  
that was dragging us along  
with the Religious Processional  
army. Kaliko tried to comfort us  
but there was little he could  
say in the presence of the  
procession.

When at last the procession  
got under headway even I felt  
dismayed. We could see from  
here that the ever gathering  
strange smoulder was so immense  
and bright that it took up all  
the territory within view. Some  
part of it was slowly burning  
side way. Like some other sections  
of the more far distant smoulders  
and glaring and flaring like  
a sea of white hot volcanic  
lava.

Its glow seemed to roll angrily  
around us.

"No body around here was  
allowed to set fires near the  
wreckage. How dare these few men  
do this" some one shouted loudly.  
How dare they devastate this  
beautiful state with this miserable fire?"



2814 "We can't help feeling the same about ourselves," faltered Angelene, eyeing the speaker nervously, and if you'll tell us the way out of this territory we'll go immediately."

"Faster than that!" added Kaliko, looking around with a shudder. "We'll have to hold our own," I advised demurely, since we are here in this procession too we might as well hope it'll bring some end to this honor and I need some new advice too. But for all of you do not march too close to the edge of the smoulder or its far reaching heat will have us melted down to butter."

"I would not take the chance of being melted into butter," cried Kaliko stamping his foot determinedly. "I'm going to fight this smoulder to morrow like the furies!"

"You always did make an excellent fighter," I muttered, resting my chin upon my arm.

"But look here," protested one of the men in the procession waving his hat to attract my attention. "You can't do this. We are all very important fire fighters, but not even the very best can look at this smoulder, it would even

get the best of them and if they were not spirits destroy them." 2815  
"Even without gods help the angels of Heaven could not fight it," some one else answered. "We hope our Procession will soon bring a long big rain."

All of a sudden there came a glare like a flaming blue torch. As the weird blue light danced all over the scene Dorothy seized Angelene and me by the hands. "Run!" shouted Dorothy frantically. But at our first step the same invisible force that had swept us forward before, thrust us forward again.

"What may I explained calmly must be some strange phenomenon that is transforming some part of the smoulder into some peculiar gas. Quick don't stare at it. It might blind you."

"Am I to become ashes before the night is over?" groaned so Kaliko glancing about desperately. "My what awful heat!"

"Will I be the shadow of myself?" moaned Angelene putting both hands before her face and crouching back against a tree.

All of a sudden there was a spark and flash as the blue flame of spray through the air, and then such a deafening roar

-2816 and ground that I  
tumbled over like a ten pin  
and both little girls clapped  
both hands to their ears,  
The last thing I remem-  
bered was an ear-splitting  
explosion a terrible tumble over  
the ground and finding  
myself lying upon the  
ground with Kuliho and  
the little girls bending over  
me.

I also fell headlong and lay  
face down in the dust that  
covers this ground. I was first  
up, also first down again,  
for no sooner did I rise and  
try to walk forward before  
I was violently flung face  
down. I then tried to wriggle  
backwards without getting up.  
For a moment this proved  
impossible and finding I  
could not move more backwards  
or forwards I sat up and  
saw you two on the ground.  
Kuliho helped us up to our  
feet I said. "Strange occurrence  
after that blast indeed."

I saw something near the  
edge of the "smoulder" where  
probably the explosion occurred.  
A very long high, rounded  
body of flame was coiled up  
into the air and the other

upper part was poised as 2817  
if to strike at something way up in  
the air. It glared so bright that  
Angelina hid her face on Dorothy's  
shoulder and Dorothy with a shudder  
saw it flare up much higher,  
appearing to be frozen frozen  
in mid air.

Smoke came from it appearing  
in shape like a glittering dragon  
of silver and bronze.

I could scarcely believe my eyes.  
The upper part of the flaming  
column like a long tongue of  
fire shot across the sky with  
a thunderous roar, rushed around and  
upward and hurled itself across  
the smoulder giving forth in all  
directions a most blinding impenetrable  
blizzard of blinding sparks.

So sudden and unexpected  
was the appearance of this strange  
and startling phenomenon that  
the foremost in the procession  
fell back in dismay.

I stiff with fright and terror  
saw the great body of flame  
poised momentarily higher over the  
smoulder and in that moment  
all of the spirit and courage that  
had distinguished me in my  
youth returned.

With a hoarse scream I hurled  
a hand grenade into its coils.

2518 It flew straight for the  
long fiery monster it  
exploded with a terrific crash.  
I saw another one, circling high  
over the top of the long wiggling  
monster it burst like a bomb.

The explosion only caused  
it to crash through the smolder  
and hurtle itself forward,  
more enraged than ever.

If it swirled towards the other  
wheat fields everything is  
lost. I called a crowd of men  
as the column began to rock  
back and forth as if giving  
repeated enraged surges at the  
air.

The ground seemed to tremble  
at the from the repeated  
blows of the furious fiery  
monster. Some women yelled.

"Nothing can save the  
rest of the fields - fields  
now."

"Don't, please don't be a Calamity  
Jane. Please for Heaven's sake  
don't!" I called back.

Cowering in the distant fields  
Kaliko and others waited for  
the coming disaster that would  
start another great conflagration  
that would rage through the  
fields and destroy them  
utterly.

A lot of persons in the  
Procession stared at the fiery

horror in perfect astonishment 2519  
and then look to their heels  
screaming hoarsely as they ran.  
"I'm doing just the best thing  
I can to kill this strange thing  
and yet they break up the  
Procession by running away like  
wild rabbits?" I growled. "What's  
the matter with them anyway.  
Come back!"

Some other person took one glance  
at the fiery creature then rolled  
in a clump of bushes or shrubbery  
where he lay trembling so  
violently leaves fell in showers  
to the ground.

Yet by this time a great  
crowd of the fire fighters had  
gathered from three corners  
and indeed yet at a safe distance  
they peered at the towering  
monster waving their arms shaking  
their heads and now looking  
so frightened, that I began to  
feel frightened myself.

Turning my back upon  
them, I walked out of the  
clearing. Again I stopped to  
gaze at the fiery monster.  
What was causing it to con-  
tinue. A series of shouts almost  
ruined the hat from my head.

1820 The terrible, smoulder  
seemed to toss and bubble  
and still the fiery column re-  
mained. The mud in the Og  
Book of the Great House of Og  
stating "No sea serpent was  
ever uglier than quibion fire  
shot from his eyes and  
smoke from his nostrils."

But quibion was nothing like  
this column of fire though it  
shape like him according to  
the features I have seen of  
him in the book.

It sent a great cloud of smoke  
upward. It twisted curled and  
spiraled forming itself like  
a canopy above in umbrella shape.

But one of the high rank  
leaders of the fire fighters advanced  
close to the spectacle.

But one good look at that  
horrible phenomenon seemed to  
be enough. A mounted fire  
leader feeling the awful heat  
from it reined back his  
horse and blew a shrill blast  
on his whistle.

In less than a minute  
the field was a seething  
mass of men all striving  
for a glimpse of this strange  
fiery monster. They even  
threw all kinds of chemical  
bombs at its bosom and  
other fire extinguishing  
measures. It did no good.

"If this fiery column don't 2821  
quit soon, it'll start a new fire  
and threaten to destroy all the fields  
of wheat" said Manley gravely.  
And as it may whirl off or  
escape from that part of the  
smoulder it were best to devise  
some means of defense.

The men within hearing all  
nodded approvingly at these words  
but said nothing.  
"Has anyone a suggestion to  
make?" I myself asked.

"I suggest we make a counter  
fire" said the Captain. "Then we'll  
win out or be ready for a battle  
if a battle there is to be."

"But would add to the smoulder  
and why bother to think of such  
a thing when the wind is against  
us?"

"That's so mused Kaliko" at least  
not notice the wind turns to  
the northeast. When do you think  
rain would come?"

"Just as soon as this dry  
spell is ended" answered  
one of the Procecion leaders.

While this conversation was going  
on I noticed the worried look  
and expression of John Scanlon  
and I bade him come nearer  
and tell what was troubling  
him.

He was only worried and astonished  
and alarmed and distressed by  
the unexplainable appearance of that  
still existing column of fire.  
"Sir" said Manley to me.

2823 "I've jotted down for your convenience the problems to be solved, and the mysteries to be accounted for. First we must find means to throw out this smoulder, and help restore the country to its past health."

Secondly, we must undo as much of the destruction of the conflagration as we can destroy this hellish smoulder, punish still further the four who set this blasted fire, and restore the country to steep.

At this Kaliko shook his head violently.

"Who's going to produce the financial means to do this?" he asked. "If this is so we must find means to do so to make the country restored as before. No one not even all the bank can restore to this unestimated wheat town and other losses. And what about that snakey pillar of fire?"

Still remained the terrible figure of fire throwing itself again higher and higher, and another and another in honor. "Have at you!" roared Kaliko, plunging forward, and hurling a hand grenade forgetting other

hand grenades had had no effect in this terribly fiery monster. 2824

The 'Guelbannon' like farm was still in its same place. With part of its long body coiled up in the smoulder and the other poised to fling itself apparently forward it did not seem probable that escaping gas from the ground can be causing it.

"If we just know how Daniel Jones and Suggs were," sighed Jim Scammon softly. "They would know what to do about this fiery monster and there would be nothing more to worry us."

At this the whole assembly was thrown into a state of utmost confusion, some saying this some saying that, and all wondering what it would be like a session of congressmen while looking at the pillar of fire.

The farmer whose wheat had been set on fire because he won the woman the yellow one tried to get was there.

"I am the farmer whose field was ruined," he announced clearly. "I will tell you the whole story." We waited expectantly for him to continue.

"Two years ago" he began. "I fell in love with my wife who was known as little Nell. I asked for her hand in marriage. Her father is a farmer like myself is her

2825 made no objection to the match nor mine either and as she was quite willing - preparations were made at once for the wedding. At that time John Monahan was a down city - hiker and loafer from the city of Chicago. Passing by here one late afternoon and seeing some men and women hanging colored lanterns in front of my father's house, and inside my big barn, he stopped to inquire the reason for the coming festivities.

One of the men who was helping with the decorations quickly explained that they were for my wedding and this man who was an ugly and old sort of man fell instantly and deeply in love with little Nell.

As I watched uneasily from behind a tree I saw him follow her about till he knew she was a very rich Chicagoan and that if she would marry him instead of me she would have abundant riches and never be a "dudge" on a farm no more.

Of course she refused and the man rushing off in a blind fury, promised to make her and me suffer.

That very night word came by messenger that a plot was

being made to burn up 2826 my wheat field and continued the farmer soberly got officials from Sa Gall to apprehend the plotters but they had disappeared. Distressed and unhappy though we were she and I were married at once.

We still hoped to escape now Monahan and his threatened plot of revenge for three months we were safe and happy and thought he had forgotten all about us. But just three days in the early evening the time this big fire started two farmers, their wives, and elder boys and girls caught the four in the act of setting my field afire.

They tried to escape but the farmer and I were all on horse back and cut off their escape and brought them to us all as prisoners and telling why you know the rest.

I was so stunned by this strange story that I sat down so violently on the grassy ground in perfect astonishment and at my earnest solicitation his wife told her story. I was shocked at the dreadful deed and the deceitfulness of the four men.

2827 "They shall be punished well for this at their second trial if they ever get one and be sentenced without," I surely, surely promised. "I'll see to it they'll get life!"

Some one shouted misunderstand-  
ingly

"They did not burn the fields,  
it was the fire"

"The fire?" I roared. "Did you hear that Kaliko, he blames it on the fire, and who set the fire pray, Who put it out? No body. It's still burning as two of big smoulder inferno. Are you defending the four fire bugs?" I bet my eyes were fairly popping with righteous indignation

"The fire only can be put out by rain" Some one else shouted,

"What can I do?" I mumbled  
the heat is too intense to  
go near this smoulder?

"If you'd take my advice  
you'd set all the men against  
it" said some one else  
calmly. With half the men  
and equipment still in the  
near by cities and towns doing  
nothing how do you expect to  
get any work done?"

"Well why don't they come and  
help us then?" I demanded

fretfully, The man sighed  
and made no answer.

I knew he thought to himself  
why I did not have them

come by my demand?

If you are probably puzzling 2828  
about the location of this singular  
smudge added to the first by the  
second and much larger conflagration  
I must tell you it formed northeast  
of the first, and directly across the  
Newberry road.

The whole thing had been caused  
by the treachery of the fore fire  
bugs and this smoulder was feared  
and hated by this entire nation,  
and the whole United States was  
in a constant state of uproar.  
Ottawa, Maine, Norwegian Settlers region,  
William Ge Stratton, Channahon River  
Philly were in the path of the  
big fire storm. Their people routed  
in exodus, and the towns destroyed  
by the second conflagration which  
was four times bigger in territory  
and fierceness.

It crossed the Fox river whose  
channel failed to stop it from  
crossing and only the Saginaw,  
and Kankakee Rivers stopped its  
head long Goos Course.

It badly scorched the gelshand  
woods and smoked every one out of  
their cities and towns from Joliet to  
Waukegan and Chain of Lakes.

Oh what those four men  
will have to answer for?

So far as eye could reach  
there was nothing but a sea of  
smoulder. Smoulder, smoulder, smoulder  
glaring with blinding brightness  
with nothing to break the

2829 monotony except the  
horrified pillar of fire. At the  
sight many other persons as were  
nearest to the flaming monster  
had stopped in horror and as-  
tonishment. Then right and left  
like startled hares they darted  
huddling in the furthest fields  
scrambling into side wheat  
lanes tumbling over one another  
in their frenzy to put a  
distance between  
selves.

In fact they as amazed and  
terrified to see such a column  
of fire in this smoulder, as we  
would be to see one in the  
middle of one of our city  
streets. And when they glimpsed  
its strange squirming motions,  
they ran faster than ever.  
For some other spectators  
one look at the fiery column  
was enough.

They felted to the rear to-  
wards the railroad right of  
way, followed by three officers,  
and the screaming women.

Crazy right seems scared over  
nothing. I retorted. Let them  
run till danger really threatens.

I'm not going to order any  
retreat of my men if I can  
help. As I see that crazy fiery  
thing has them all spell-bound  
and fixed with only arrangement  
and high hand arrest.

The fire column turned 2830  
into a hammering sheet of flame  
the highest ever seen before.  
The roar of this mighty column  
drowned out every other sound  
and even green blue yellow and  
dazzling white tongues of flame licked  
outward, and as the sheet was  
hurled upward as shooting lava from  
a violent volcanic eruption.  
Below was like a vast pool of  
flame.

"First time I ever beheld a strange  
phenomenon like that" puffed Kaliko  
gazing fearfully at the ever rising  
torrent of fire. "If we were close  
enough we'd all be nicely roasted  
by now as it is." He looked  
sorrowfully at the broken up pro-  
cession. My ear also burns.  
None too mourned John Manley  
on grief stricken tones. This  
on top of all the other shocks is  
almost too much.

We dropped on down on the  
ground and panted with severe  
exhaustion.

I was surprised to see in a  
large clearing dolls strewn about  
the clearing. Even Noah's Ark,  
toy barns doll houses and  
caskets lying every which way  
and here and there were  
stuffed and wooden animals. There  
was also a toy train and a  
wooden circus. Even a doll  
coach and a doll buggy.



2831 I believe these things had been left by the passing tornado. Dorothy and Angeline came back from the Procession to us.

You can therefore imagine their astonishment and dismay when they saw the towering fiery monster and of the eight men fleeing like leaves before the wind.

At right of the huge column a spectator who was about to go to the halted procession gave a frightful scream and scrambled nimbly into a distant tree while John Manley reeling a long silver whistle that hung around his neck blew six shrill blasts and drawing a chemical bomb from a bag on slung over his back made a savage attack on the fiery monster, flinging bomb after bomb.

But the bombs exploded most harmlessly.

"See what's coming" coughed some one in the procession with a wave toward an open field. In answer to Manley's whistle it

looked as if his entire entire army of fire fighters was advancing toward that part of the remoulder you have never seen a more terrified and bewildered company of spectators. Their screams as the fiery column grew larger and sky shot nearly deafened them. John Manley was faithful. All the efforts of Manley and his men

to halt the panic and confusion was unavailing. They 2832 crawled ran leaped and tumbled in a wild scramble to get away. In one moment not a sight was to be seen any where.

### The Second trial

The next day, which was the third day after the horrid conflagration I was on Court at the second trial. This time it was not a military Court Marshall but a trial in the Criminal Court at Moline.

There were three magistrates on the bench on this afternoon when the four prisoners were brought up.

The justice room was crowded for the two world record breaking conflagrations. The world record breaking conflagration burning fiercer than ever, the high column of flame still refusing to cease, and the smoke during all people from from their towns or near by cities, the casualties among the brave fire fighters and my neighbors has caused great overwhelming excitement and the news of whom were responsible for this world's greatest disaster had created the most greatest sensation that could be thought of.

Mr. Ellison the first farmer who had captured the culprits in the act was the first to give his evidence.

He testified that with the others on walking through his cornfield he discovered that a cloud of smoke was rising from

2833 Farmer Jones wheat field. ?  
so he was not in the habit  
of looking around much and at first  
not very suspicious. Yet he and  
his companion, their wives and elder  
kids, all girls ran towards the  
scene. He saw four men  
setting the fire upon fields  
containing wheat and barley near  
the windrows of debris, that the  
fire was making headway swiftly,  
that the lower extremities of  
the debris was catching and  
high grass was smoking  
It was already a bad and  
serious fire and spreading like  
a fire storm.

He and his companion farmers  
and the girls ran up as it  
was still early in the evening  
and it was then discovered  
that the lower premises were  
fired and also a large quantity  
of grain was going.

What do you estimate the  
value of the farmers grain  
alone destroyed. Mr. Ellison ?

"The value of all his wheat and  
other high crop destroyed he him-  
self put down roughly at two  
twenty two thousand dollars. His  
lived farm house he said  
might have been worth  
thirty thousand more the barn  
as far as he can estimate  
them say fifty thousand dollars.

He cut back of this fire  
house that the fire was set

the fire. They desperately 2834  
tried to make their get away but we  
were armed and they were not armed.  
We two farmers and the three girls  
also armed closed in on them.

They fought us but we being  
strong from hard farm work easily  
them and took them under guard on  
my wayon to Sa Salle where we took  
of their arson and they were jailed.

Directly it was uncovered fire  
fighters came from Sa Salle and  
Mr. Wagon and those with him joined  
in the fight and a man was sent on  
horse back to this town to our chief  
Constable. The village Constable gave  
evidence as to the state of the con-  
flagration when he was put in charge  
of the first fighters.

The constable who had been sent  
over from Sa Salle then stepped into  
the witness box. He testified to  
the marks of the spread of the  
first conflagration and said that  
the manner in which it spread  
and treacherously tricked the thousands  
of fighters under me and which  
it spread over so many countless  
acres through the night where  
every thing had been burned  
through and all other fields catch-  
ing despite our desperate fighting  
showed that this fire hell was the  
work of fractured hands.

On examining closely from the  
top of Wicher Castle hill he  
found how extensive the storm  
of fire was becoming. The  
immense smoke clouds and heat  
beyond description evidently proved

2836 The circumstances of the great wheat field conflagration. Mr Ellison had been present when this terrible conflagration was started by those four arsonists to vindictively destroy the farmer's farm because he won in marriage the girl one of the four himself was in love with. On looking at them when captured Mrs Ellison had said:

"Why one of these men lost out on the girl the poor farmer won in marriage. They wished men to start this fire." Upon making inquiries he found that the four men were Chicagoans. He telephoned there at once and found the prisoners were also wanted there for arson also. The farmers, their wives and elder daughters joined the arrest. The chief constable then read the indictment that the victimized farmer and his wife had made to them. The magistrates conferred to gether for a few minutes on an undertaking.

Mrs Ellison the senior of them said addressing that lady who was sitting on "chair" at the upper end of the Court "We are sorry to trouble you but we must ask you to go to the witness box. I wish to ask you whether or when she had taken her stand in the box how it was you also connected the setting of the fire by the prisoners. Because they had been caught by us and were employed as a lived fire setters there.

2837 was another man who they confessed had been discharged by the farmer on suspicion of having poisoned one of the watchdogs who had tried to bite him and as other three dogs had all been poisoned on the night before the evening of the fire when the farm house was broken into to set it on fire. He escaped and is still at large. No one had seen or ever recognized him."

There was a deep silence in the Court when Mrs Ellison gave her evidence. Hitherto the impression had been far from favorable to the prisoners. Now it was less favorable. The farmer's story though strange had been by no means impossible and if true would have completely accounted for the two enormous conflagrations, and the two bigger smoulders impossible to fight or overcome which were the only evidence against them.

The evidence of Mrs Ellison however entirely increased the complexion of the case. The four arsonists had stood quiet and composed during the hearing. Their countenances had evinced no surprise or emotion when the evidence of matches, kerosene and fragments of oily rags were produced. They believe they were indeed thinking the matter over while here in Court came to the conclusion that the conflagration had become thus without their actual intention having spread from farmer Jones' wheat field which they fired so that the spread was no surprise to them as repentance either slight shock had passed over their faces when Mrs Ellison

2838 entered the witness box giving at her husband as she gave her evidence. I saw that looking at the prisoners Mr Ellison looked greatly vexed and also annoyed. As before at the conclusion of the evidence of each witness one or the other of the prisoners was asked if they had any question to put. He hesitated a moment or for a moment and then as before replied in the actual negative in a defiant and surly manner.

again the magistrates consulted together. Mr Ellison we shall be obliged if you will enter the witness box again. In your former evidence Mr Ellison you said nothing in relation to the prisoners but it now seems you had a previous acquaintance with one of them. Will you tell the court what it is?

I have not much to say. Mr Ellison said my friend here was the first to see the four men acting suspiciously near farmer Jones wheat a quarter of an hour before they started the fire. He believes it were these four prisoners and called us at that distance it was too far for him to distinguish the features. We came quickly they attempted to run away but we closed in on them. I have no full proof as I certainly suspected of their causing this awful inferno by their arson.

2839 what they had been guilty of starting these worst wheat field fires the wald has ever seen in spite of their denying that they had anything to do with it as they were unable to do to account for where they were at the time their fifth accomplice tried to set farmer Jones house and barn on fire. It is said he is the one who lost the girl to farmer Jones. I wish to say publicly that I heard some one say that he has deeply regretted on bringing the culprits to So Salle instead of handing them over to Mr Henry Dangers men.

There would have been a "prompt neck" to the party. You know what that means. Considering the tremendous size of the two fires and the two unquenchable emoulds and the now strange and mysterious column of fire in the midst of one of them and all the people smoked out of their towns and the loss of life and injuries among Mr Dangers fighters we ought not have taken them to So Salle but let his men have them. I wish again to say publicly that I have deeply regretted having done so even since and I consider that I have acted harshly and unwisely and wrongfully in so doing. They do deserve, deserved to be lynched. Considering such an overwhelming fire horror they started I had assumed their guilt with some assurance over wheeling so. evidence that we and the gardeners had with us.

2840 I may also say that the school master of our country school will give the prisoners the worst character for arson and he has known that they are also wanted in Chicago and given city for destructive arson. Another man a janitor of the school is also ready to certify I believe to their horrid fiery conduct during that fatal burning conduct.

"I suppose Mr Ellison," the coroner magistrate said, "you have not at any time since the discovering of their setting the fire obtained any other actual evidence which would show that you were not mistaken in your first view that your subsequent change of opinion was due solely to your general view of their setting the fire. Their character and of the men wanting to lynch them so far as you know it?"

"That is so," Mr Ellison asserted, and no further question being asked he resumed his seat.

His evidence had caused surprise and some little amusement in court. It was clear that there was a strong difference of opinion between him and his wife on the subject for while the lady had some thing like an animus against the prisoners she was not impressed in his favor of the famous "neck tie" party.

2841 After some consultation the magist rate said: "on account of this most stupendous calamity this case should if possible be decided some time to day especially if further evidence is forthcoming but I may say that under the present circumstances of the case we shall feel obliged to send it for trial."

Mr Ellison account of the proceedings from the time of the beginning of this immense fire calamity may be true but so far it may be also well supported. On the other hand we have the evidence where they started the conflagration admitted to be set by them they being caught on the scene and in the act by the seven farm people. We have the further important fact that they started the fire to get even with farmer Jones and the girl he married that the prisoners had some knowledge of the very premises so there is reason for the belief that one of them who is still at large who was acquainted with the place attempted to first set farmer Jones' house and barn on fire. That person must be caught."

Will it be any use my calling evidence as to the character of the conflagration before this meeting is over?" Ruben Jones asked,

"No the magistrate said evidence of that kind will be useful later during this trial when

2842 the matter will be  
thoroughly shifted. We only have  
to decide that there is prima-  
facie evidence connecting them with  
the diabolical offense and of that  
there can be no doubt. Public  
opinion in Moline  
ran high on the subject of  
the great guilt of the four  
men.

men. All farmers mill workers  
every body were strongly against  
them they were very disgraceful  
and disgusting among their  
fellows and they pointed out  
that maybe several other hands  
must have been concerned  
in this fiery business. That one  
of them still at large  
was seen about in public  
places of an evening and had  
connections with very bad  
characters.

characters -  
it was possible that elsewhere  
they had gone about such a job  
as that and would have taken  
pains "to leave no clue be-  
hind."

upon the other hand of course, upon  
in general ran strongly very  
strongly against them. Their story  
and their defense was very very  
and utterly improbable and I  
fell out who had once been de-  
feated in a love affair by  
another would be likely at any  
future time to revenge him-  
self upon the fellow who  
won the girl he craved for.  
It is to Mr. Ellison declaration  
of his subsequent opinion that  
he acted hastily little weight  
was attached to it. Every one knew

2843  
he was a hard boiled forward  
farmer and as he acknowledged  
himself that he and the six others  
had captured the four and others  
also had evidence which would  
satisfy him that they had  
acted wrongly in the first case.  
It was clear that from mere mis-  
culation that he had changed his  
mind on the subject.

round on the subject.  
at Tapping the subject was never  
mentioned. The ~~public~~ public men  
knew and believed the scoundrels  
were the worst criminals on all record,  
but not make themselves decide  
that lynching was justified anyhow.  
The teacher was next called to  
the witness box.

"Mr. Shrewsbury the magistrate said 'Have you seen what took place on the fields nearest the window of wreckage?'"

"Yes you honor and I saw Jones terribly distressed and he told me all that they had done to his wheat fields. I never in my life saw a poor man so frustrated and upset because of his life. He cried like a lost soul despite all his wife did to try to comfort the poor farmer."

"And you think the four men  
are guilty." the magistrate asked.  
"I am quite sure of it your  
honor as sure as I am of my  
own existence. I am any one who  
caught them in the act as I saw  
from my place is absolutely  
absurd. I have are no worst scoundrels  
like these four."

5661  
Corymb.  
Apr. 2  
X 1000

1) 1.  
 2) 14.  
 3) 14.  
 4) 14.  
 5) 14.  
 6) 14.  
 7) 14.  
 8) 14.  
 9) 14.  
 10) 14.  
 11) 14.  
 12) 14.  
 13) 14.  
 14) 14.  
 15) 14.  
 16) 14.  
 17) 14.  
 18) 14.  
 19) 14.  
 20) 14.  
 21) 14.  
 22) 14.  
 23) 14.  
 24) 14.  
 25) 14.  
 26) 14.  
 27) 14.  
 28) 14.  
 29) 14.  
 30) 14.  
 31) 14.  
 32) 14.  
 33) 14.  
 34) 14.  
 35) 14.  
 36) 14.  
 37) 14.  
 38) 14.  
 39) 14.  
 40) 14.  
 41) 14.  
 42) 14.  
 43) 14.  
 44) 14.  
 45) 14.  
 46) 14.  
 47) 14.  
 48) 14.  
 49) 14.  
 50) 14.  
 51) 14.  
 52) 14.  
 53) 14.  
 54) 14.  
 55) 14.  
 56) 14.  
 57) 14.  
 58) 14.  
 59) 14.  
 60) 14.  
 61) 14.  
 62) 14.  
 63) 14.  
 64) 14.  
 65) 14.  
 66) 14.  
 67) 14.  
 68) 14.  
 69) 14.  
 70) 14.  
 71) 14.  
 72) 14.  
 73) 14.  
 74) 14.  
 75) 14.  
 76) 14.  
 77) 14.  
 78) 14.  
 79) 14.  
 80) 14.  
 81) 14.  
 82) 14.  
 83) 14.  
 84) 14.  
 85) 14.  
 86) 14.  
 87) 14.  
 88) 14.  
 89) 14.  
 90) 14.  
 91) 14.  
 92) 14.  
 93) 14.  
 94) 14.  
 95) 14.  
 96) 14.  
 97) 14.  
 98) 14.  
 99) 14.  
 100) 14.

3 just  
desk  
used  
Color  
- not

2844 "But what did they say  
when captured. How did  
they account for setting the fire,  
and caught there in the act?"

The school master repeated the  
account Reuben Jones had  
given and said:  
While the trial progresses  
I shall of course testify both  
as to their conduct general  
conduct and to the fact that  
they had an Mr and Mrs  
Ellison said set Jones free  
to get even with him  
for as they called it stealing  
the girl one of their comrades  
was in love with."

Do you think they will  
get him too Mrs Shrewsbury? he  
asked.

"I should hope so your Honor.  
But I can't disengage from my-  
self that it is by no means  
certain. That old unfortunate  
business of the rivals in the  
love affair will tell terribly  
against them and though I  
am perfectly sure that the  
Mrs Ellison account of what took  
place is correct there is plenty  
to confirm it. It is just the sort  
of story they will say that they  
would naturally get up to account  
for their fire setting to get  
even with the farmer and for  
the vast spread of the holocaust,  
Of course if the jury renew  
them as well as I do the  
suspect would be certain but I  
have been trying to look at  
the facts as they were plain  
and I can't say what

decision? should come to in 2845  
such a case. Still of course  
the highly friendly character that  
will be given them and the fact  
that there is so much strong  
evidence what ever connecting them  
in any way with such a calamity  
they started must count intensely  
against their favor.

The judge or magistrate then  
asked: "Has no one engaged a lawyer  
in this town or else where to defend  
these four accused?" and to his  
surprise and the shock of the four

Mrs Ellison said:

"I've heard that because of the  
wide spread of the disaster nearly  
every one in this immense country  
have suffered such severe loss that  
they may never recover.  
In every place, on every ruined  
farm and communities  
all are so hotly aroused against  
them that no one not even a  
single lawyer statesman or attorney  
can be engaged to defend the four  
men. Every one believes the four men  
are proven guilty and there for no  
one can authorize any one to spend  
any sum that may be necessary  
in getting up their defense or to  
to instruct a counsel

appear for them.  
Of course also no one would appear  
openly in the matter and their  
names may not be mentioned but  
some have have guaranteed all ex-  
penses to lawyers in asking them  
not to come and defend these four  
men and they agreed it seems  
to me that it would be desirable to

2846 to find out if possible the  
religion where they came from and  
what they were doing there. They  
say they don't know the name  
of the village but as they were  
told it was about thirty miles  
from Ottawa and they could des-  
cribe the road they followed there  
ought to be no difficulty in  
finding it. I should advise you  
to again question Mr. Shewberry  
the school master of one time  
but now wiped out. 3 amerville.  
He is a great friend of farmer  
Jones and a very intelligent  
fellow. He may be able to suggest  
some points to be followed  
up at any rate he'll do all  
he can.  
The four men had another one  
who also was acting against them.  
It was Henry Jacob Preston when  
he was in the witness box  
the magistrate asked  
if it true Mr. Preston that no  
one will act in the defense  
of these four men. It is true surely.  
Yes your honor it is true surely.  
I found out yesterday and it be  
mighty hard if not impossible  
that any one will defend  
them. Still I've never heard of  
such a thing before so I  
suppose it can't be helped but  
it is hard beyond bearing to see  
your property go up in flames  
be sure of their revenge on  
poor farmer Jones for any one  
suffering like to be taken  
away from other important work  
to waste one's time in court  
defending them.  
Well Mr. Preston you know

2847  
these four men are being  
tried not only for their revenge  
on poor farmer Jones but because of  
the immense spread of the fire  
too.  
"Yes your honor so they say."  
"Well what do you think of it  
Mr. Preston?"  
"I don't think nothing one way  
or another your honor. Most folks  
say, or all of them say, how it is  
really proven that they must have  
done it cause as how the party of  
farm people and the gardener caught  
them at it, captured them and  
marched them to St. Gall. They surely  
had something to do with it and  
it was very wicked and cruel of  
them. They're five lugs wanted  
in seven states. I am sure I read  
of that and my wife and kids are  
quite sure too and all of us through-  
out the country will be terribly  
put out if they are not found guilty.  
So I hope they will hold out that  
they are guilty. I'm sure of it and  
square sure of it. I suppose there can't  
be no doubt about it for who  
should know better than those who  
captured them in the act and I'm  
sure I shouldn't go to put them about  
for to my opinion a better farmer  
and a more good charitable man  
ain't to be found in the country  
than to our farmer Jones so I will  
tell him your honor as I will  
hold out against these four also. Most  
of the lawyers know why the five  
lugs came here what they do.  
It wouldn't do for them to defend  
these four you know your honor  
especially as one of the lugs is a lawyer.



2848 lawyers is a magistrate him-  
self. No one will mention  
to any one, that no one will be  
their defense, but I can tell you  
every one will be heartily & very  
heartily pleased if they are  
found guilty and they will be  
terribly put out if pronounced  
innocent. "Right Preston" the magistrate  
replied "I understand and no one  
should know as you have spoken  
to me about it. It is quite  
enough for I to know as the  
others know they are guilty. It  
isn't likely either the jury  
should stick their opinion against  
all the bones because they  
started the immense fire."

Farmer Jones was now called  
into the witness stand. It was  
now the time of quarter of  
ten A.M.

When questioned Farmer Jones said  
with tears streaming down his  
eyes and between sobs  
"Was there ever such an unfortunate  
fellow as I am? Here I am totally  
ruined not only in my wheat  
fields but all my farm as well.  
My farm house scathed by  
the fire and my entire  
stock of farm animals trapped  
and burned to death. Here I  
am suffering this because I  
won the woman in marriage that  
one of them wanted so badly  
but whom she turned down,  
and from which indeed in  
the present case I am  
suffering from their revenge and  
again I say all this has  
come about simply because  
my wife refused the advances

of the other man and married 2849  
me.  
"Tell me all about it farmer Jones."  
I've heard the statement you made  
to the chief constable but tell it again."  
said the magistrate "with every  
detail you can think of some  
circumstance which appears to you even  
as trifling may furnish a further  
clue."

"I've seen Mr. Brogden a lawyer  
I have told him all that hap-  
pened" farmer Jones said but of  
course I will gladly tell you  
again."

And poor Rawbern repeated the story  
of the tragedy with every detail that  
he could think of speaking slowly  
as the magistrate wrote it down  
at length.

The magistrate then said:  
"I will see what I and the jury  
can make of right away. Of course as  
it stands it is so natural and  
probable that it would be some retri-  
bution for your loss. What one of the  
farmers who arrested them said that  
no testimony on their part will  
clear them because of the immense  
conflagration and the supposition excited  
by it that because you won  
the girl in marriage they had a  
fierce fierce feeling of hostility  
and revenge to you. Every one  
will be able to prove that for  
all can swear that since the  
tragedy you have frequently spoken  
to Mr. Dargen of his brave man  
in tones of great respect, praise  
and liking and that although you  
regretted the manner the second big  
fire got away on them you felt no ill

2850 against them on account  
of it. More over every one will  
be able to prove that the  
reason they set fire to your  
wheat farm was a true most  
diabolical devilish one and although  
I cannot swear that any one ever  
expected such a tragedy to happen  
on that early evening the  
fact that they set your field  
afire and caused this record  
breaking conflagration but so  
corroborate your story. They  
will pay though I have thinking  
it over and do not see where  
any testimony on their part will  
help them any.

"I will simply prove that  
they're holding defiant contempt  
of court your friends can easily  
prove that you looked pale  
and exhausted from the shock  
of your loss."

"I fancy I should look pale  
in any case." Mr Jones said  
"If I ever have to go through  
such an evenings distress as  
that setting my farm afire  
be cause I was in marriage  
marriage the girl some one else  
wanted."

"Well keep up your courage  
Mr Jones, you may be quite  
sure that your friends will do  
all in their power for you."

"Yes the farmer agreed I  
hope so. Some how I don't seem  
to take it too much to heart as  
I did. I shall feel it more  
afterwards perhaps, but at present  
the whole thing seems so  
extraordinary (but I don't quite  
realize that I was in such danger  
of these four men, the worst of

d is that I spread so far 2852  
over so much of the state and  
all the people throughout the nation  
will believe the four guilty of start-  
ing the biggest fire on all record.  
And also think how many good  
men Mr Sanger lost in fight-  
ing the fires. There is one thing  
only one thing that can still  
prove their guilt and that is the  
arrest of their fifth accom-  
plish."

"I hear" I said that the chief con-  
stable had written up to the full  
authorities in La Salle for them to  
put the runners on the trace of  
that fifth scoundrel. But he seems  
to have vanished into thin air.

Whether they believe your story or  
not it is quite evident that he  
had more than one person con-  
cerned in the awful affair. Their  
theory is that you quarrelled  
with the man won the girl from  
and got that knock on the head  
which is a very severe one. I went  
down yesterday morning with Kaliko  
to see the spot where you said  
you were assaulted.

There were marks where the  
horses stopped and marks of feet  
in the field and a patch of blood  
all which goes to prove that your  
story was true. But unfortunately  
it does not prove any thing  
more.

"But in that case" Reuben Jones said  
why should they have taken the  
trouble to carry me thirty miles  
away?"

"Yes there is of course that question  
but then on the other hand" I said

2858 The magistrate why did they take the trouble in are you could have exposed their accomplice. In both cases the answer is the same, they did it to prevent your giving the alarm untill they had got far from the scene of the attempt to set fire to your house.

They didn't like to murder you because of the consequences to themselves but they would not risk your recovering consciousness and getting up and scolding them, and cutting both ways you see?

"So it does," Reuben asserted. "It's just a question of belief and I am myself that all is really against them and I can't blame anyone who considers them guilty."

The case of these four men had been the first one taken at the assizes, and was occasional or occasional, a good deal of interest in motive. I'll partly because of farmer Jones losses the great extent of the fire disaster partly to the nature of the defence set up as to which opinion was a good deal divided.

The evidence for the prosecution was to a great extent similar to that given at the inquiry before the magistrates. Unfortunately for the four accused the chief judge was notoriously very severe one and his bias from the first appeared to be rigidly against the prisoners. Besides he too was a severe heavy loser because of the fire and so was every member of the jury and thirty three lawyers. Mr Ellison was again closely questioned by

the prosecutor as to the beginning of the fire on his fields near the wreckage as this was considered to show a particular animus on the part of the firebugs. He again repeated his arrest of the four caught in the act.

2859 "But what reason have you Mr Ellison the counsel for the prosecution asked blandly for changing your opinion of on the subject that you were sorry you arrested them and should have given over to the fire fighters to be lynched?"

This was just the question which the square could not answer at all satisfactorily and was a very particularly irritating one because it had often been triumphantly asked by his wife.

"I can really give no particular reason," he said except that on reflection not only that the character and wicked antecedents convinced me that not only that we caught them in the act and my fields too were destroyed?"

"In fact," the counsel said severely you were influenced by your own loss too, Mr Ellison in this laying a rank connection which the facts had at the time forced upon you?"

"I don't look upon it in that light," the square replied. "Shortly, I consider that in the first instance I acted hastily and unwisely in bringing them to so 'hell instead of turning them over to Mr Danger men and on consideration I saw that I had done so."

"I'm afraid Mr Ellison," the counsel said, "that you will not persuade the jury to agree with you on this point."

2866 I have one or two questions to ask you? the Council repeated again, when he rose to cross-examine? or indeed your evidence is so? think the jury will agree altogether not in favor of the prisoners? In the first place was the fifth accomplice ever upstairs in your house?  
"Not that I know of" the squire replied, certainly in the course of his not at first knowing my house he would never have been there. I indeed it would have seemed impossible that he could have entered anywhere because of my Great Dane. He would never had had the chance never to pass through to go upstairs he could not possibly have done so without encountering the Great Dane."  
He would therefore Mr Ellison have no means of possessing any knowledge as to the internal arrangements of your house beyond that possessed by the other people of this city?"

"None whatever" Mr Ellison said replied.

"Now as that unfortunate affair of setting fire to Farmer Jones wheatfields, your opinion to the evident guilt of the prisoners on that matter is not a recent one not the outcome of their hostility towards the farmer because he won the girl instead?"

"Not at all" Mr Ellison said, I knew nothing at the time why they set the fields afire. When I heard of it though I changed my opinion on the matter that they should be hanged without

trial very shortly after the affair of 2866 turning them over to the military guard at So Ball.

"Within a few days may I say?" the Council asked.

"Within a few days I may almost say within a few hours" the squire replied.

Farmer Jones told me that he believed but to Mrs Dagon that he believed the fire was started by the men who owed him a grudge over the defeated love affair and who were of an exceedingly bad character, and wanted throughout the states for arson struck me as being more probable than anything else.

Mrs Ellison was next called in <sup>was</sup> evidence as to the start of the conflagration near the wreckage was a mere repetition of that given by the squire. The Council then turned to the questioning of the poisoning of Farmer Jones dogs.

"I would rather say nothing about it as it does not concern the fire," Mrs Ellison said. "It is a matter which had been productive of much pain to me and I would rather not say anything about it."

"But you must madam" the judge himself said sharply "you are here to answer any question which may enable the jury to form an opinion on this case."

"I'm sorry to press you Mrs Ellison" the Council continued "but I must really do so you took the same opinion to that held by your husband maybe a little worse."

"I regret to say that I do" Mrs Ellison told me the reason for favouring the

2868 long slim cart standing near the wreckage and listening to the conversation of four men who were sitting under the cart. They heard enough conversation to inform them that a fire was going to set to farmer Jones wheat fields which was intended for revenge because one of them lost out on the girl.

Mr. Ellison must have forgotten the fact but he told me she wrote down the conversation on a piece of paper which he still has on his person.

Besides he has the cart and horse on his premises. Two oil containers are still on the wagon and some half burned wheat. He was himself to make off to give the alarm when he thought that would give them time to escape so he waited till they started the fire and then attacked them.

They resisted and the other farmer killed one of them to the ground. While lying insensible he was bound hand and foot and thrown into the cart one of the girls got on the seat and with the three on the cart with their hands tied behind them drove all the way to So Ball. They were turned over to the National Guard.

This gentleman is Mr. El Ellison, story as related to the chief officer of the National Guard where they were drummed out of So Ball all the way here to Mobile.

Nothing can be simpler or more probable and in some points

at least I shall be able to confirm it by very independent testimony. Mr. Shrewberry will tell you most honestly that the prisoners had arranged to come to a farmer Jones farm to set the wheat on fire. He will tell you that the two days after the prisoners were drummed out of town he went with Jones and the So Ball main constables and found the marks where the horse and cart had stood, while just out side of where the fire was started in the field of wheat near the wreckage the low stubble of cut wheat was trampled with feet and near by was a great dark patch which he was able to ascertain to be blood of the fellow struck down.

Doctor Hawdt will tell you that he was called in to stop up the prisoners head after his arrest and that the cut was a very severe but deserved one and must have been inflicted by a heavy weapon with great force.

I am convinced gentlemen after hearing this evidence you will agree with me not only that the prisoners are perfectly guilty of the charge but they caused all used farmer Jones and that it is a matter of the greatest surprise and regret that the farmers their wives and elder children should have committed them for trial by the military.

National Guard Court and drummed out of town when with all the overwhelming evidence against them they should have been given over to Mr. Dargis man, of other evidence it is in the state where they are badly yes very badly

2870 Wanted. All attempts has been  
successfully made to prove that the  
prisoners were in the habit  
of consorting with other bad fire-  
bugs and evil characters, all attempts  
have been proved to show all  
connection what ever between them  
and city fire bugs. They were also  
the men who came in a horse  
and buggy and low cart across the  
roads near the fields for the  
purpose of starting the fire in the  
farmer's wheat fields and who as  
we know did effect it and  
started the greatest and most  
disastrous and extensive fire the  
world has ever seen.

Three hundred and seventy five  
farmers saw all their fields and  
other farm property totally destroyed  
or wiped out. 200 others saw  
parts of their fields wiped out,  
houses and barns and animal  
stock and valuable orchards ruined  
and also wiped out by fire and  
were wiped out by fire and  
many communities also thousands  
up on thousands may a million  
up north were driven from their  
homes by the smoke shroud the  
fire which actually covered  
lake and the State. Michigan as  
far as I live.  
No scrap of the property  
can ever be restored and  
order to account for the severe  
wound on the head of one of  
them the Council for the prose-  
cution has started the just  
hypothesis that it was given in  
the course of assisting counsel when  
he and his men were caught  
setting the fire to Farmer Jones  
wheat. That has actually been  
the case gentle men and that is  
why the prisoners are standing

here now Robbed all the land 2871  
his fields burned by the four  
men he would naturally naturally  
I would have put the officers of  
justice in their track as he must have  
been in enforced communication with  
them and well acquainted with their  
ways and haunts he could have  
given information which would have  
led to their arrest had not the  
farm people caught them in the act  
and apprehended them.

He could have well done this  
on the law of the State would have  
made no difficulty whatever in  
promising farmer Jones a good reward  
on condition of his turning evidence  
against these incendiaries whose mode  
of fiery procedure shows them to  
be old hands and who are no  
doubt the same who have committed  
the various type of arson which have  
lately taken place in many other  
parts of this country.

The prisoners had had stalks  
trying to free them by fire setting  
enticement to no avail and the  
there also are requested, their captans  
will come before you and give you  
evidence of the extremely severe  
conflagration they have produced and  
the extremely horribly evil most  
bad character they bear. Mr. Shaw  
berry will tell you all he knows.  
I shall leave the case in your  
hands, gentle men with an absolute  
confidence that you will without a  
moments hesitation find a verdict  
proclaiming their overwhelming guilt  
and enable them to leave the  
dock with a more heinous  
stain upon their character.

2872

# The end of the trial and the sentence.

The School was the first witness called again for the prosecution after stating that although no early evening was settled for their coming over to that part of former gone farm, he saw the prisoners at six thirty P.M. that early evening and he saw them acting very strange and suspicious as they drove up in a one horse wagon, halt the horse and jump out. He also detailed their inspection of the wreckage alongside the wheat field and on a certain narrow lane near by and the result of their observation there and then they cut off from the field a good sized handful of dry grass and setting it after throw it among the wheat nearest the debris.

From their action he said proved the most intelligent and clever type of incendiaries anxious to set fire quickly in which they started the greatest fire on all record. They must have learned all this by experience and more.

They were the most peculiar persons in the world which I consider capable of this worst crime on all record and which they are charged with to their having any animosity to the farmer and his wife over the loss of the girl I can swear it is proven true. The keeper of the way side public house where

2874

they had been taken on the way to Sa Ball proved that one of the prisoners had a badly wounded head when taken down from the wagon after being unbound he was very pale and seemed scarcely able to walk.

One of the armed men asked the nearest way to Sa Ball and had enquired whether there was any chance of getting a train as he and his companions were anxious to get to Sa Ball with their prisoners as soon as possible. They got a Rock Island local.

Mr Penfold was the most witness. He said the prisoners congregated near his house that their general conduct was very very suspicious that they appeared very remarkably quick and intelligent and were now about some farmer they were conversing about. During the time they never lost around my place their angry conversation at a moment in.

At the time they congregated around near your house Mr Penfold the prosecuting counsel asked "were you aware that they were talking about setting of farmer Jones wheat on fire?"

"I was aware aware of that fact" Mr Penfold answered.

"From whom did you hear it?"

"From one of them who claimed farmer Jones stole their companion girl some one also called upon me also about the matter."

2875 "How is it he came to  
call upon you Mr Penfold?"  
"He claimed he too saw them  
set the fire."

There was a little movement  
of applause in the Court as Mr  
Penfold gave his evidence.

The foreman of Mr Jones  
farm was next examined.  
He confirmed the setting  
of the fire and adding that  
he knew that one of them  
some time before had entered  
Re Rubens house to set it  
afire but was routed out and  
away by Rubens wife with  
a stove poker.

The counsel for the pro-  
secution then addressed the  
jury and threw discredit upon  
any narrative which he said  
if they attempted was unsupported  
in any material particular.

That the fifth fire who  
was still at large had met  
the rest of the party in the  
field was likely enough,  
and it was there that one  
of the four in trying to  
resist arrest received the blow  
of which you have already  
heard.

My learned friend has told you  
not to dismiss from your mind  
the question about poisoning  
of Mr Jones dog when it too  
interfered and let the fellow who  
attempted to set Jones house on  
fire and it is not impossible  
to remember all that you have

and that the dog was poisoned  
and that the evidence was so  
strong that Emma Jones found a  
bottle containing the poison.

2876 It is true that Mr Ellison  
has told you that he after words  
changed his mind on the subject,  
but after the evidence which Mr  
Penfold has given of the Sinchery  
I think you will readily understand that  
no one will fail to give great  
stress upon this. The matter so  
far has been most tremendous  
as my friend represents it is  
highly important as here we find  
that again the dogs have been  
poisoned just as on the first occa-  
sion.

It is clear that the fifth scoundrel  
would be ignorant of the where-  
about of the kennels and was not  
likely to have down with a store of  
poisoned meat but had he known  
from person well acquainted with  
the place of the steps that would  
have to be taken before an  
entry could be effected into Mr  
Jones house.

You will therefore see the extreme  
importance of the point that one of these  
four men poisoned the dogs? I am  
perfectly ready to admit that the  
evidence is of a very strange nature  
if not circumstantial but from the  
nature of the case it is necessary that  
this be so should be so.  
Had Mr or Mrs Jones awoken when  
the incendiaries entered their room it  
is probable that much more evidence  
would be forthcoming.

It is however for for you  
to weigh the probabilities of the case,  
you have to consider whether the  
theory which I have laid before you



2877 as to the connection of the prisoners with this foul affair or any wild story which they will tell you is the most probable. I was the next witness I said:

"Some time after the prisoners were drummed out from town to town beginning from Sia Salla to Moline and then Jaul here I and some of my leaders were pestered by sister and brother Dabo Gals whose pleas and entreaties I promptly turned down and ordered some of the later ones to vanmoore or get shot by my men. Several women and some men claimed a few of the prisoners were their sons which I found out later from investigation to be frauds.

There was one woman who claimed she could prove she was the mother of one of the prisoners and had tearfully applied to me most most pleadingly to gain her sons freedom. I had said it was not my custom though over them to order the national guard to release him.

She said she would go to Sia Salla then to plead to the head of the National Guard and I thought that was an end to the matter until on my request a day later the officer of the National Guard called upon me and had heard that some woman called upon a man who was her friend how matters stood and that her strange application had failed to go through owing to her being unable to positively

2878 prove that she was the mother of the prisoner she then mentioned. I found this was so. I felt very uneasy in my mind about this and gave orders that the woman be arrested but she vanished as you would call it into thin air. No trace of her could be found.

Of the others eight whose arrest I also ordered.

I decided I must be prepared to make up this strange situation that I felt they were accomplices of there for I counseled that more over

I myself had through a hasty misconception regarding their strange appeals set them go when I should have caused their arrest and that I felt very uneasy at having been unintentionally guilty of a piece of injustice by letting them go away unhindered.

Over and above I had that particular woman wanted to give the guard of the jail here a thousand six hundred dollars in order that he would secretly release the prisoners.

She requested him on no account to let any one know that she had intervened in the matter but to represent that

I myself changed my mind and was willing to order their freedom with the one thousand dollar bail.

The jail guard was particularly anxious on this point because he

in calling me up said she said I paid the bail. I said in answer never gave away bail to pay for his release that the woman was lying and gave him orders not to release any one without my signed orders.

2879 I may say that from that time to this I have never seen or heard of that woman that I mentioned the fact to every one. I have ordered a country wide search of her and the others but no far no trace of them has yet found. I had thought their requests very strange and I most greatly regret of having let them go instead of apprehending them for strict cross examination.

The last public accuser arose while the prisoners were called to stand in their defendant box where they stood and defiantly gazed at the angry crowds around her with seeming unconcern.

And now at a signal from the magistrates the prosecutors arose and addressed the jury. He had a most pompous tone of voice and he strutted up and down as if he was a very refined and dignified man.

Your honors and members of the jury and fellow citizens he began "The four men you see as prisoners before you is rightfully accused of the dastardly and most heinous crime of first setting the wheat fields of farmer Jones on fire causing also all that wreckage to catch and then bringing on a most extensive and devastating country fire the world has ever seen or like burning almost all the northern part of Illinois from Kaneville to as far as the Kankakee River which for fortunately

was the only modern of 2800 bringing it to a halt - in 2880 either case the gravest crime ever known on all record has been committed which deserves an grave a punishment as the crime in great grave."

Don't you mean also that the north wing of the conflagration was also halted by the southern stretch of the Inoguois river too? I asked promptly.

I don't understand said Council Ben Ben Zogan. It seems to me Mr Dargy Dargy that the southern stretch of the Inoguois is some distance south of the Kankakee river and probably runs into the Wabash. It was stopped by the northern stretch of the Kankakee River north of and running through or past Channahon Parkway not far from Morris. The river Inoguois is much further east and I believe was out of the path of the fire storm.

I thought your thoughts were arranged in good order and I don't see how you had any thing upset them or throw them into confusion. The fire was halted by the upper channel of the river flowing about thirty miles east of Morris past William Abertown at which the river's wide channel prevented it from crossing.

"I believe you are right" I said. "If my thoughts were any good they would not be confused. My thoughts are arranged out of place and upset by what I and all my men through fighting that blasted inferno. What we went through was the most severest trial of all. Now go ahead."

2801 ahead with you prosecution\* and I pray you don't go easy on them scoundrels"

The criminals who now stand before the court with that unconcerned look on their evil faces has long ago also been known to be wanted in a good number of States for arson of the most destructive kind of arson. "And finally they made a most wicked plan to set farmer Jones fields on fire for revenge because he won the girl one of their companions was in love with

I can see them in my minds eye creeping stealthily under the fields after jumping off their cart and cutting down some high grass or inflammable weeds near by when they thought no one was observing them. Then the firebugs set fire to the grass of weeds and pitched the fire brand among the wheat near the wide windows of wreckage. I then see them captured by the farmers their wives and elder children one being knocked out as he resisted and made to get up into their cart.

One of the men capturing them was Mr. Ellison Whitney also a magistrate but the head one of the scallies as we know the thing is the true lie there is such overwhelming evidence.

"Do you believe their fifth companion tried himself first to set fire to farmer Jones house and caught at it by Mrs Jones. and was taken by one of

the dogs?" asked 2802.

Of course by my minds eye. How else could I see it? I had secreted my self near by and observed it all. As I'm walking came I could it ing on my walking cane I know they chase him. And we know that thing is true because since that interview there is no sign of him anywhere though the whole country is searching for him."

I suppose if you had a gun in your possession you would have dropped him in his tracks" I suggested. "Very likely and I would have been justified" acknowledged the Council and I pray you respected Jury and your honor do not let the poor farmer and his wife go unavenged. I do not think that any one has suffered as they did and it would surely be very unkind and cruel to let the culprits get away with so huge a crime which to my own opinion is worse than murder.

Eureka Jones is the sweet daughter of a lovely amiable woman whom we all admire and their chief and innocence are their chief virtues. Look at Mrs Jones in - telligent eyes, here she started to sob to the sympathy of all gaze at her charitable countenance. Here now she was weeping? mark the tender force of her soft padded hands? Would such a gentle woman and her darling husband deserve such a fate just because she turned down a man she didn't love no thousands times no? & here the farmer snarled and showed his teeth at the culprits.

"Aint there any one here to act in their defense?" now asked the magistrate at the question of great stillness pervaded the court. All the people looked around but no one came forward towards the Council bench.

"Aint there some one to try to defend them?" came the question again.

"I think there is something sensible here," I retorted. "You all it would be very foolish for any one to be their defense attorney or Council because they have sense enough to know it would raise a tumult now if they did. And God alone know how many people in this community have seen their most valuable property wiped out even the babe slayers and attorneys too."

But don't try to make out that some one would refuse to be defense attorney if they dared to do it and not pay the consequences. I imagine that defense attorney would be mobbed by the people and dragged no.

One would do it at all and not be found out. I imagine it would be too risky."

Perhaps it would to those would be reckless enough to do it," remarked the persecutor.

"I myself cannot understand this not having seen this occur before and having no personal experience in such matters. It could be possible that the evidence is so overwhelming and so terribly shocking that

no one who would their defense Council. yet it is beyond me to think it incredible ever. Unbelieving I imagine it would be very unusual to any Court to have this happen. No defense attorney. But I remember.

"To be defended is sweet. When freedom hangs to your seat, Demands a treat of savory meat. To be freed of crime is a handsome treat."

Nothing more can be beat to be freed from the cowardly that and sizzling death seat. I take into consideration friends of the jury and you will readily decide that the four men should receive the penalty equal to their wrong doing. And now fellow citizens and men of the jury I assert that so awful a crime deserves either death or life imprisonment and in the case of the ferocious criminal before you - who looks so dejected and unconcerned either the death or life imprisonment should be inflicted."

There was great applause when the speaker sat down. Then the head magistrate spoke in a very stern voice:-

"Prisoners what have you to say for yourselves are you guilty or not guilty?"

"Why that for you to find out" replied one of the prisoners. "If you can dare to prove us so guilty then sentence us, but how can a mind eye be proved when he has no mind to see with?" "If I believe we had

of course we believe we had "right to do it" declared another.

2805 2805

prisoner defiantly "Farmer Jones had no right to steal my brother's girl and by his influence turn her against him. and I must say he was a L shunk to do so. I will tell you what we really did."

At this everyone in the Court Room suddenly became quiet and the prisoner continued in a calm matching tone of voice:-

"I will be compelled to confess with the overwhelming odds already against us that we did set Farmer Jones' fields afire, but had no intention of making two such big ones and the smoulders that burnt on so fiercely.

I had no idea nor did any of my companions that any one was around to catch us in the act so after leaving our cart we crept into the field which was near the wreckage while it appeared no one was within sight and first hid ourselves among the wheat when some one did pass by.

When apparently he went away and we when we thought he was out of sight we at once jumped up and getting hold of grass and dry weeds made a torch light it and tossed it among the wheat near the debris, but no one of us thought we were being seen.

I instead of getting away we were caught in the act they closed in on us then knocked one of us down who showed fight and made us get into our way at the leveling of guns - It is our idea

idea that all is fair in 2806  
love or war, but no one can teach you people to be reasonable.

When we fired Farmer Jones' wheat we thought it would not burn no further than his confounded wheat field.

We did not expect such a conflagration that would follow or smoke produced that would smoke people out of their cities and villages from the big smoulders. And I suppose there for we are considered guilty but all's fair in war and love. That been proven."

"Justice" remarked with a sigh is a dangerous thing to meddle with. Yes all is fair in love and war, that has been proven no doubt without the slightest doubt. But that doesn't excuse you for what you did, you four more even two nations at the bloodiest war would never think of doing this sort of thing in any raid or incursion. Even not such a thing was done on by both sides in our Civil War. What even two enemy armies do to each other is for mutual military reasons, you caused this because you revenge on one poor farmer.

That's not fair or just in anyway.

I had you did not know or ascertain that the fire would sweep the whole country side is no excuse. Yes in the eyes of God had no business to set Farmer Brown's farm on fire in sympathy of the one who was a loser in this love affair. Now Jones had a perfect right before God to the man she only was in love with.

1967 That your brother lost his hard luck. Why didn't he win. Because the girl didn't want him as her man. She had a legal right to refuse him. You set of men have no consciences so you did this most dreadful thing. The jury men who suffered great losses also because of the fire will actually know you are guilty beyond measure and will recommend that you should either receive the death sentence or life imprisonment.

"Why should we receive the death sentence? We only started the fire, we did not kill any one" said the third man.

"Indirectly you four are guilty of first degree murder. I've retired more than three dozen of my best leaders and more than two hundred fighters perished in fighting the fire, you brought on by setting Farmer Jones wheat on fire.

Three of my highest leaders and best friends are laid up with the most severe burns and it's a miracle of the one with the worst burn survives, and he is Daniel Jones my most firm friend. Hundreds of my men are hospitalized with burns of various sorts smoke inhalation prostration from facing the fierce heat and over exhaustion. And you say you don't deserve the death penalty. Well that up to the jury though I suppose a life sentence would be worse.

They're cruel as hell to 2808 The prison inmates - That too is a part of the sentence. That you four could not get a defense Council is because of the most overwhelming circumstance against. No one dares come to be a council of defense. It's very strange and most unusual something that never happened before But you four brought it on your selves. Maybe so many unknown number of persons lost their all no one will be your defense attorney. So then you're out of luck. But because of your most dreadful crime on record you did bring this bad luck on your selves."

"It must be stated that the people of Molave are so generally well behaved that also was not hardly a single lawyer among them and it had years since any magistrate had sat in judgment upon the offender of the law." I put in - The crime of indirect murder and first degree whole sale conflagration is being tried. The most dreadful crimes of all. As I said before men of this type are without any sort of conscience and they actually did what no one before would think of doing. This crime will be an overwhelming shock to the whole world. Everyone of us must be exceedingly thoughtful. We have overwhelming evidence that they committed this heinous crime. You would think that these men are descendants of the wild cat of the jungle a very savage and ferocious creature indeed. This had

2809 made most of every body  
very unhappy. Every one grieved  
over poor Jimmie Jones' fate  
as much as we do and we  
are resolved to make their  
four pay the consequences.

The jury must believe that  
these four men is overwhelmingly  
guilty of destroying eighty miles of  
country and the death of a dog  
or more of my fighting men  
and recommend that they either  
be put to death or serve a  
full life sentence in full  
punishment of the crime.

My judge's judgement was  
received with great applause  
even from the magistrate and  
the jury while still Mrs.  
Jones was sobbing miserably  
at the sad loss of her  
husband's property.

The judges then summoned up  
with a most strong bias against  
the four. They told them that evidence  
for character was of course of most  
importance but that it must be  
relied upon far. The prisoners  
appeared undoubtedly to be intelligent  
and well conducted, but unfortunately  
their experience told them that  
many criminals were men or  
even women of unusual intelli-  
gence.

Stress had been laid by the  
council for the prosecution upon  
the fact that the four prisoners  
were well known in Chicago at  
the time to have consorted with  
suspicious fire bug characters  
but yet this after all was  
evidence in that city.  
Affairs of this sort were

always conducted with secrecy. 2810  
and these men had come down from  
Chicago as was probable enough to  
have the chance to make themselves very  
conspicuous before their firebug act.  
The jury has heard the stories of  
captors and witnesses and must judge  
for themselves but they agreed with  
the Council with the prosecution or for  
the prosecution that the fact that  
the prisoners had also been accused of  
for poor poisoning the dogs and  
that on the evening of the start of  
the fire other dogs were found poisoned  
and that probably by some one well  
acquainted with the locality, could not  
not but have an influence upon  
their minds.

At the same time the head judge  
told them that if they had a doubt  
in their minds it was their duty  
to transfer the prisoners to being hung  
perpetually. The jury consulted together  
for a minute or two in the jury  
box and then expressed their desire  
to retire but as they did so they looked  
diggers at the prisoners.

A buzz of talk arose in the Court  
when they had left. Opinion was  
well as to what the verdict would  
be especially as most of them saw  
the awful look the jury men gave  
to the four.

When the Council for the prosecution  
sat down the general opinion was that  
the prisoners would be certainly be  
found guilty especially of the speech of  
the Council for the prosecution and  
the summing up of the judge had  
caused a reaction and no one doubted now  
that the verdict would be not guilty.

2811 also the prisoners had no defense counsel, none could be gotten and no one volunteered among those in the court. So I thought it was a field hand that stand- ing there to watch four men tried for arson, the most serious crime next to murder. The decision should in fact depend the just charge which had been brought against them, the habit of what I was in the habit of what I called arguing things out by myself and as I stood there waiting for the verdict I tried to put myself in the position of the jury and felt that in that the jury should have not the slightest difficulty in coming to a decision. It was not long that the jury returned into the box. The cries shouted for order and there was not a sound heard as the foreman told the judge that they were agreed upon their verdict, they scowled upon the prisoners, I now occupied the time to trying to judge from the faces of the jury what their verdict would be.

They looked sulky and glared at the prisoners.

"Are you agreed gentle men as to the verdict you find in this case?" the head judge asked.

"We are my lord" the foreman replied.

"Do you find the prisoners guilty or not guilty?"

"Absolutely guilty of indirect first degree murder but first and first degree confederations, very well well gentle men"

the judge said, "It is your verdict 2812 not mine" Then he called to the jury "Gentle of the jury you see these four men about whom so great an uproar had been made in this town for their heinous crimes, you have also heard what these worthy gentle men have witnessed against them. Also you have their reply and confession. So therefore since you gave the verdict of guilty I sentence them to the long long prison for life at the hardest labor that can be produced there."

At the judges word a great thrill had run through the court for it was known an hour before that the twelve were all one way and the belief had been general that all were for the conviction. I myself had so understood it and the verdict was no complete surprise to me. When the school master pushed forward and shook Reuben warmly by the hand at once.

"Thank God for that verdict Reuben, I am indeed rejoiced and I own I really expected it. They'll pay for running your farm and the country side and pay dearly!"

"I didn't expect it at all" Farmer Jones said in a choked voice for the sudden conviction of his fiery son-in-law had surprised him, more than their arrest or any of the subsequent proceedings had done.

I congratulated you heartily farmer Reuben! Mr. Ellison said putting his hand on his shoulder, "I firmly believed that you four men were guilty from the first, I was glad indeed to hear the verdict."



2813 I was awfully anxious about the verdict. At the judges summing up I was hopeful they would be found guilty and be sentenced. I was however surprised the sentence was so severe, but he was a very tough judge and we could expect it. I'm glad I'm not one them. Sing Sing. Such a horrible place. And now Reuben I hope he said as they entered the street that you'll try to quite forget your horrible experience and neighbors here may help you in the recovery of your farm. Had it not been for this horrible fire no one would ever for a moment had doubted the truth of your story and now I will not keep you for I know you will want to be off home to your loving wife."

I walked with Reuben to his partly burned home so as to give the school master who had hurried on ahead time to break the news of the sentencing of the four men to his wife. Mrs. Jones had remained in court during the early part of the trial but had retired when the jury left to consider their verdict being completely over- come with agitation and excitement. She completely broke down with relief when she was told the news and was still sobbing when I and Reuben arrived. I at once took my leave leaving him and his wife together and promised them to

2814  
return in a day or two.  
This awful thing will stick to me all my life all through my life. His conflagration horns nearly got me several times transported to the other world while fighting it, and of no matter like that did me and my men so much harm while what well this smoulder do since as I heard during the trial its far reaching heat being so terrific as to ignite two 175,000 gallon kerosene storage tanks nearly a mile and a half away touching off a series of fires that forced all the population of Morris from their homes.

If those scoundrels who made this big wheat field houses would have been lynched it would have been different but as it is horrible as the crime is I believe more people out of ten would not be in favor of it and I am convinced that the jury was also eleven against to one against it also so they would not give in.

At any rate a great many people will think me guilty of great injustice. I allowed those four to be given the so called "neck tie party" treatment. The judge favored it however. I won't risk fighting this fire.

It took some time on horseback to get those but I saw the whole new calamity all of Morris citizens taken refuge in the large National Guard armory and a local church. I don't know whether my house is on fire or not said one man to me I'm not about to go for enough to this fire to find it out.

2815 Some idled at loading  
stations, depots and stores  
wondering whether the flames  
had reached their homes.

The town fire men ex-  
hausting the town water supply  
and fearing more explosions  
from the gas storage tanks  
had pulled back from the  
disaster area shortly before  
I arrived to allow the fire to  
burn itself out.

At least six hundred and  
fifty three persons were re-  
ported hospitalized with serious  
injuries from burns and shock  
when they far reaching heat  
of the north side of the smolder  
ignited the butane tanks  
sending a big black smoke  
plume into the sky.  
Following the explosion more than a thousand  
feet into the air.

Two of the big tanks  
exploded immediately and a  
third went up about two  
hours later.

I had heard more than 300  
civil defense workers, soldiers,  
firemen and policemen rushed  
to the scene and evacuated  
the rural cross roads as the  
danger of more explosions  
mounted.

The manager of the plant  
of the oil company where the  
blast occurred said the tanks  
are equipped with escape  
valves to release the gas but  
when they are empty the  
danger of exploding flames  
would remain.

I later learned the two hundred  
and sixty long wooden railway  
depot and at least thirty blocks  
were smashed by the explosion  
when which hurled a line of

fifteen burning rail cars into 2816  
the air spreading flaming debris over  
the area. Witnesses said ten other  
side tracked cars were hurled a full  
hundred feet by the blast.  
Telephone lines were down in the  
area and communications were lost  
most of the day.

The explosions also knocked out  
power lines in the area but the  
superintendent for the Illinois Power  
company said the loss of electricity  
was very localized.

Some men said to me -  
They apparently are going to let  
this thing take its own course.  
They still have some tanks in  
there that are likely to blow up  
and the risk of life is not  
worth it.

Morris is I believe fifty miles  
east of Moline. I watched at a  
safe distance flickering two thousand  
feet and the enormous up-  
rising smoke. I heard that the  
blasts shook many Morris and  
homes for many miles. Officials  
told me there was danger of  
more explosions from butane gas  
released by the explosions and  
the population of Morris that  
had stayed on in spite of the  
enormous smoke, but driven out by  
this new disaster had been cautioned  
not to return to Morris  
until further notice.

The town had been evacuated  
as a precautionary measure.  
Within five of 150 cars of the  
Rock Island freight train were blown  
off the tracks as they passed the  
tanks at the time of the blast.

28/7 They told me one coal  
can loaded as much as it would  
hold was hurled thirty five or  
more feet into the air by the  
big 1st tank explosion and hur-  
led a distance of fifty feet with  
all the coal scattered far and  
wide. I saw this was true.  
The towns depot and seven blocks  
of buildings I saw were really still  
burning.

Even here was where I was  
standing I could feel the radiation  
from the smoke as if from a blast  
furnace; and that that crazy fellow  
of fire was still there as I also  
observed for a distance.

I wondered what in the world is  
causing it.

Kaliko and others of my leaders  
absolutely looked depressed and un-  
happy.

What do you think Mr. Danger  
said John Murreley Kaliko says  
that that nothing can be done about  
that fellow of flame that we  
shall have to let it burn  
till it burns out. I have talked  
again against it till I'm hoarse  
but its no good. I hope you  
will persuade him to give up  
such a mad idea.

"I will hear what he has to  
say first John Kaliko has  
generally a good deal to say for  
his side of a question and I  
must hear his reasons before  
I can argue against them. No so  
Kaliko what have you to say for  
yourself?"

"I made up my mind while I  
was attending the trial Kaliko re-  
plied that if I could find no  
means to overcome that fellow of

fire I would not bother about 28/8  
it and let it go on till it burns  
out. It was worst and more dangerous to  
tackle that tank fire and no one will  
go near it either. This - Chung is sticking  
to one lousy spot and had been there  
all through the night. That first fight  
against the first conflagration  
we counter fire'd nearly got me actually  
transported now and if a matter like  
that did us so much harm what  
did the second and much worse conflagration do.

It portrayed hell and burned men  
like men falling on a war battle-  
field. If we had some means to  
even overcome this smoulder let alone  
the flaming fellow it would be different,  
but as it is I believe nine men out  
of ten would think it suicide to fight  
even this smoulder and I am  
convinced that even all kinds of  
elements even Heaven is against us (it  
won't rain - hell) only Carter is more obstinate  
by his decision to go and fight it,  
but no one gave in. I believe John  
Carter would hold out on anything that he  
believed sure.

At any rate most of my men  
will think me a queer of David David  
Recklessness or attempted suicide to fight  
this unless something turns up to  
prove our success by the help of well,  
yes badly needed rain.

Sammon says we might settle it  
hard some how with a mean we  
aint yet known but I should  
never feel safe fighting them.  
And now we got this damn Zapalaga  
of a new Calomita I have confounded  
at well tanks and gas tanks - what  
will happen next. This smoulder is keep  
ing on my track I won't risk it.

2819 I have been to John Stanley and he says if I am determined to let the smoulder burn itself out he also will cancel his idea to fight it. I have no doubt I shall find some means to corner it at some safe distance I am a good pretty good blocker and come water now at my own forest fighting craft and if I can get to success that way I can turn my hand to some thing else.

My only trouble is Simon he says I want him to go along with my plan. I could make some trap that'll bait the fox - guess if the smoulder but he won't have it He says six months at it would be of no avail. More of us would be killed and then he has all sorts of ideas on his head of the danger of a new big searing conflagration started by our own carelessness.

However I hope that in two or three hours or maybe days I shall be able to find out some plans and in our fighting the smoulder that then he and his men will join me.

"Never" said Simon as does ex citedly I was not born with any dose of Recklessness. If I have fought the fiercest most savage forest fires of the most hottest kind you can imagine nearly all my grown up years and if I try fighting this smoulder inferno we'll die from its far reaching heat before we can get within five hundred yards of it. Soak

what is far reaching heat due to to those oil and gas tanks yonder. 2820 We can't even dare go a thousand yards from it. How the heat could set that off from so far from the smoulder I can't understand unless it overheated the out side of those tanks.

I am not going to ~~see~~ even tramp all along side this smoulder and allow it to settle down in some unknown spiritual reason because of its killing heat coming from the oil and gas tanks of that unbearable smoulder I could not do it and even Heaven would be cruel to ask me.

I was silent for a minute I saw that Kaliko's mind was firmly made up and I could not deny the force of his reasoning. It was true that most of the men even mine still considered all of us guilty of dare devil recklessness or suicide. I saw the sure suicide of fighting the seething hell of this part of the Country. It was true that the story of our dare devil recklessness might crop up in all the world's newspapers and ruin our lives for such a folly. It it ~~do~~ do seem that the best thing we could do was to leave this wide spread

smoulder burn out. "Probably fighting this smoulder is not so bad a danger as you fancy Simon and you Kaliko" I said at last. "We will all have trouble with fighting the smoulder certainly in even the outlying districts."

but in its center we not dare think of fighting. Besides every hour the heat and size of this vast smoulder is greatly increasing and the chance to battle and overcoming it diminishing. Six months of fighting is more dreadful

1520 than it seems and too long. And though I do think that if we all go out to fight this raging smoulder hall I will be better for us to remain at its main rear where the direction of the wind is against it and not from it. All we have some proper fighting equipment prepared for it and I think when the time comes you will change your whole mind about it.

As to Simon himself? must there be a good force in what he says and until that pillar of fire is put out of commission it is a danger to the surrounding fields yet remaining. And I have no doubt we could do well to fight it.

Simon and you too Kaliko are my most best fire fighting men and so is Stanley and as you say I can turn your hands to anything - yet I don't want you to do anything that cause to you what happened to Reggido Daniel Jones and also Paul and Jacob Mar- us. This smoulder is most exceedingly dangerous the heat it is immeasurable beyond a mile from it, but yet as we have our heads screwed on the right way I have no doubt we'll find a way to work the miracle.

"We didn't expect that of you Mr. D. anger said John Scanlon, "I thought you would have taken our part and now you are going right against us." "Not against you my dear friends for I think Kalikos plan is the best for us all."

We cannot but suffer disaster 2821 if we recklessly combat this awful smoulder and every body will be very unhappy in seeing us suffer some great calamity, great as the loss would be to us if we failed? I believe that we would be much happier and luckier if we leave this smoulder alone instead of being in constant extreme danger constant and worry.

At any rate we would prefer if we found some deft it or it would be in different here of your Kaliko or Simon out there the smoulder at any time. do you intend to get to near Kaliko? I asked see the rest made no answer.

"We shall work our way the southwest of it" Kaliko "I can do any rough march soldiers of an army does and think I ought to make it my first along its southern but out of reach of its heat. Any how I have a big well equipped men and if around to the rear that find some other means around to the rear."

I in a short time I find that Kaliko was not to be at all shaken in his determination used to expect and began to busy myself in preparation for his risky march along the smoulder edge which he had arranged to do as

have the means to tolerable yarning against But how is firing that

around to replied. the ing as "I should by much edge of intolerable

force of if I can't get way I'll take me

finding

as soon as possible 2822  
He 7 stopped as 7 passed John  
"Scanlon"  
"Is there any danger is it you" John  
said "Better there than in the  
middle of the muddy eh. 7  
hear a talk of Kaliko going to fight  
the south-west you near of the  
shoulder"

"Yes he will soon be on the  
march" 7 said "and 7 have come  
over knowing as you were one of  
them who helped me against the  
man second fire and would  
perhaps give a good description of  
it" 7 had 7 will in danger you  
7 even saved the life of Daniel  
Jones and 7 had helped you a week  
to let you know as it were  
all right but my eye what a  
game we had of it. Never had  
such a game in all my born  
days" and he sat down on a  
stump to indulge in a great fit  
of laughing.

"What was the game?" asked  
"Well you know Stokes the  
was the forger and a Cochran  
sort of chap he was. He begins  
to his followers and says  
"In course you are all agreed"

"Agreed as how?" says  
"Why agreed to fight this con-  
federation along our front as  
recklessly as possible" says he  
"Nothing of the sort" says 7 "In  
the main leader here 7 want  
allow no dare deal recklessly  
along this front as sure as a  
child unborn."

Then all the other forgers  
come around me and says,

but seeing as 7 was not going 2823  
to give in Stokes he asks Stanley for  
leave to retire from the fight altogether  
Stanley said "No"

"Yet most of us finally had to retire  
because of the heat and smoke and  
speed of the fire" spread and while  
we retired they all pitched into me  
and says as in monstrous one man  
even though their leader should  
hold out against them and even if  
7 did not feel sure myself 7 ought  
to go as the others went

So 7 didn't say much but 7 sits  
myself down on a log and brings  
out a big chunk of bread and  
biscuits on my good woman had put  
into my pocket and 7 begin to eat.

"Stok you here" says 7 he got  
four parcels like this - to day be  
Monday and 7 can hold on easy till  
next Monday  
7 hat how 7 look at it. "7 have  
nothing after all to do with this  
matter if you all want to risk your  
lives that - your own doing Remember  
what happened to Daniel Jones  
men and to him, therefore 7 want  
going to see more men or leaders  
die or get burned recklessly.  
fighting that saying hell too close,  
7 hat never done and never will  
be done

"Well there we sit, sometimes they  
would all talk at once, sometimes  
two or three of them would give it  
me then a clock of morning comes  
and they get desperate like for  
only one or two of them have any  
idea of the real risk.

6 Can't find  
any more

6 Can't find  
any more

6 Can't find  
any more

6 Can't find  
any more

6 Can't find  
any more

6 Can't find  
any more

6 Can't find  
any more

6 Can't find  
any more

2824 They were chucking  
the matter would be settled  
at once. When the messengers  
were sent forward again stating  
they still couldn't agree I again  
sat down upon a log and says  
I am a selfish man away  
and as any of you as change  
your mind can have a share  
of what I have got.

Then I hear them yawning away  
among themselves. It was then  
when one of them came to me and  
says he give us a cut of that there  
bread, I am well nigh starved. I  
have got a wife and children to  
think of and it doesn't matter  
to me whether we go fight this  
fiery hell or not or whether it  
will whip us, or whether it don't,  
it didn't seem to me a critical  
case of inferno trouble all along so  
I will go along with you.

gradually two or three more comes,  
and half an hour later I could  
see as some more were hesitating  
so says I Looker here my friends  
those who have agreed not to  
fight this fire with dare devil  
recklessness. another chance has  
lessened my stock of bread  
and bacon pretty considerably  
and I can't get more than enough  
for five more so who the  
next? Now mine spoke out at  
once I divided the bread and  
bacon among them. Then as there  
were none of us again then we  
goes at them and tells them how  
wrong it is as we was all to suffer  
from their obstancy and we worked on

public int  
will be  
naturally  
will deci  
onably.

M-C-S-P-

ed. by  
jud.

- duty of  
to hit  
instinct

- teachers  
voted

- honest  
occupies

- men  
not  
hung

Right to  
SN  
LIN

Legis. int  
the full  
lay teachers  
over  
men

on their feeling about their  
wives and children and then says  
2825  
I call it down right ridiculous  
when there's a hot meal at the chow  
wagons wait my for us as three men.  
I should heap the rest from going  
for it. Just cause they would agree  
to be against dare devil recklessness  
without the benefit of a doubt.

Well that finished them, I thought  
of the hot chow made the other leaders  
so savourous as I believe they would  
have pitched into Stokes and the other  
two if they hadn't have given in.  
So they comes around and then after  
we fought the fire with great and  
perfect caution it were the best game  
I ever seed in my life?

Well Jacob I am sure I am heartily  
grateful to you for preventing a tragedy  
and I'll not forget your kindness  
though what made you so sure of  
such a great danger while all the  
others doubted it I don't know?

"Son Mr Dyer" the man said  
there aint nothing to thank me  
about. I don't know nought as to whether  
there was extreme deadly danger or  
not and it was a good job for me  
as I had made up my mind about  
the danger of dare devil recklessness  
before they went into the fire fight, for  
I should never have made head or tail  
of all that I talk about what happened  
to Ruggado, Daniel Jones and hundred of  
others and the fellows with white hair  
on the top of their heads as kept  
bobbing up and down and asking all  
sorts of questions was enough to turn  
an honest man's head. The question

2826 was settled and when the  
little girls Dorothy and Angeline  
came up to me saying she Jacob  
you are in charge on the fight-  
ing line I hear. Yes little girls  
I'm Jacob John Scanlon" says  
Well I hope you're going to find  
it too dangerous to let your men  
recklessly fight that big fire down  
yonder" says she.

"I don't know nothing about the  
nature of the conflagration" says  
I folks seem to think as they  
can't do it with success, I hear  
as they went at me and told me  
that they were sure it was most  
dangerous and that Kate and  
Samson Beggs were sure and they  
would be mighty put out if they  
found out they fought with dare  
devil recklessness.  
I had to remember what had  
happened to Daniel Jones and many  
others. So I told her maternal  
that Daniel Jones' experience was as  
a lesson, lesson and warning to  
others I would not doubtly them on  
no account and that the little  
girls might look upon it as good  
as settled that I would let them  
go at the fire recklessly.

So they told me not to say a  
word to any one, and I went not to  
the old woman, but in course  
I don't consider as she meant  
you."

I could not help feeling a great  
concern as I learned that the  
men had been prevented from  
doing what might have become a  
great disaster and fatalities  
not from any belief in the

ENG. CAN  
CORREO

ADSKO

DEAN T. SODAK

2827  
nature of the conflagration  
but by the intervention on their  
behalf of the little girls who had  
before fought the battles  
of the leaders, shaking hands with  
Scanlon I went on to assemble  
my men.

As I was walking on I saw the two  
little girls come over from a chow wagon  
with a basket of something, taking  
off my hat I stood bare headed  
awaiting them.

"Oh Mr. Danger" Dorothy said with  
a smile "I'm glad to see you before  
you go to fight that pillar of  
fire. I am glad - she hesitated  
a little "very glad you prevented one  
of us from doing any dare devil reckless  
at I was quite sure you would not  
let any one do such a dangerous  
thing."

"I'm glad I met you little girl Dorothy  
Dorothy and Angeline" I said quietly  
"very glad that I have met you for I  
have just learned from Jacob John  
Scanlon that it is you two I am  
indebted that his men are not doing  
anything reckless in fighting the  
conflagration."

The girls flushed hotly.  
"John Scanlon is very wrong to have  
spoken about it. We girls told him  
he was never to mention it."  
"I hope you will not blame him  
girls he told me he had never  
spoken a word to any one else but  
he thought you did not mean to  
apply to me. I am very glad he has  
spoken for I shall carry away with me  
to my own own city home a  
deed gratitude which will last as long  
as I live for the kindness you have



2828 show me and Scamlon  
not only now but always -  
friendness which have saved  
his men from a terrible dis-  
aster from sure devil recklessness.  
My God bless you Dorothy and  
Angeline and "render your lives  
a happy one"

Don't do anything reckless  
Henry the girl said gently  
"hope you and your men won't  
fight that pillar of fire"

So saying they went about  
on their errand, I stood watch-  
ing them untill they had  
climbed up into their wagon.  
Then putting on my hat I  
went to assemble my men to  
meet Kaliko.

I had no intention to ever  
try to fight that pillar of  
that pillar of fire and would  
not allow any one to go  
near it. I wandered along the  
south side or fringe of the awful  
and mighty smoulder looking at  
the uncluttered fire department  
apparatus equipment there at a safe  
distance from the heat and some  
what confused at the more and  
bustle of hay carts and long wagons  
and such still being loaded  
with grain and wheat and  
cut down and other loadings  
that was going on.  
Even canvas wagons were being  
loaded from hay and straw wagons  
and long flat wagons so the  
intense heat at a distance could  
not start a new conflagration  
elsewhere.

My focusing temporarily from Simon  
Seegre had been an emotional  
one but Simon said that

fat had so far come around as 2829  
to own that he thought my plan was  
perhaps the best although he still  
maintained that he should never try  
to venture himself upon so danger-  
ous a venture with Kaliko. I had  
promised that should he not change  
change his mind on this point  
I would whether successful or not  
come back to help him also.  
John Manley had rode up to me  
just now to speak to me also on  
the matter.

He had through Mr. Shrewsbury  
directly he heard that I was going  
among Kaliko offered to help towards  
selling me some of his men  
but this offer I had gratefully though  
firmly refused or declined to accept.  
Well Mr. Dyer I wish you every  
good luck on your fiery adventure  
of the near attack he said "the rear  
of the smoulder you are going to  
help him against will be a great  
concernment if you two win and you  
two are just the fellows to make  
your way in it. I'm sorry you wouldn't  
let me help you because I am in  
a way, you know at the bottom of  
this business which might have  
caused that disaster to Daniel Jones  
and his men."

"I thank you John for your kind  
interest and answer, but I am so  
much in your debt of men  
and equipment that I would rather  
not go further into it. I have  
enough men, provisions and equipment  
to make my own way against the  
west edge of the smoulder rear,  
my only regret in the matter is  
that I cannot persuade Burton to  
go with us."

2830 "I think he is right in  
"Darger" Manley replied for  
it is a very dangerous undertaking  
or enterprise you two are going to  
tackle you can as farmers say  
transplant a young bush on tree  
easily enough but you can't an  
old one. Some how they won't take  
root in new soil. Well Mr  
Darger I wish you every success  
I suppose I shall hear from Mr  
Elliott berry from time to time  
how you are going on.

As I started my ranks of men  
along the northern edge but out of  
reach of too much smoulder heat  
I stopped to circumspect the nearest  
wheat field territory. As I did so I  
thought of the coming consequences of  
the two extensive conflagrations  
and the two fiery smoky smoulders  
combined into one.

Every one of us fighter after all had  
been helpless to prevent the oral  
and destruction. Since many small  
towns were at the mercy of both  
opposing smoulders thousands of the  
country people looked to my men  
and city government officials for life.

keep they needed.  
Persons who survived from the  
holocaust were almost worst off  
than those who were killed injured  
injured or laid in bed by heat  
and smoke. By the conflagrations  
their food supply had been des-  
trayed or smoke fumed. Left  
without any thing to eat many of  
them were trying to live on the  
banks of trees or tried to eat  
grass. The prairie south of Morris  
and other towns was very hard  
hit. Many government officials

officials were going about gather- 2831  
ing food and clothing and shelter  
for the stricken people and smoke driven  
refugees. They even transferred the ration  
which were used in the preparation  
of meals.

It was their conviction that charity  
in order to be effective must be  
organized down to the last detail. Now  
we wished St. Vincent De Paul or  
others like him were here now. There  
might have been better turn of the  
events.

One of the major problems was to trans-  
port supplies through the fiery smoulder  
region. It was harder to do than to  
do it through a besieged enemy's lines  
during a war siege. Investigation showed  
all supply wagons could only come  
through by way of St. Louis or ruined  
Chardon and this displayed ex-  
traordinary courage to do so. The  
whole country side east of there was  
going up in smoke as if the end of  
the world had come.

Yet the officials were performing a  
service to the whole state by saving  
many thousands from death and des-  
pair.

Where the needy was concerned the  
relief officials were being equal to  
the situation. With the coming of a new  
night and as soon as it grew dark the  
smoulder scene presented itself more worse  
and shocking than those already described.

The whole thing appeared in still in  
its worst blaze which was so bright that  
even as far as I was I could see to  
read by it. It may be said without  
exaggeration that its most brightest place  
dazzling white was seen in at least  
a hundred different places at once and  
had already continued burning since the  
main conflagration were halted without

State law  
public gel. ad  
at the home

- applies - in  
- do -  
- don -

primary act  
essential

On  
Could not

applies  
night  
< point  
check  
set

2832

the least attempt being able to be made to stop its progress.

It still was consuming everything, the main conflagration had spread, I could never learn for days that this terrible smoulder fire was owing to any unknown type of subterranean eruption as some reported but to two causes which all concurred at the same time well naturally account for the prodigious havoc it was working on and on.

The first theory was that the wheat lower down towards the ground had grown so thickly and mazed together that it was impossible for it to burn out and another belief was the ground being of highly inflammable peat.

The continued sultry late summer weather and the sizzling hot sun had dried the ground to a great depth so catching fire too the peat was burning worst of all. This smoulder was increasing to such a degree that its far reaching heat might have started a new conflagration if the workers were not clearing many tons of hay & wheat away from its dangerous sections.

So by all in this country this smoulder is thought of as the most disastrous fire of all because its fury is being spent over such a wide territory.

By night we were yet far from the near of the smoulder it is impossible to exaggerate the horror in moor because of the explosion of the oil and gas runs set off by the far reaching deadly

for  
get

breathless  
injure

kill // as  
able - no  
property  
ful for

pro.

- ray  
- way  
- any  
- exs

- inevitable  
destruction  
about

- useful +  
- the me  
dignity

- No able  
to state  
children

heat of the ~~smoulder~~ 2835  
the dense obscurity and murky shadow of the tower above the smoke of smoulders and oil fire consumed

The long hours in all of all the dense smoke the silent moan of the hot vapors and gases escaping from the smoulder, the up-rising burning hot immense clouds of sparks at intervals which then descend like a cloud least burst of fire the hurry fugitives with wan faces and straining eyeballs calling on those they love to follow them above all that thick impenetrable but choking smoke which entered everywhere penetrating even to the lowest cellar and against which all human skill could derive no effective protection.

All these things is combining into a whole of such unusual and such awful terror that the imagination cannot adequately realize it. The stoutest heart is appalled the best balanced mind is losing its composure, many many lost their reason, and wandered through the country, began to beyond moor gibbering and shrieking lunatics. And none we may be sure who will survive this fearful event even if we ever forget these sights and scenes they and I have witnessed on those days of fire, doom.

Poor moor being nearest to the smoulder house was the hardest hit and worst sufferers. All this time are being thus rendered with all the anguish

2834 of surprise and  
abject uncertainty.  
This smouldering fire is  
most terrible in all its  
circumstances the most fan-  
tastic heat the strange  
flashes of electric fire in  
its immense sea of billow-  
ing smoke and blinding  
night glare but yet more  
terrible is its novelty of  
character and the wide range  
of its influence.  
At the time of the explo-  
sion exploding blasting of  
the tanks I was told noth-  
ing could be heard the  
screams of women the cries of  
children and the exclaim-  
ations of men.

Some called aloud for  
their little ones others for  
their parents others for the  
for their husbands only  
being able to distinguish  
persons by their voices this  
man I remember his own  
fate that man the fate of  
his family not a few  
wished to die out of fear  
of death many lifted  
their hands imploring God,  
but most before they escaped  
from the town imagined  
the last eternal night had  
come which should destroy  
the world and God and all  
Haven together. The terminal  
had been beyond any  
expectation.

About two miles yet from  
the southwestern corner of the  
smoulder we stood still in  
the view of a dangerous and

most dreadful scene. 2835  
Some of the smoke clouds  
seem to roll back upon itself  
and to be drawn driven from  
its strands by the uprising heat  
On the other hand the black  
and terrible cloud bursting with  
an ingenious serpentine vapor darted  
out a long train of fire worse than  
the still a roving pillar of flame  
which was increasing.

Soon some of the black cloud  
seemed to descend and enshroud the  
whole country side as in through it  
truth it entirely concealed even the  
Wicks Castle hill and the territory  
beyond it.

Turning my head I perceived  
behind us a most dense smoke which  
rises upward like hell black  
fury. The scene seems more horrible  
that the destruction of Sodom and  
Gomorrah and all Palatona  
itself.

As many persons I have heard say even  
from my highest leaders the conflagration  
which destroyed eighty miles  
length of fields of grain and sixty  
miles wide is not only going to be  
the worst fire disaster in all world  
history or record but one of the most  
unavoidable. As we know it is even  
now accompanied by two monstrous  
smoulders of equal length but  
up rising much wider it is con-  
suming a district of several hundred  
square leagues and it is said the  
fire flame overwhelming heat at  
the north and south is causing the

and silence of a God of Love not

2836 not less extensive al-  
tering the whole landscape  
and the level of the sur-  
rounding heat soil. Sometimes a  
slight southwest breeze would  
spring up and clouds of  
blinding hot sparks would  
be blown across the smoulder  
or soar upwards and fall like  
a storm of fire upon the  
surrounding smoulder being  
emitted also by the smouldering  
hot draught from the extensive  
fiery smoulder.

Eighty or ninety miles length  
of dense smoke cloud was another  
extraordinary wonder and no wonder  
it traveled even all the way  
across the lake smothering out  
for people from scores of cities  
towns and villages and the  
whole central states north of here.

The smoke of the tanks were  
still going up as if from an  
enormous furnace.

Nothing could be more suc-  
cessful or more than this descrip-  
tion of this undying gigantic re-  
volving hot catastrophe.

This is worse than a large  
water full of molten lava  
after a violent volcanic eruption  
of this unbelievable size" said Mr.  
Kaliko. "We can't fight it near.  
Even though the southwest wind  
is blowing slightly at it it  
does not prevent this unbea-  
rable heat from doing us a ter-  
rible."

of all these scores of miles of  
fields burning and all owed by  
this smoulder. They were the  
most fertile all good and most  
populous with farmers and farm

Issue:

hands. I said: all of the farmers 2837  
had raised nothing but wheat grain and  
other sort of thickly tightly binding  
high crop necessitating grain more than  
any thing else. I thought it was not mentioned  
the Mogolia river runs past west of  
north of here and so also the big  
field fire was burned there too, even  
though for a distance of more than a  
ten thousand leagues of fields were  
transformed into this vast hot smoulder  
of an unknown depth.

upon this fourth night of it the fire  
of this immense smoulder must have  
been arrested by the aqueous upheaval  
of its lava like heat. Lower down  
ward the northeast slope of it must  
by its own draft, burned rapidly back  
towards its source again to spread forwards  
and sideways not less imperiously  
along its accustomed upper up slope  
and to spread beyond its own self  
created by the under earth heat  
the subsidence of the ground and the  
break up of the bed of ~~the earth~~ to form  
that distant peaks of ~~the earth~~ fire?

When after this disaster had  
has become a horror of the past  
exclaimed Kaliko "the inhabitants of  
the neighboring regions come to visit  
this scene they will find the whole  
aspect of this country altered. All  
these farm fields will cease to ex-  
ist and they will observe where an  
immense sheet of smouldering flame  
had covered this long and wide  
space which all the farmers once did  
occupy. Beyond this vast territory of  
burned ruin runs to the south of  
the Mogolia other farms which

2838 formerly he acted the  
country also disappeared. The whole  
country is covered with this  
terrible smoulder that won't burn  
out all the cultivated fields the  
hamlets villages and all other type  
of property is being involved  
in this world record breaking  
cat-caldym takes to those  
fire demons

The records of this great over-  
whelming catastrophe and those few  
who brought it on against  
former Jones for a revenge over  
a lost love affair will be in  
my reserved not only li-  
History but by the living  
and spoken traditions of the Coun-  
try and the whole world world  
all the legends of the United  
States as well as all historians  
from now on relating how  
the world's worst conflagration  
and smoulder and their immense  
sea of smoke were caused by  
four revengeful hotards because  
a farmer won the girl one of  
them wanted. And how because  
four execrable villainous dastard  
criminals how how awful  
scars and scars of fields were  
swallowed up or this abyss  
of fire or destroyed by other  
honors that no one can stop  
as if destroyed by fire out of  
this earth. How I met strongly  
wish that my men had gotten  
hold of those execrable rogues  
instead of those farm people & here  
there would be a remarkable neck  
tie party" sure enough  
"I answered" and I do also  
favor it But even if popular  
tradition will never be forgotten  
and if the writings of all future  
authors will never be lost the

includ. rel.)

and purely.

change for

indg.

it.

it

very aspect of this part of the 2839  
Country will suffice to show that it  
had suffered from the most terrifying  
catastrophe on all record, as it was  
upon the beginning of that fatal  
evening of the fire catastrophe five  
or six evenings ago so it will re-  
main with its burned away whole  
country side its masses of burned black-  
and gray its remainder of the parching  
smoulder its suffocating sea of smoke  
that traveled a little over a thousand  
miles of Country across the lake even  
beyond Front Michigan its boiling  
flame from burning heat its fearful  
marshes of fire its seven undermine  
burned through ground and its vast  
sea of flames where I lost many  
fighters killed wounded half  
smothered and half a totally burned  
men including my best friends and  
sheepers Duggs and Samuel Jones  
Yes Kaliko the way I feel about all  
this enormous catastrophe I sympathize  
with you on the "neck tie Party" very  
positively

"So far" said Kaliko latterly. This  
smoulder is burning down to a depth  
which no far cannot be ascertained  
evokes by its origin and its mysterious  
aspect the dolorous image of a fiery death  
to even Nature. As said before he  
continued it extends northeast from  
here to the Kankakee river which  
fortunately halted it.

By wind it could have crossed  
the river to the east side if there  
was anything to burn. But all farms  
have low crops and very little  
wheat or other high bush vegetation.  
Birds of all kinds who would des-  
troy over this smoulder no matter how  
high would drop down dead from

2840 the deadly heat reaching up  
beyond an estimated height, and  
which from its fiery surface  
emanate deadly fumes smelling  
effusive from the burning low  
regions of wheat and ground feet.  
It sure beats anything for a  
huge devastating fire.

"I'll dare to bet" said I "that  
some years from now that in  
the libraries of this country alone  
there will be more than three thousand  
maybe four thousand works des-  
cribing this disaster and the  
four fire devils that caused it.

This immeasurable fire horror  
of a phenomenon will be taken  
quite out of the realm of sane  
superstition that may come.  
Yet the eternal causes of this  
fire manifestations are ever active  
what ever the causes are.

We hurried on at first still going  
southwestward and made directly  
to that end of a hastily cut down  
field of grain which opens to the  
stone road finding this passage  
was entirely blocked by the fallen  
grain not yet removed by the  
gatherers we turned back to the  
other end which led to the main  
fields not yet disturbed by the  
sickle men.

Yet by the road was a vast  
heap of weathered grain with no  
small hazard to my car walking  
quietly and just as we were slow-  
ly going through this field I was  
checked as it grew so thick and  
tightly together.  
Just as we were trying to  
go into or through this field  
there was one part that I  
could not follow or pass.

through at any cost I desired 2846  
to go some other way which I did  
Kaleho remaining two or three feet behind  
me at which instant he said that  
even this distance the wheat felt dan-  
gerously hot from the far reaching  
heat of the conflagration.  
So dismal a feeling at any other  
time would have affected me in the  
highest degree but the dread was in  
of a new conflagration starting from  
the heat of the smoulder and of the  
many instances of the same kind which  
presented itself all around were too  
shocking to make me dwell a moment  
on this single threat But yet I did say  
in answer: -

Another conflagration and we'll not  
fight it."  
I now had a long narrow lane  
through the wheat field to pass through  
with the heated wheat six or eight  
feet high all very old and ripe ready  
to harvest the greater part ready  
to be cut down and yet becoming  
threatening from the far reaching  
smoulder heat and even threatening  
us with inevitable death at every step  
should it flare up some patches of  
it which lay cut down before us  
or what I thought more deplorable  
so dry and thick and tough stem-  
med that you could not move one  
inch through it.

For my part as destruction appeared to  
me unavoidable I only wished these  
fields could be made an end of at  
once, and not have it start into  
a new conflagration, in which case  
I could expect nothing else  
but to see a still greater wide-  
spread inferno like the other two  
big ones before.

2842, As self preservation however  
in the first blow of nature  
there was and disturbing thoughts  
did not so far prevail as to  
make me totally despair.  
We proceeded on as far as we  
conveniently could though with the  
utmost caution and having at  
length got clear of this horrid  
passage we found ourselves  
safe and unharmed in a  
large open space in the  
fields which all had been cut  
down loaded on hay wagon and  
driven away a few minutes be-  
fore leaving a good egg clear -  
ing.

Now we stood for some time  
considering what I should do and yet  
not thinking ourselves safe in this  
situation as we felt the distant  
smoulder heat more severely and  
the glare bothered my eyes and  
his too I came to the resolution  
resolution of forcing ourselves through  
the remaining ruins of the wheat  
not completely cut down of the event  
and end of the field in order to  
get to the river side by the  
north that we might be removed  
as far as possible from the rest of  
the grain in case the parching  
heat felt so severely here  
would do to the wheat what  
wheat what it did to the grain  
and oil tanks.

This with the greatest difficulty  
and painful labor we accomplished  
and here I found a prodigious  
concentric concourse of our fire fighters  
of both sexes and of all ranks  
and conditions. There were several  
priests who had joined them in  
their sacrificial sentiments strongly

built women dressed like the fight 2843  
ing men all carrying fire  
fighting equipment all there whom the  
mutual danger they strongly defied at  
any cost and who had here assembled  
to a spot to fight - the smoulders went  
near

Some were on their knees in prayer  
for success.

In the midst of these devout  
devotion a second big column approached  
and were to complete the number  
already very large.

The defiance became so universal  
universal that the shriek and  
yell of derision could be distinctly heard  
from the of Wicher Castle hill a con-  
siderable distance off whether a vast  
number of the populace of waiting men  
had like were convened.

At the same time we could hear  
the drumming and band music of  
the still continued Religious procession  
where many persons were exciting  
the Rosary for rain. On a sudden  
a we both heard a general general  
out cry "An awful heat from the smoulder  
is coming on towards us. The wheat fields  
are lost." Turning my eyes towards that  
part of the smoulder which at this nearer  
distance was unbelievably broad I could  
perceive its immense blinding glare hear-  
ing and swelling in a most unac-  
countable manner as no wind was at all  
stirring

In an instant there appeared at some  
small distance a large 'body' of  
blazing uprising spark thicker than  
the most blinding blizzard storm.  
It rose up high and hurried and an  
awful parching heat rushed towards  
us with such impetuosity that we  
two and the whole crowd ran madly  
for our lives as fast as possible.



2844 many were overcome by the heat and had to be carried away and the rest were above their skins on dried feet dirt and stubble of cut down wheat for our own part? Had the manure escape and should probably have been burned had I not tore off my coat of which the back and tail were badly smoking. By thrashing the coat on the ground of the clearing I beat it out.

As there now appeared at least as much danger from the new and fiercer radiance as from the smudge, and as I scarcely knew whether to have all the assembly retire for shelter, I took a sudden resolution of us all returning with some of my clothes still slightly smoking to the area of the clearing I did mention before.

Here I stood some time getting rid of the slight smoulder in my pants by having Kulib beat it out while I too beat his. As we stood we observed a long line of stonemasons, farmers, hay and other conveniences acting as if there was a violent storm. Horses broke loose from their harness and ran away pulling the wagons. Here and there others were actually whirled around by the panic stricken runaways with incredible swift ness some long large long wagons were turned bottom upwards while still being dragged along and all the this because of the panic of the horses which seemed more and more astonishing.

It was at the time of which I am writing that the first of the burning smoulders

looking like a dazzling lake of 2845 molten lava at an immense extent seemed to be swallowed up in a sheet of flame with all the smoulders on it.

At the same time a great number of wagon and smaller conveyances were standing a few hundred of feet from it all likewise full of cut down wheat started to smoke badly and some were swallowed up in a stretch of burning ground as in a whirl pool and never more appeared as they blazed to "ashes".

The unusual dreadful incident I actually seem with mine eyes as I passed three hundred yards from the spot where I then was and also had an account account as I was given from some leaders of my five fighting men who were then marching thru men within four or five hundred yards of the horrid scene and saw the whole sad catastrophe.

One of them in particular informed me when the awful wave of heat came he could perceive the whole smoulder waving back wards and forwards like the sea when the wind first began to rise that the agitation of the smoulder was so great even under it that it threw up immense lodges of sparks from its surface thicker than the worst blizzards of snow which also appeared to swim as he termed it on the surface of the smoulder that immediately upon this extraordinary fiery concussion the smudge sparks rose at once hundreds of feet and in a moment fell in upon the smudge like a blizzard of fiery snow flakes at which instant he saw that part of the fiery smoulder with the whole concourse of smouldering horses sunk down, and at the same time every one of the wagons and

2846 the honor were drawn away  
every which way by "panic"  
Barnes", I was now

"I my self was now in such a situation that I knew not which way to turn I was faint from the constant fatigue I had undergone and I had not yet broken my fast.

Yet this had not so much effect on me as the anxiety I was under about the fierceness of the flowing heat wave.

I proceeded with some hazard to the same again which ground was very hot under my feet. Here I found the terraces so full of tiny wagons coaches country chaises chaises all on their sides upside down on every which way deserted by their drivers at the beginning of the panic among the horse men, donkeys, asses and mules.

From this lane the way led to wheat fields impossible to push through.

The new scenes of horror I met here exceeded all descriptions nothing could be heard but sighs, wails and groans from those prostrated by the ringing heat wave. I did not meet with a soul

in this region who was not bewailing the ringing of his companions and dearest friends.

I could not hardly take a step a single step without my treading on some of them.

In some places lay coaches wagons and carriages with their masters gone here still running

at a far distance here mothers 2847 with infants in their arms terrified, there flocks of the Procession flocks, workers all suffering from heat prostrations and burns.

But what would appear almost most incredible to you were the factless ~~not~~ notorious gang of four hardened ~~not~~ villains who had been busily employed in setting fire to poor farmer Jones fields just because of that love now.

I cannot conceive what otherwise could have induced them to this hellish work except to add to the revenge on the farmer. Yet the two farmers with their wives and elder children captured these most execrable villains and afterwards were heartily sorry they had not turned them over to my men instead of turning them over

to the National Guard. The portion of the Country side now overwhelmed by this ever increasing smoulder is estimated to be over the middle Northern part of the State of Illinois. By its terrific heat it is spreading four directions even against the direction of the southwest. The heat is felt not only northward and toward West but in Chicago and in Rockford the heat is nearly as great. At a place about twenty eight miles from the city of Rockford the heat is one hundred and four degrees.

The heat was also felt as far as Gary Indiana to the North and west and Michigan City Detroit and even Detroit where the heat wave from the smoulder which is well near about 75 degrees at this time of August

2848 was quickly elevated above one hundred and six the sky over head at some parts as black as ink at the same time. Towards further northeast the heat was perceptible as far as sign city whose people were all greatly disturbed by it.

Towards the northeast across the lake it extended to Grand Rapids. It was also severely felt to an almost torturing degree at Madison Wisconsin where many other cities were all disturbed by the dreadful heat wave.

Towards the straight northeast it extended to all the cities along the lower shore line of the lake to Racine Oshkosh up still further to the Boyer Oak - North where all cornfields were dried up. In Oshkosh the temperature also was 103. Still towards the northeast the heat was also sensibly felt throughout all northern Wisconsin and southern Michigan all the way to Gay city on the south in western coast of Saginaw Bay of Lake Huron.

On Lake Michigan 140 miles north east of Grand Rapids the ship a white back steamer had quite a number of its crew suffering from heat prostration and the compass was upset. On board another ship a pleasure steamer 120 miles northeast of Milwaukee the heat was so violent as to prostrate all the crew captain mates engineers and all the passengers. The whole heat wave was mentioned at joint meetings at Chicago and Evanston and at Rockford and even Milwaukee the heat

was almost unbearable and at these 2849 cities and even at Sheboygan it is said that many thousands suffered from heat prostration and hundreds died of it.

At Madison at Southern Wisconsin the temperature rose higher still, at Oshkosh where the usual temperature at this time of year is only as they say only 72 degrees it being late August at the time the great smouldering heat wave rolled in and within 12 hours raised the temperature to one hundred and fifteen the highest mark ever seen there.

This immense tide of prostrating heat rushing into the cities even with a sunless sky because of the smoke reared the people into prostrations by hundreds. The temperature was also so highly raised at Racine and the shock of it was severely felt at Janesville as to prostrate many people.

All these tend to show that the smouldering heat wave which produced what wholesale wholesale heat prostration in all these places has its origin in this immense slow smoulder and not from an uncommon unusual summer heat wave as the suffering northern cities supposed, and that this heat disturbance is of a very violent record breaking deadly kind.

Even despite the wind was the direction of southwest to northeast the great heat spread as far west as Rock Island,oline Davenport and other places.

This awful smoulder will be long estimated as the most disastrous catastrophic horror of all history because its fiery fury is being spent on a vast field country where all wheat has been totally wiped out.

The awful scene where a large tract of fiery ground was suddenly engulfed is to be considered the most dramatic

2856 and terrible incidents in the whole history of all disasters, and I again will say because of those damn execrable williams who caused all this to get even with one poor farmer because he lost to him a girl a friend of theirs was in love with,



Captain Jimmie John Thompson living in Gary Indiana as we read there recently six miles northwest of Chicago between Rockford and Milwaukee on a visit to a country friend saw the smoke black and various other colors rising the sky to an altitude estimated by him at not less than eighteen miles.

The smoulder cloud was also viewed by many people west of Rock Island a distance of forty two miles all spoke of the smoulders mass looking like an immense rolling wall and after sunset this immense wall resembled a blood red curtain with the edges of all shades of yellow the whole of a murky tinge with fierce various types of glowing reflection beneath it. All farmers at the same or about the same distance from the fiery smoulder reported seeing the tops of all trees telephone poles and telegraph equipment all aglow with strange electric fire. Such effects seem to be easily explicable.

When we consider how very enormous must be the friction going on in the rising hot air through the clank of dense beyond

thick clouds of sparks against each other during swift rising upward or forward, the awful heat of the still raging high pillar of fire, it is evident to produce a wide spread electrical disturbance in the surrounding atmosphere. The upward and forward rush of dense flame filled smoke from the smoulder would also contribute to these disturbances.

Also from this cause the compasses of passing lake ships were much disturbed, and yet the unbelievable heat of the extensive smoulder also possibly had some share in creating these perturbations. I've also read that so great was the mass of smoke and other fire produced vapor in the air that profound darkness which already has lasted several days, days extended even to one hundred and fifty miles from the focus of the smoulder.

Continued

There is being the record that it is pitch dark at Chicago Joliet and Rockford Ill. So great is the uprising force of the flaming heat that the awful clouds of smoke is being hurled up to a height of sixty thousand feet or over ten miles into space.

Another estimate is giving the enormous altitude of twenty five miles in which the smoke is forced to rise by the heat of the heat. Many cities northeast of the smoulder region reports no sun in the sky which has a strange red brownish color, more darker toward the south west.

And yet great as was the range of such smoke clouds they could not be

2853 compared with that of the extremely hot air wave caused by the enormous heat of the mighty smoulder. This atmospheric wave was spread by the slow southwest moving onward at an ever widening circle. It also spread against the southwest because of the awful intensity of the heat of this vast smoulder.

As I said it was moving onward at an ever widening circle like that produced when a stone is thrown into a pool of calm water.

This ring like heat wave traveled very slowly as evidenced by the following facts described before of so many cities suffering such awful record breaking parching heat with sunless skies.

This heat wave caused a very strange barometric disturbance equal to about four tenths of an inch of mercury in Chicago that is an extra pressure of about a fifth of a pound on every square inch. The effects on the air of such outbreaks from heat air waves were also recorded by this instrument but

Barometers in the most distant places recorded the same the same disturbances.

The great suffocating heat wave passed far over the northern and north eastern part of the country and yet no one of the cities or towns were conscious of the fact.

Barometers in the principal central cities of this country automatically recorded this effect of the great

heat wave from the smoulder to us

as the northern cities some 2854 heat to produce this phenomenon

also caused by the smoke of this eruption some most strange remarkable sky effects were observed in far different parts of the country. Many of these effects were of extraordinary coloring but not of any local beauty.

Accordingly scientific inquiry is being made and I believe in due time there will be collected and tabulated a list of places from whence these effects are being seen together with the dates of such unusual occurrences.

Eventually it will be concluded that such optical phenomena has a common cause and it must be the outer thin fringe of the immense smoke cloud at an enormous altitude. All the facts will indicate that the fringe of the smoke cloud so started from the southwest and that the prodigious of the smoulders heat draught could at any time now alone account for the presence of impenetrable smoke fringes at such a height in the atmosphere.

This fringe of the cloud must have traveled slowly - however by way of from southwest and east and also to the west and northwest carried by the various directions of winds so high up it already since the conflagration and the beginning of the smoulder was still slowly moving over Central United States two days later it must have been stretching all over the northern

Bl. M.  
Feb. and ref.  
to clim. by  
comparing -  
+ up sub-  
College but

2855 United States a day later  
it is said to be spreading over  
Lake Michigan and it is now then  
to see we cannot clash with the  
smoulders near its over Lake Superior  
and then to southwestern Canada.  
But the slow winds is still  
carrying this smoke fume haze  
onward.

Here are being a few facts  
from even the Royal Society as  
far even as London. Three day  
days ago the sun was seen as  
through a dark brown fog in  
morning day and late afternoon  
and there was a strange  
livid glare all over the sky though  
the sun though visible refuses to  
shines.

Even as far as Lake Superior  
and Duluth and Green Bay a strange  
red brown threatening sky is seen  
all day with the sun trying  
to show through it.

At Northern Michigan State  
there is being recorded a strange  
crimson dawn yesterday, sun  
red after rising strange brownish  
gazeous sunset first of the after-  
glows, sky and sky yellow  
and brownish red up to the  
zenith. There were two days  
ago and which is still con-  
tinuing most vivid sunsets  
vivid brownish red fading into  
brownish olive green or black  
purple. At Milwaukee the sun  
appeared blue while at the bay of  
of that same day the sun  
appeared green. the sky black

green and mud green in some 2856  
spots. Elsewhere the sun looked like  
a dark blue ball though the sky was of  
a sunset color after sunset at Dawson  
port Rock Island and even. Unlike the  
sun also looked like a blue ball,  
and after sunset the sky became so  
orange red that there was supposed  
to be a reflection into the sky from  
the glow of the big smouldering  
country wide fire. At Chicago and  
other places the sun set green the  
sky brown.

Remarkable after glows are seen there.  
Secondary glow still continues of gold,  
green and crimson & colors while  
broken sections of clouds has the color  
of purple blue and yellow brown.

Corona constantly seen at Boston  
Harbor and other places in that  
location is misty rippled silvery sur-  
face of haze while the sky has  
a bloody color.

By eight, eight thirty this awful  
night I was describing there was a scene  
of horror passing the power of all  
imagination. A monstrous new lum-  
inous cloud gathered alone or rose  
from the smoulder. This cloud  
increased in size each minute until  
at last it came to form a sort  
of a most immense umbrella of  
gray and blood color which hung  
hung over the territory for a great  
distance.

7 m proportion as this cloud grew  
the smoulder gained more flames  
and heat and the flood of sparks  
rose exceedingly high upward without hardly  
ceasing and spread like a dense fiery  
maudlin blizzard across the smoulders.

2856 I was deathly afraid a new conflagration might be started by this phenomenon. This was some thing that no one ever experienced. The scene at a distance was frightful. In every direction near the smoulder strangely shaped leaping white blue flames appeared above the smoulder rising up one might almost say like long fiery snakes trying to stand on their tails.

Pieces of flaming wreck blown by this strange explosion from the ground were of cargo and debris of every shape from the rear by standing wagons covered the open ground in a manner that defies description.

Wagons of all kind standing by ready to be loaded with the cut down wheat and of all sizes were scattered about in all imaginable positions, sometimes in all most incongruous situations one a long hay wagon had been hurled among the remains of a half burned grove of trees for above the flaming smoulder.

In another part of the open ground, alongside a cut down field were four smaller wagons piled laterally on top of one another.

One a wagon loaded with wheat was seen to burn down without its fire spreading elsewhere against the fields and another was lying among the wheat no part of her showing unless you went close enough and on her lay a big pile of hay bales, on the hay a closed garbage wagon and on top of all and

resting on the cart named 2852 though itself half under the wheat was a huge hay wagon all the wheat thrown out. Nearly all the horses were killed. The noise of this strange blast had been too loud for our very ears and they felt the shock.

Some workers were on a large long fifty foot wagon further away loading the cut down wheat. One of the workers Mike McGuire said to me:

Without the slightest warning I saw the strange smoulder, great eruptions sudden as a flash of lightning the timbers of the flat part of the wagon received such a shaking as perhaps no vessel ever yet experienced. It was not a gun going off, but a downright shaking which even in those few shot seconds threatened to leave not one bolt in its place nor two planks together on the wagon.

The horses or mules panicked but did not bolt, though they reared and screamed. It is difficult to describe the scene on board the wagon during these seconds frightful explosion shock.

The firemen and fire fighters came swarming hurriedly from beyond every one was among us in a moment.

Many of those in the still going religious procession made a simultaneous rush from the procession through the field paths. Others crowded the open ground consternation on every face and not a word was spoken till the wagon

2858 was a gain quiet when a murmur went around. More of those munition hit by fire & thank God it is past. and to my opinion it was the heaviest shock that had been felt here by an munition munition explosion in the recent memory of man.

Persons who had experienced and lived in these different districts for years men who were farmers. when the third big explosion destroyed their farm houses by shock one who had been present when many houses in La Balle had been destroyed by the recently last explosion among the wreckage some who had experienced the explosion that killed dozens of my fighters all declare this this new explosion and its shock and vibration, surpassed any of the 1st that they had felt or heard of before.

In a minute or two there was a little composure among the fire fighting men but those of the procession had become almost mad with fright. The pillar of fire still flared. I had probably terrified them nearly out of their senses and now when they were just beginning to forget the impression this new calamity coming in its new startling suddenness quite overpowered them.

Many fell on their knees and look out into frantic prayer some saved about the fields in still more frantic

prayer intreaties and petitions. 2858 while among some of the men there came fantastic deliriums some too their hair and clothes in the intensity of their fear.

But the occurrence only made me very angry and bitter and I cursed the tornado that had scattered all the munitions all around so the fire could explode them.

A quarter of an hour passed away during which time we saw nothing more yet stirring.

Many I suppose thought that the danger was over those who had read the accounts of the two great conflagrations knew better and anxious looks were thrown by I and others to the ever widening fierce emoulders.

A minute later a new cloud of smoke appeared somewhat northwestward. This was white like steam and then we saw looming behind the distant pillar like a gigantic wall of flame a tremendous mass of sparks rushing towards us as if driven by a strong wind.

A moment more and the wave of sparks had reached the southern section of the emoulder and in an instant that point of the emoulder was one mass of rushing fire as thick as a whirling fiery spout.

Few words were spoken among those of the halted procession the ladies clung to those nearest them almost in silence a few of us got them buckets of water to throw on each other to prevent their clothing from catching from the heat or made them bow low down low to the ground on his flat.

Ham = Post

Disorder → ca  
in firing fire

Very purpose  
= to avoid  
unharmful

- Courts men  
simply appl  
the legal ppl

distinguish

14:1

14:14



286 Some of them stood behind the half burned trees so if possible to be clear of the swirling weland of flames and sparks some went forward to lie in the waters of stony creek or went into the open grounds for the same intention.

But the elder women of the procession including the men and children half wild with terror before he came perfectly unmanageably better beyond control now.

About twenty of them blind with fear rushed headlong for the trees and their example induced three or four more of women men and children to follow them.

On one moment before the cyclone of swirling fire nearly struck us the branches of the trees broke loaded too heavily with those who climbed the trees and nearly everyone fell down nearly perpendicular at the same time.

In the meantime the terrible swirling cyclone of fire roared swiftly upon us. We had five minutes to prepare for the ringing heat shock and envelopment and it may well be imagined though it is impossible to describe how those five minutes went by.

Towards us came the roaring swirling cyclone of fire literally formed like a tornado funnel rushing upon us at the rate of fifty miles an hour.

Most fortunately for us about

14- natural

14-1- only 1  
pr. do

to indicate  
the may be  
fully paid.

286 1 three miles and a half outside of our position there was a short length of clearing in the smoulder thus exposed to the full force and fury of the fiery cyclone met it like a wedge and it was observed that the moment the cyclone of fire reached this point it was momentarily checked broke and dropped so that when it struck the other section of the smoulder it was perhaps slowing down though whirling much faster and towering higher.

It took the smoulders beyond the short clearing on what would call a ship on its stern. When its first rush of whirling fire came it went on fencer and then the main force of the cyclone of fire it self rushed full on the whole smoulder.

Seemingly like three fiery furnaces in one it came with a hissing and humming roar as if of a hundred electric motors and contrary to all expectation the fiery funnel changed its course and all was saved.

The fire twister rose up a long ripped up swath in the smoulder and flooding other sections with a new and fiercer fiery sea. The trees which so many persons on the branches as I before said were struck by the twister. The awfully hot tornado like wind and fire smashed the trunks like ribbons twisting the biggest branches

2562 like penure, breaking in small  
pieces like match wood and carrying  
everything else before it. Most fire  
raised - fire cyclone stay swirling with  
the fire, this one didn't.  
It was a perfect mystery how the  
ladies and children got away from  
the fiery horror in safety, all the  
men were scorched and burned, some  
fatally.

Probably ten or eleven later died of  
their burns, amongst them one woman  
and two little boys and one girl.  
Had it not been for that short  
but wide clearing between the  
armourer which broke the full force  
of the fiery twister it is likely  
a whole country side of grain would  
have gone up in flames and the  
chance of saving all our lives  
in this drama of horror would  
have been almost none.

It was impossible at the time to  
catch a word, the low howl  
heard on the first appearance of  
the fiery tornado had increased  
to such an extent that no  
human voice could have been  
audible and as it passed away  
now in another direction and  
beat in awful fury on the  
surface of the larger stretch of  
armourer the sound as it decreased  
mingled with its echoes from  
Wicker Castle Hill and seemed for  
a moment or for some moments  
as loud as ever. A second  
shock of some mighty ex-  
plosion went than the one be-  
fore was hardly felt so

Natural  
moon?

occupied were all on the open 25.6 3  
ground in watching the advance.  
The immense cyclone of fire.  
Later learned it had never formed at  
or on any part of the armourer.  
It was a real tornado formed by  
the great rising armourer heat and  
colder air far above.

It struck the armourer somewhere "at  
midship" as you'd call it being a  
sailor tore its way through the armourer  
sucking up clouds of burning debris  
and nearing us turned its course. While  
leaving the armourer it lost its awful  
fiery appearance, struck a large farming  
district leaving nothing of it splintered  
the farm house and big barn  
and killed the cows in it. Then  
it howled away into the gloom. Its  
path of havoc was five hundred feet  
wide.

The chief danger had passed but the  
great fear that had fallen upon all  
those in the procession restrained as  
it has been during the crisis by the  
very extent of the emergency itself,  
now claimed undugged sea way.

Had the procession been much  
further away, it might have been  
different, but the effect of their  
uncontrolled terror on the ladies  
and children elsewhere was very  
great. Tall hulking fellows were  
howling and crying and stamping about  
the open ground like so many turned  
children.

By the degree however a little  
order appeared through the awful  
chaos. A number of my well  
compared men went to pick up the  
survivors of the tornado devastated zone.

2564 and had them taken by wagon and fast mules to the nearest first aid station. They made pitiful but unavailing entreaties to be sent to the hospital building at Chester-brown, for they feared to be in the first aid station which was close to the smoulder.

It could not be done for the extensive smoulder and all its fear-effects barred all approaches nearly everywhere except to So. Ball's and that was too far for these emergency cases.

Not only according to the papers we read later but to even my own opinion this was being the most spectacular catastrophe of all recent centuries which is passing into the History of the world.

Almost all over Northern Illinois in that once beautiful farms of wheat and grain disaster and destruction unparalleled have ruled because of four implacable smoulders in their revenge on a farmer.

The smoulder itself seemed as if the very earth had opened to pour its relentless fires upon helpless humanity.

The two terrible wide spreading conflagrations, and the following white smoulders which is worse than the other two put together which overwhelmed over ninety miles of farm wheat and grain, and killed a good number of men fighting it, and hospitalized many more with severe burn-bod about them, certain unique features that will justify special attention.

beyond all other such awful 2565 catastrophes of fire nature. How ever shocking and stupendous the great fire catastrophe of the past may have been, they came at a time when all the fields were bone dry from lack of rain.

Now come a fire inconceivably tremendous almost at our very doors with all these agencies of most dreadful horror. While this implacable fire horror was going on unchecked, and with still no rain not even the slightest people are wanting to know the whole truth of what was happening and smothering them out of every near by town and torturing them with inconceivable heat in cities far and near.

So near to Monro is the great smoulders so tremendous in its effects so wide spread the simultaneous reports of cities, towns, villages and the whole northeastern country side and the great lake itself stricken by the smoke, heat and near night darkness that no one dares to even ignore.

What part of the Country would be next stricken? Was this the beginning of a series of world wide catastrophes? What was the real cause of such a conflagration of fires and could not they have been foretold and prevented? What kind of men were there for, connected for starting this most implacable fire horror? These were the natural questions rising in every mind.

2566 It to us all is a very very  
melancholy contrast to have ever  
note the beauties of all these wheat  
fields and farming districts as they  
were so short time ago and this  
raging inferno is now sweeping  
over them. How hee. Oh how I wish  
most strongly that my men would  
have got possession of those four darn  
incendaries.

Side a portent of country  
under destruction blazoned before  
a tenfold terrified world the onset  
of the greatest fire implacable disaster  
of the age burned over 90 miles  
with appalling throat upon Central  
United States started by four devilish  
men because of a revenge upon a  
poor farmer.

The country was joyful in the  
beauties of late August summer  
time when that had been marring  
the peace of mankind had drawn  
to an end, prosperity and pro-  
gress were reigning suddenly came

the shock of the horrible  
Chester Brown tornado its unbelievable  
destruction and after affect the  
destruction of seven cities and  
many towns and villages the  
death in horrible torture of  
many thousands of hapless men  
women and children the tortures

of many more thousands  
of injured fire farmers and  
thrust the heart rending grief  
of multitudes mourning their  
lost ones the wail of thousands  
of homeless crying for relief, shelter  
and succor

and now this fire horror  
which is a spectacle of overwhel-  
ming horror never to be erased

or obliterated from the memory 2562  
of all us fighters and those who still  
see it or those who hastened to help  
us desperate fighters. The whole  
country aroused to an out pouring of  
sympathy never excelled gathered wagon  
messengers of pity and means of  
fire fighting equipment to hasten to  
my army of fire fighters for the  
hope of the salvation of the rest of  
of Illinois.

The one bright spot in the  
one terrible picture was placed and  
is being placed there by this  
unexampled demonstration of universal  
human sympathy, the brother-  
hood of man and the touch of  
nature which is making the  
whole country keen when ever  
suffering assaults some stretchers and

From Chicago Rockford Milwaukee  
and Danversport and other cities

many able men are coming to  
join my men to try and fight  
this terrible armoules if possible.

All are bringing equipment which  
they are sure they can overcome this  
catastrophe. If I have heard attempt

have been being made on the  
route of being being to intercept  
the train taking the four men to

person to capture and lynch them.  
Whether it is true or not?  
I don't know but I don't give a

darn if they do I'll be  
good riddance. Prison even at  
Spring field is too good for them

Oh the pity of the grievous scene  
that will meet the relief expeditions

2568 The pen will hesitate the voice will tremble in the effort to describe what horrors are here and there. Phrases of will fail the imagination will recall no words will ever be adequate to convey the whole of the desolation, the suffering of the many burned fighters, the grief to me who saw it, or saw it not.

And yet let those be glad who do not have to bear in their memory the terrors and the tears that followed fast this vast cataclysm of fire. How powerless is man to save when fiery nature assaults how feeble his boasted strength and intellect against the stupendous natural forces when devour scores of miles of grain fields with untrollable waves and seas of fire make the earth to look like a hellish inferno and build most immense smoulders out of the conflagrations themselves.

Man kind is standing aghast. Were the hidden forces of fiery nature about to manifest themselves in a series of destructive assaults on the world, is it really strange that a chill of apprehension should be felt by all who stopped to think of the disastrous possibilities? That the fearsome will ask where is safety? That the supposition should arise "Is this the end of the world?"

One of the most remarkable 2569 features of the whole fire disaster and the enormous smoulders was the great topographical changes it made and threatening by its heat, sooner or later to make bigger conflagrations on the remaining extensive wheat farms in any direction west of the Karakache River.

In some places under the smoulders the ground sank five feet into a frightful deadly, fast smoulder. This easily explained while telephone and telegraph communication with various cities and towns were a cut off. Even railroad tracks by some unknown reasons became almost non-movable to fast trains.

Some strange changes made in the rails were of an extent which rendered railroad navigation possibly by only freight or local trains. All railroad timo charts or maps became utterly useless. And most of the land caps nearest and around the territory of the conflagrations was altered to such an extent as to become badly unrecognizable.

Also very serious transformations were going on in the vicinity of many and other places where a considerable part of the country was a fire sea of smoulders. Trains that endeavored to approach even so close as miles from northeast or east aspect indicated it is impossible to get nearer than ten miles to the cities and the scene of the raging east cat aslophic and at this distance

2670 the fiery smoulder was seriously perturbed as if the sea from a submarine volcano, flaming, boiling and hissing continually and almost incessantly sending forth great sparks clouds though there was very little breeze.

The awfulness of the heat wave, radiation and the darkened smoke covered smoke, the smoke fumes and so on caused discomfort consternation suffering heat prostrations and panic among all the inhabitants of all the cities north of the fiery smoulder.

In Galesburg, Chicago, Morris, Rockford, Milwaukee, Sheboygan and others including Madison Wisconsin, there was great concern over the possibility of the smoking out of their cities like those nearest to the smoulder of which are as well defined to their eyes as Dante's inferno.

Elsewhere strange atmospheric conditions and unusual actions of the fiery smoulder seas are now being noticed by the inhabitants of these cities and it is being feared that some other calamity is impending.

Already many are learning the cities because of the smoke to escape the possibility of being gazed or suffocated by the fumes, even the heat waves were of sufficient strength to keep the residents of the entire northern region in a state of heat torture and terror and many of the inhabitants of Galesburg and other places were fleeing their homes in a panic of safety to escape death from the choking smoke smog, rising from the incandescence of the

smoulder. A thrall of most black despair is still cast and 2671 felt by all farmers and property owners. All their fields is one great fiery sea.

The angel of fiery death has spread his fiery inferno over this section of country, a fiery death has smitten it, and still is and they have burned as the greatest conflagration there ever was.

A country side is dead under fire, a whole country side is desolate, a world is grief stricken.

and what is the awful power of fiery hell that robbed of life scores of my fighters, and ringed hundreds of others sent people fleeing from their homes because of the smoulder smoke. clouds of flaming noxious gaseous emanations from the smoulder to threaten suffocation to every living thing. I am dast ardly implorable men to revenge themselves on a poor farmer over a defeated love affair.

Many of the inhabitants even of Chicago and Gary Indiana are still being thrown into great consternation by the rights of the shy the smoke smog and especially by the darkening of the sky by the voluminous volumes of thick smoke which covers it and the awfully intense unbearable hot weather brought northward from the smudges.

It was also causing much alarm as to what the next night will bring forth.

It was awful in day light but when darkness fell it was more terrible still and people on their night clothes carrying children and lighted by any sort of lamp or candle they had caught up in their haste ran out into the dark streets.

2673 of Chicago, wailing and screaming and running aimlessly about the town. The smoke furnace had created a general panic and the people who could make for the tops of the highest buildings. The sun's glow of the smoulder could be seen in the distant sky from there.

In the meantime telegrams were being sent from Chicago imploring that special train be chartered to bring away terrified people from there. But the superintendents of the various railroads would not allow any of the trains to go to Chicago because of smoke and furnace.

They fear asphyxiation. The panic-stricken population of other towns are flocking to the city making the situation worse. Business is suspended the unheated inhabitants are more panic-stricken and the city firemen are sprinkling the streets and roofs with cold water trying to decrease or settle the heat which is nearly unbearable to all.

I also heard the inhabitants of many towns and also from Galesburg are abandoning their houses, villas, colleges, towns and cities and flocking to Chicago, Rockford and others. It is a curious sight of women, children, and bare footed peasants with wagon and carts loaded with household goods. They are fleeing the smoke smog and the intensely heated air or weather. The air there is oppressing you now. I have seen many fear they're going to die of smoke asphyxiation. They

wonder what the next day has in store for them. Who can tell. 2673

Because of heat Morris abandoned by every body was now miserable. The smell of the smoke is so strong even as far as Rockford that it is said horses on the streets stop and snort and some of them are obliged to give up droop in their harness and die from suffocation.

Many or all of the people are obliged to wear wet handkerchiefs over their faces to protect them from the strong fumes of the sulphurous smoke. All these days since the smouldering began the heat was so intense or also increased more so in the vicinity of Morris and the glare was so unrelenting at night or even day that it was impossible to approach the town at any time of day.

As one evening approached as I learned a local train with every one of its six coaches crowded with fire fighters from Rock Island after a heroic battle with the smouldering heat suffocation and burning stinking grain and heat furnace succeeded in making a dash towards Morris.

Morris is nearing the town close enough to get a view of the smouldering but because of the parching heat was unable to unload the workers. The whole stretch of territory was blazing for miles.

Another local train came to Morris but it could not get near on account of the terrific heat. Even country people were flocking into western towns for shelter, shelter and furniture or feared.

2674 Some limit train brought the news to Chicago saying all the country was burning up the stock was dying all the plantations were charred and all attempts to get to Morris were were barred by the heat of the smoulder and the burning oil and gas tanks.

I had heard that at least 160,000 refugee smoke driven people had gathered at Chicago. This concentration of refugees threatened a calamity as direful as the smoulder for unless they should be quickly provided with food they would surely go hungry.

Many reached Chicago on the verge of starvation and most of them if not all are badly burned like very severe red sunburn by the heat of the smoulder though so far away from them it was.

The distraught crowds block the streets. Hundreds are given shelter and every public place is filled with them even churches.

The sight of men crying bitterly as they walk Halsted Street and of heat tortured women collapsing in hysterics on the streets is so common that nobody pauses to look at them.

Spasms of weeping sweep over the throngs until every member of the dense croud of refugees from the smoke seems to be in tears.

The terror of famine confronted the homeless victims of the smoke but not for long in Chicago.

They soon got plenty of food and shelter there even though

store loads of provisions were consumed almost as quickly as they were distributed. Also refugees from smoke clogged town and other districts crowded Chicago Rockford and other places but fortunately food never became scarce.

Refugees arrived by train loads which were busy in bringing the smoke driven refugees to the cities yet they were all in a most pitiable condition, hundreds of them suffering from something like frightful sunburn from the smoulder for reaching unbearable heat and in urgent need of medical care. Many doctors and nurses in Chicago and also Rockford are working night and day among the "sunburned" assisted by scores of nurses.

Hearing that Daniel Jones had survived and was slowly recovering and was still in the same relief center shack

I called again to see him. Ruggedo was there too but worse off than Daniel.

I really was unprepared for the terrible sight which met my eyes when I entered the room. It was enough to frighten any one to see them both.

Daniel's face was burned to the color of oak, oak wood and huge patches of skin here and there and on his bare chest and back were completely burned completely off nearly from the very bones. Both hands were swathed in bandages and rested on pillows.

Ruggedo was nothing but bandages. It was painful to look at them. They knew who I was and were glad I came to see them but

Commil  
29 8



2676 the nurse said both were yet not in condition for any conversation. I thought to myself hell cannot be worse than what they went through. Both were still suffering the greatest agony.

yet I believe the performance of these two had been really most wonderful and the more so when I see their pitifully sad condition.

I do not understand how they kept up yet these brave men asked the doctors to attend to the others first and refused to be treated until this was done.

We left sadly and suffering from raged at the four men. I heard three local trains came and the rescue of people from Ottawa commenced at ten o'clock in the morning.

The rescuers were all shrouded with heavy smoke their eyes were weeping and the heat from that distance from the smoulder was most intolerable. Some of the refugees came to the refugee trains they were nearly naked and some of them were solemn others were crying. The trains had drivers at which tables in the coaches the smoke driven refugees could receive a meal.

The refugees were all on board the coaches as soon as possible. The trains then pulled away for Chicago. I had heard from some source some thing I and many others do not believe. The wave of fire from the second main conflagration was so sharply defined on the northern edge of the conflagration that a bull and three cows on the edge of the fiery track were roasted

C. S. C. Lk.

born.

bill

S.C. as Nat. Libor.

u n Preparation

ing a

to any ref.

on one side and not a 2677  
hair was singed on the other side.  
side of the animals. I'll have to see  
these animals before I believe it.  
If this really did happen the heat  
must have been beyond comprehension  
as the animals were said to be about  
three three hundred yards from the  
conflagration.

Most of the refugees entering Chicago  
as I heard had entered into a sort of  
apathy from which they were slow  
to rouse. Such is often the fact  
after some supreme grief or calamity.

It is said hundreds of refugees  
driven from their towns by the  
smoke smog are still entering the  
city some of them without clothes  
and a few carrying their belongings  
with them.

They are apparently dazed and do not  
know what to do to care for them-  
selves. The Mayor said medical  
supplies are not needed as there  
were no burned many were struck  
with the apparent apathy of the many  
refugees their calmness while speaking  
of the smoulder catastrophe was some-  
thing remarkable.

Streams of other frightened people  
were pouring into Rockford, Daven-  
port, Rock Island from all the surrounding  
country to get away from the intolerable  
heat and smoke.

Those people were not destitute but  
they were terrified they wanted only  
one thing and that was to be  
taken far from the smoulder smoke  
shroud which they said was so  
suffocating. Many local trains  
were boarded by scores of persons

Paw. a R.

Outstanding  
fur.

Co  
Am  
done  
just

2678 crazed with fear and begging to be transported to where the trains would go all the people believed the whole country was doomed by the smoulder to complete destruction and left by long trainloads.

The scene was one of the wildest confusion as many sought to escape to the outgoing trains local passengers or freight whole families were assembling on the roads as heard and along the railroad right of way nearly all falling on their knees and screaming for appeals for trains to take them to western towns out of the path of the choking smoke.

Terror and panic was spent by the people still left in moans. The air was so filled with smoulder smoke that it was barely possible to breathe. At times it seemed as if suffocation must be the fate of all who could not be yet taken on the crowded trains while there after all was no loss of life the smoulder was said to be worse far worse than ever before.

Even for some reason thousands left Joliet and others. Some went into other towns to run the risk of hunger and starvation preferring that to the fate that would be theirs if they continued to face the raging heat and suffocating fog of dense smoke. Others went to Davenport and even to Bloomington and near by southern towns some as far south as Lincoln and Alto where to depend upon the charity of strangers every train from St. Louis

by using  
clinging them

councils  
midpoints  
approached

received  
the purpose

the cities

Amend

establish

And nothing

one  
all  
what  
directly

Religious T.

for Aid no  
deserve  
this

Ward  
Be all if  
schools

1st Amer  
Every form  
of Tax

was crowded with those ready to fill the smoulder heat and smoke. Clustered about the trains were wagons filled with refugees who begged to be taken on the trains, hundreds finding it impossible to obtain wagons to take them to the railroad station watched the railroad tracks, risking their lives by being struck by trains to avoid the danger of the heat and smoke that filled them with more dread.

From all parts of the country not cut off by the smoke and overheated smoulder refugees were coming into Northwestern cities and towns. All roads were filled with panic stricken and hungry refugees arriving at Davenport where their terrors did not decrease and they were as anxious to press on to some safer place as they were to get to the various cities not in the path of the smoke, army and honor.

All the roads were swarming with people and also all other roads were dotted with dead farm animals of every kind and many many were reported to be dying having fallen from heat or smoke suffocations. Several wages were offered for rescuers to go out and assist people who also had fallen by the way but the laborers were too full of fear to be tempted by any offer.

The panic was greatest the second day of the smoulder when seen a hundred miles away the skies were filled with rolling and fiery red smoke. Many feared that the would engulf them all and



2680 - and the terror that ensued was pitiful. The spectacle was so appalling that the whole populace could not appreciate the sublimity of it. Quickly the streets were filled with even soldiers and sailors mixed freely with the citizens all frightened witless.

All struggled to get to places of safety from the smoke and heat to places they knew not where.

All believed that where they were was the territory of the greatest danger. Some cursed in their abject frenzy (and blame them) thinking it was prayers they were uttering others fell on their knees in the streets and besought protection from above. Few were able to refrain from tears. Then when the panic would subside a little there was a general scramble for refugee trains, or other passages from the smoke.

A freight train of fifty box cars picked up one thousand refugees who were struggling to get on and took them to Quincy. Some of the others were taken to Bloomington on the afternoon train and to Lincoln Ill.

The smaller trains were out constantly saving many who otherwise might have perished from smoke fumes. This was work of much danger as the smoke also affected the very rescuers.

Yet supplies were plenty so

charges were demanded for 2681 transportation. Hundreds went at once and thousands were waiting only for an opportunity to get away.

The State Government recognized the possible necessity of abandoning all the region of disaster in response to the clamorous terror of the inhabitants and the manifest threat of continuous danger of heat and the smoulder. The Mayor of Chicago telegraphed to Gov. S. D. Hall and even to Springfield instructing the Mayor of S. D. Hall. And the Governor of Illinois to make all possible arrangements for the removal of the inhabitants of smoke endangered cities and towns to the event of circumstances making it necessary the evacuation of the territory north and east of the smoulder. He read the message and:

"Make known if the situation seems to you to necessitate partial or total evacuation of Illinois. I will north of the smoulder the means at your disposal of those you may need."

All of the neighboring northern and western cities of Ill. and other states from Rock Island to Omaha and Kansas City offered their hospitality to the refugees. Chicago being the biggest city nearest was the favorite refuge of the fleeing people. The government at Springfield Ill. likewise considered the advisability of transferring the refugees to St. Louis near the Mississippi River.

Parade -

Subsiding  
Night

fact proved  
understand  
what's his  
performance  
blatant

2683 The exodus was con-  
 2683 tinuous but the authorities  
 hesitated to take such radical  
 action as to order the depopulation  
 of all that part of the State.  
 The people were convinced that  
 God was angry with the State  
 and meant to scourge it with  
 tornado and fire. Utter and un-  
 reasoning fear possessed peo-  
 ple and all souls.

Even Chicago was believed to be  
 unsafe. The presence of the

relief trains however was helpful  
 to the people who said

"The trains make safety."

The whole entire conflagration  
 instead of being put out or  
 overcome had become two en-  
 ormous fires increasing the  
 awful amplitude of fiery razzing  
 blinding glare of destruction.

In all the conditions of this  
 part of Illinois were impossible  
 to describe. Believing that the  
 territory was doomed the remain-  
 der of the population continued in  
 a state of pitiful pitiful panic.

Just as fast as possible they  
 were still leaving on trains.  
 They did not care where they  
 went all they asked was  
 means of leaving the territory  
 they had come to regard as  
 an inferno trying to tell  
 them with heat and  
 smoke. One thousand refugees

went to Chicago on a north 2684  
 bound Illinois central in a state of  
 poverty many almost naked and  
 one with more than the clothes  
 he wore among the homeless  
 ones were many too old or too young  
 to care for themselves.

Some were orphans whose parents  
 were victims to the part rage of  
 the tornado. There was a large iron  
 cross about a hundred feet from the  
 edge of the smoulder and even at distance  
 it has been melted by the terrific  
 heat. Only the bare of the masonry  
 on which the cross stood and the  
 lower part of the foot of the cross  
 can be seen.

The whole spot near the smoulder  
 is strangely charged with electricity  
 which became so violent that we  
 were obliged to retreat.

Despite the work of a special com-  
 mission composed of dozens of citizens  
 headed by the mayor of Gary of  
 Indiana which was seeking to check  
 the wide spread alarm, because of  
 so much smoke and various  
 fires reaching there and to subdue  
 the panic 1000 more families left  
 Gary yesterday all going to Rockford  
 Ill.

Many strove to get on the Limited  
 or express but only those able  
 to pay train fare were taken.  
 Thousands of poor & poor refugees  
 prayed, starved and pleaded in vain  
 to be allowed aboard these fast  
 trains but the conductor to them  
 the limited were not refugee trains  
 and they had to pay to ride them.

Aug 1  
 Page  
 41  
 Cont.  
 1st.

2685 and because there was no room because of so many praying of the praying passengers. They would be allowed on however if some of the passengers were for human relations.

Yet the strain to which these poor helpless refugees were constantly exposed was driving many to despair and even insanity or stark raving mad.

None however were destitute or facing hunger or starvation. They only wanted to get away from all that suffocating smoke, fumes and heat.

As an extra precaution the Illinois Governor ordered the electric lights extinguished in both Gary and Chicago and towns westward at all times for fear of attracting the unusually strange electric fire from the nearest north side of the two big smoulders.

Fresh lesions continually shook the nervous population of all the sorely tried cities northward. The panic of the previous day had not subsided because of the smog and smoke darkened skies and the strange color of the smoke and the multitude of the semi-crazed citizens were still rushing up and down the streets and up and down the beaches of the Lake and along the ship landing places in a useless lookout for safe vessels to bear them away from all the smoke, smog and unnatural "hot weather" when a bright glow appeared far southward in the direction of the

Jeff mink

This paper  
noted 19

Telephone  
→ fur

smoulders. To be seen that 2686 far shows how bright the glare of the smoulders was. The effect of this new evidence that it seemed the two big cities were being rapidly rendered unfit for human habitation upon the people weak with constant strain and mentally unbalanced for the time was extraordinary.

Many appeared to drive completely insane muttering and moaning and wandering about moaning weeping and crying out in a heart breaking monotone.

The pessimistic conclusion of the Illinois American mission to Northern Illinois increased the pressure brought to bear on the Mayors of these three large cities in order to induce them to take decisive steps for the evacuation of the cities.

The Governor of Illinois of his instructions ordering local facilities to be placed at the disposal of persons desiring to leave were insufficient to satisfy the advocates of evacuation, who insisted that the Illinois Government should forcibly remove every man woman and child from a danger likely to culminate in disaster at any moment.

And here after all trains no matter what they limited local or what are to take on refugees free or pay or suffer a drastic penalty. According to figures published by big city papers nearly 200,000 left Gary Indiana within a day producing the greatest disorganization in the affairs of the city. Yet who wants to be so suffocated by all that smoke fumes

2687 A local train came from their nearest homes the in-  
habitants ran towards the train  
finally it was so crowded it  
could take in no more. Some  
did not wait to see what was  
happening but hurried off in the  
direction of an incoming freight  
train.

Others who still could get no trains  
turned involuntarily to the churches  
asking God for protection from the  
smoke to pray for preservation  
from the smoke and heat dangers  
that that threatened them.

This on was done great  
numbers went into the churches  
and fell upon their knees, but  
by the far the greater number  
caught that local and the freight  
trains without daring to look  
towards the south.

The priests of the church told  
them that trains can't come as soon  
as they wished and that they should  
pray for preservation until the  
trains would come, giving encour-  
agement to those whom they  
regarded as their children.

Egyptian darkness it is said en-  
veloped Chicago, Gary and as far as  
Rockford at late evening. While  
evening worshippers were returning  
from church at 8:30 P.M. yes-  
terday, an alarming luminous  
cloud suddenly ascended many  
miles high in the direction of  
the smoulder and drifted sluggishly  
to the northeast. The inhabitants  
were still frenzied with fear  
at the time of this fiery cloud  
They ran through the streets

in panic crying and praying 2688  
for ~~preservation~~ preservation from  
another calamity they feared was com-  
ing. This strange phenomenon could  
never be explained. How we desperately  
longed for rain. The heat and dryness  
were unprecendented. Many cursed God for  
the - because of the lack of rain since  
the last rain at the time of the Eater  
brown tornado.

There is no hope for the resus-  
citation of the burned over districts  
for years to come. The continuous  
agitation and spread of the smoulder,  
and the absence of Godly ~~needed~~  
needed rain caused the recruits  
of the affected region to look like  
portions of the desert of Sahara with  
dry wheat on it.

In the ~~the~~ three large cities all  
business was suspended the streets  
were now empty and every one  
was still terror stricken. The feeling  
of suspense was painful. People who  
were more calm and less terrified  
passed their time gazing at the  
sky and at the distant glow caused  
by the smoulders.

Some were crying however pray-  
ing and quite a great number  
trying to ring the Salve Regina.  
This is indeed a horrible disaster  
and one which we may well pray  
not to see duplicated. Science how-  
ever has no means of knowing  
that it may not occur again,  
and it sure would not do so with-  
out the work of the won-  
derful of all the assaults  
I came across some news paper which

Throp

Parson  
1st Friend

many  
of the  
habits

26-2689 one of the men had brought from So. Ball. 7:1 had a long description of the fire house of North Central 7:1 read:

"What is possibly the greatest type of disaster of any fire calamity of its class in this kind of calamities in Illinois since the Chicago fire and others which came since the United States came into existence ending up to this year, occurred in the North Central part of Ill. after the Chester tornado horror at Chester 13 Nov. 1897, a sixty miles south of the city of Chicago.

At about eight o'clock in the evening almost in the twinkling of an eye four excruciating and also explainable moments set this big fire to revenge themselves on a farmer who won the gold one of their number lost. In a two day terrific conflagration the fire spread 70 or more miles of farm wheat and grain country and wiped all that off the map. When the second main fire was checked near two runners, one the Kan-hakee the fire not only devastated the farm country for 20 many miles and a dozen or more towns were burned because of the far reaching heat but they left behind them by two enormous hotter smoulders.

His overwhelmed more country side and is spreading. No one can fight there as they did the other fires at the greatest risk and sacrifice. Even a dozen or more of upland hurnels is being overwhelmed by the upward deluge

of over,whelming far reaching 2690 heat or wrecked by other strange and mysterious phenomena attending the explainable smoulder. Several hundreds of the fire fighters had been somewhat burned by the heat of the second conflagration others prostrated and scores killed by fire trapping them and also by explosions of scattered munitions as they fought the first fires fire and the long roll of disaster included the destruction of houses and cattle killed by heat prostration.

takes his victim on one morning in the morning

seen as sep. by late death

All these farm strange to say had nothing but wheat grain barley and so forth no low crops. That is why there was such a fire. A small party unknown to Mr. Darger the main leader of the fire fighters, was organized to visit the scene.

As the travelers approached the western smoulders they were told by men there to go back for their coats for for more than five hundred miles near to it their clothes would go up in flames from the far reaching heat from that far.

This report greatly puzzled the party but plainly they observed this was true.

Without Mr. Darger's knowledge an ascent was made up the back of the Wicker Castle hill on the south and feet high (it was 2250 feet) so as to obtain a clear view of the immense smoulders and of all the country fields which had been overwhelmed by the two main conflagrations. The only on reaching the end of the ascent was the party brought face to face with the two smoulders.



2692 They had reported that as  
day they could see  
nothing at all but a country  
wide sea of rolling smoke. Its  
condensing the last rise to the top  
near the unker castle signs of  
the smouldering horror grew in  
number and intensity.

The Chicago Tribune correspon-  
dent who was one of the party  
wrote.

Even as far as the hill with that  
strange unker castle like building  
on it fetid smoke vapors tried to  
showd it emanating from the smoulder  
where even to here the heat was  
fierce and almost unbearable as we  
were east of it.

The whole country side wore the  
look of having been withered by  
some fierce and baleful blast of  
far reaching heat. A few minutes  
further and we gained the crest  
right near the strange unker like  
building and now for the first time  
looked forth upon the red night  
we came to see.

I hardly know which to even  
try to pronounce the more aston-  
ishing the prospect that now opened  
before our eyes or the suddenness  
with which it burst upon us.

To the former no more fitting  
phrase perhaps can be applied than  
that of absolute unredeemed desolation  
so intense so sad so horrible  
yet awe inspiring and so awfully  
bewildering that I despair of even  
trying to describe it adequately  
in detail. The smoke cloud  
rose in a surge wave as far as

ign

in profusion

"

dark

looked like  
dark

before

central.

1.

at full moon

1.

as the eye could see from 2693  
west to east the lower column seeming  
to spread and roll swiftly forward  
on the southwesterly strong breeze. This  
accounts for the smoked out cities and  
town and northern country side.

On our right a little below us  
to the east of us rose the smoke  
to an unestimable height.

From some unknown reason or cause  
at the rear of the the west smoulder  
edge great clouds of rolling steam  
rose ceaselessly and angrily and with  
loud hissing and now and then assailed  
us with a hellish odor.

Now and then we could see sheets  
of low flame roll with the cloud of  
smoke.

To our eyes the territory denuded by  
the two great conflagrations seemed to  
cover an width of more than sixty  
miles. This however can only be  
rough conjecture. Equally vague must  
be all present attempts to determine  
the volume of the immense volume  
of the smoke when it seems to  
be sixty miles long and fifty  
or probably sixty miles wide.  
How far could it travel far north  
ward.

Yet if we assume as a very mod-  
erate calculation that the mean  
height of this enormous smoke cloud  
covering such a long and wide  
area at one time is not less than  
twenty times as high as the cloud  
of the Kilauea, most violent of its  
eruption. So we find the work of  
achieved by this great sea of  
smoulder was the result of the  
action action of three four friends.

only reference  
to local, date

as. N.Y. Ill.

Primary  
source

Reckon -  
Absolute

AID IN FAC

primary  
effect  
see



2694 The real figure of the size and height of this immense smoke cloud is probably very much greater than supposed even the description beyond the earlier smoulder and the mighty extent of it which covers all this part of Tellico is absolutely incredible.

All the way to the Kanabhee river across the wheat fields choking up even the small streams running through them and stretching westward almost dangerously near the city of To Balle thirty or more miles from Oriskany is sweeping a vast hellish sheet of smouldering fire, hotter than the conflagration and obliterating all that vast landscape.

Neither living thing nor any sign of life could be discerned over the whole expanse, all was diabolically silent and solitary, although most of the fighting men were spared, a few were lost their lives when trapped while fighting the second big fire in a manner which shows the extraordinary speed of the flames with which the fire trapped them, especially those too close and fighting it with daredevil recklessness which is all against the safety law.

It is said when the flames came too close the fighters fled panic stricken through the still unburned fields making their way by paths not well known to them. Though they were not actually overtaken by the fire, a minute

1170 1/2

shut.

loss in

- Felix

cont

on combat.

8

lighter

Prepared  
See  
Parent's  
is in  
before  
the  
prop. also

shut, brown

any more  
e.g.

the pure  
surface

later smoke engulfed them. 2695-  
Blinded by this and dazed by the almost smothering heat and other horrors of the scene their steps probable also their senses failed them, Overwhelmed by the ringing heat they would have faced a fate more horrible than in Sodom had not other ranks of men come to their aid and covered their retreat.

Two men of very high rank were seriously burned. John Maxwell, Ruggado, and Daniel Paul Jones, sure leaders were killed and hundreds hospitalized.

Who is blamed and convicted for this horror. Four friends who started all this execrable horror, they did receive life sentence at Sing Sing Penitentiary at <sup>honor</sup> labor. That is too good for them, they should have been slowly burned at the stake? really believe they should.

The people of cities or towns fled and are still fleeing from the awful choking smoke storm and on their way spent nights and days of terror? another of the party said:-

"From this great smouldering inferno spread upward blizzards like columns of sparks rolling, rushing upward and spreading, high bearing in the upward current of hot air large flaming embers that seemed to make the smoke clouds foam fiery the smouldering itself ringing and hissing every where throughout its length like a fire storm with a power and fury perfect and undiminished."

2696 To me I call this 12, 1705 -  
ulder in size had and some  
enormous quantity the greatest fire  
in all world history the fire  
is being estimated as of a greater  
power than thirty forest fires all  
put together in one.

The Catholics of many places  
having been alarmed very greatly  
alarmed by an unworled glow towards  
the south had devoted hours upon  
hours to carry in processions  
through their streets the images  
and relics of their saints, of the  
Blessed Virgin and crucifixes  
in the hope of appeasing Divine  
Wrath yet seemed sadly  
in vain and it appeared that  
they were doomed to learn by  
experience that their saints were  
not for some reason answering  
their prayer for the sending of  
the smoulder and the awful red  
smoke harm.

A writer whose correspondence  
I've read also gave a short  
yet vivid account of the catastrophe.

He wrote  
"It is not given to  
all men to look on the face  
of this kind of destroyer and face  
its terrifying heat a thousand  
yards or more away and yet  
live but Heaven knows its little  
to say that the thousands of  
strong brave men who fought  
the terrific two conflagrations  
and who shared the experience  
of those awful nights and  
days will carry with them  
the recollection of the long fierce

fire fire fighting for 46 2697  
hours to their day. None expected to  
overcome the first ~~first~~ first con-  
flagration until I got the counter-  
fire. Among the towns folk where  
the second conflagration got speedy  
headway despite what the fighters  
tried to check it, a sudden rush  
was simultaneously made for  
the open air or from the threatened  
towns but before the door was  
reached all needed together to the wall  
and stopped feeling that hope was vain  
they couldn't take the parching heat  
coming at them,

To them it was only a question  
of death because of the far reaching  
heat to be overcome by smoke and  
deadly fumes from the burning wheat  
fields or prostrated by the heat.

Outside there arose the shrieks  
the cries of pain and fear the  
prayers and wailing of terrified women  
and children commingling with  
the hoarse shout, curses, prayers  
and blasphemies of men.

Out in the streets the air  
was filled with smoke fog through  
which the street lights flickered  
very dimly.

On every side were hurrying  
farms of men women and also  
children bare headed partly dressed  
many of whom were crazed with  
fear and excitement. Here a  
woman is supported half fainting  
on the arm of her husband who  
vainly strives to soothe her.

There is  
e.g. @ Borne  
@ New  
to a  
his

Don. add. co  
exam. text  
→ slides  
as one dis-  
tinction page

2698 while he carries her to the open space in the street corner were present safely seems assured there lies a woman on the pavement with upturned face and outstretched limbs and the crowd passes her by not pausing to see whether she be alive or dead.

A sudden light flares through a window overlooking the street on the edge of the town facing the direction of the hellish conflagration, it becomes momentarily brighter and the ever ery of the distant heat has set that hour long fire resounds from the heat suffering multitude,

A rush is made towards the spot a man is seen through the flames trying to escape but at this moment some where southward and overheard as far as the conflagration is heard a low ominous roll which is too well known to be at mistake.

It was loud but not near it was explosion of scattered merriment among the conflagrations flames. It shook the tallest buildings showers of window glass came down upon the sidewalk and people below cutting scores and the mysterious vibrations rattle and roll along with the concussion in the air, like some infernal drumbeat summoning them to die.

The reason the second awful

conflagration could not be 2699 whipped as the wind stayed always on one direction and there was no chance to counter fire.

Again I have to say this is one of the most awful tragedies of all history.

It is a smoulder horror so terrible that no words can adequately describe its intensity. No one of my men can get within a hundred thousand feet near to fight it.

The ridge or sea of debris miles large ranging from twenty to thirty feet high was burning fiercer than ever. Beneath this long wide ridge where had been thrown all sorts of broken furniture mattresses and other ruined merchandise was a hellish inferno.

Persons who viewed this appalling debris conflagration safely declare its horrors to be far beyond the power of words to narrate.

This burning wreckage was a tangled mass of shattered houses and trees and other debris packed packed far and high by many farmers and their hired hands or elder children in inextricable tightness and confusion packed to solidities by the way they throw them there to clear their fields of the debris strewn far and wide by the chester brown maelstrom of the air.

Mingled with the large mass was all sorts of totally ruined house-hold goods and other property and all sorts of bedding material. It proved absolutely impossible to separate the confused

which is  
money-

2700 heap. Attempts to dynamite it before the fire were of no avail. All the farmers in that this location were called to a meeting in the municipal building in La Salle and severely reprimanded for piling the debris there especially the way they threw the stuff.

They were told they are responsible indirectly for the terrible debris fire. The terror caused by this debris fire is too great for any human fortitude too vast for human conception. Its heat is so terrible it also cannot be approached within a mile.

Explosions beyond conception occurred among the burning wreckage. From the blasts the strongest houses in Morris, La Salle, La Salle and Moline were caused to vibrate to their foundations and the surface of the very earth trembled from from the violence of these munition explosions.

No thunder was at any time heard had the cannon of a thousand thousand contending armies been discharged or the fulmination of the most tremendous thunder claps that rattled through the air the sound could not have been distinguished amid the roar of these mighty explosions. We correspondents believe if it was not for these explosions which scattered blazing wreckage far and wide the first big fire would not have gained such headway.

Far away at the time of the explosions especially the big 2701 yet one of all could be heard the shriek of the terrified people in their towns, the cries exclamation curses and blaspheming of the terrified inhabitants of Morris and La Salle and howling and barking dogs were clearly heard some distance away, and awakened the mind to a distressing apprehension of the havoc and carnage among the nearest fighting men which had been caused by the munition blasts amidst the burning wreckage.

Many persons attempted to get near enough to fight this fire also but they could not face the heat which was beyond all comprehension. The fog all around of smoke made respiration hard labor. All eyes at a safe distance watched the debris fire to them the grandest and most awe inspiring sight ever witnessed by all men.

There also was an inner column of fire that reached perpendicularly into the air. All about it was a funnel shaped mass of sparks and fire gas that could be only penetrated by the eye when the flames burned brightest. The spectacle was appalling and beyond description.

Some of the recent munition explosions were so heavy that it had seemed as if the whole country side would be shaken off its foundations.

Appel to  
-Kasper  
-Mason  
-Parr  
-V

Compulsion

points to  
-Kasper  
-Mason  
-Parr  
-V

Proper V  
-V

2702 Yet for this great setting  
wonderful. The majestic column  
of smoke only black and other  
columns reached very high sky-  
ward the lower clouds spreading  
forward on the southwesterly breezes  
like from the smoulders.

The flames appeared so fierce  
the wreckage looked like a vast  
volcano vomiting incandescent  
matter that gave forth strange  
prismatic lights as it rose high  
in the air.

Great waves of fire seemed to  
hedge about the burning wreck-  
age. We believe the huge  
column of smoke, no black  
that it had the appearance of  
ebony continually arose to a  
height estimated by us to  
be eight miles from the  
burning wreckage.

The cloud had mushroomed  
at the top spreading out into  
dense clouds to almost living on  
night at day time over a wide  
territory. The atmosphere was so  
laden with smoke smog that  
life was made almost im-  
possible any where within a mile  
of this vast debris infernal.

hell  
The entire district around this  
debris inferno is a smoking  
incinerated ruin. All wheat near  
here had changed into a part of  
the vast smoulders three to four  
feet deep. Every thing growing had  
disappeared into smoulders.  
All vegetation had disappeared. Not  
a sprig of green was to be  
seen anywhere. Live farm stock

at my school  
to approve  
coast -  
(parker)

appeal to S.C.

and

d, - discuss

also important

also Johnson

also!

had died farm houses had  
unwashed, small streams were 2703  
dry and in their beds lay smoul-  
dering embers. The recent explosion  
among the debris were heard for  
for nearly a hundred miles  
through the country.

All near by cattle and other farm  
animals were dead because of smoke  
killing heat and lack of water.

Many of the refugees who were  
brought to St. Gall and Molins  
were almost dying of thirst all  
of these poor people had been  
thirty six hours without a drop of  
water.

Yet there fortunately was no  
scarcity of food. From the wreckage  
thirty four explosions of the  
most terrible force had occurred.  
The last the worse of all at the  
time of the last one flames shot  
skyward to a thousand feet from  
this point came a most mighty  
and indescribable roar and an  
enormous column of smoke rose  
high in the air. This explosion  
swept away portions of all roads  
nearest the burning wreckage scat-  
tered burning wreckage everywhere  
so that it set new wood field  
fires. The air was so filled with  
the smoke of the smoke of the  
fire and explosion that it was  
barely possible to breathe in the  
near by cities and town.

At times it seemed as if  
suffocation must be the fate  
of all who could not be taken  
on board. The refugee trains  
at night the blazing  
wreckage had the appearance of

had not 2)  
had pay. At  
As able ability

had not 1)  
Pat. Feb. 12

don. had 1)

Voluntary

- permission  
Boh

- request on

- no expenses  
referred

- mod. only  
approved

- abstract do

- rel. a case

(one or other  
compulsory

2704 of a most gigantic blast furnace at which great forces were working. 7 flames shot up - wings on very high road wheels that lighted up the whole territory, and even from a far distance the heat was most terrific.

The atmosphere everywhere was smogged, life too close was absolutely unbearable and the suffering of the refugees who crowded to streams into So Falls was extreme. The last explosion which did not come that time from the wreckage but from the fields near it was a most awful devastating and far reaching cataclysm being 7 believed revealed only by the explosion of Mt. Knakatau in the Straits of Lunda.

In So Falls many buildings were wrecked by the ground and earth concussion and run right or severe was wrought along the entire stretch of territory from So Falls to Kankakee.

Moline So Falls and Moline and Ottawa they remain sufferers, no lives lost but hundreds and scores of hundreds were injured more or less and forty thousand homeless in the four town combined.

The news of all this most overwhelming disaster came as a shock to people everywhere. Bullerton boards in all cities and towns were absolutely

cool

red

rust

not only  
fire.

substance.

by which

as well

defined

it.

monstrously

→ emptying

1

out.

Multi phar:

1) Use of the property

2) close co

3) attack co

4) Reg. that

inquiries

had 5/

BARRONS

on light

much

- school

- study

and

had 6)

- first

Not

surrounded by eager crowds 2708 to obtain the latest reports - many who had friends in the stricken State of Illinois were kept in suspense respecting their fate. With bated breath was the calamity the most terrible calamity on record talked about in every part of our country and in every part of our country committees of relief are being now formed.

The magnitude of the continuing fire disaster grew from day to day since its beginning four days ago.

Every fresh report added to the intelligence already received and it was made clear many thousands of the fighters even dare not go within two miles of the smouldering to fight it because of its far reaching heat.

No such appalling disaster distinguished by the suddenness of the blow the number of fire fighters defeated fighting the second big conflagration the completeness of the fiery desolation has ever come to the civilized world with such overwhelming and appalling force.

Only the destruction of the city of Pompeii is equalled to this greatest fire of modern times. And started by two four most excruciatingly explicable flames.

more than fifty thousand fighters were defeated by the second big fire with some killed many burned more or less prostrated by the heat and overcome by smoke. Mrs Henry Daggan.

2707 was their main leader  
He lost three highest leaders  
by their being Journal severely  
and hospitalized, all accounts  
agree that only two and three  
quarters of a day were required  
to overwhelm this large country  
tract with fire consuming the  
whole population of wheat fields  
all the way east to the wide  
Kankakee river.

The first reports of the disaster  
were too incredible to be at all  
believed. Many coming from the  
train confirmed the reports that  
eighty miles of leased territory  
were all a smoulder that for some  
reason wouldn't burn out, that  
all that territory of wheat was  
destroyed by the conflagration and  
smoulders.

All that territory is wrapped in  
smouldering flames. It is be-  
lieved that not a single fight-  
er can get within two miles  
of it so fierce is the heat.

Another correspondent wrote.

"The extent of the continual  
catastrophe cannot be imagined.  
Mr. Dargen best leader I recall  
Jones is seriously injured  
and burned. So is. Ruggado and  
Reddy. A number of his officers  
and other men are dead. Nearly  
every member of Jones' fighters  
are burned, injured heat  
prostrated, smoke over come or  
are severely exhausted.  
A number of officials arrived  
near the smoulder at 3  
o'clock in the afternoon on the

second day after it formed. 2720  
It was reported they had to flee  
from the territory a half hour  
later in consequence of the trouble  
for reaching heat and envelop-  
ing smoke from the smoulder.  
Telegraph offices at So. LaSalle  
reported that twenty thousand  
fire fighters equipped with every  
type of fire fighting tools could  
not get near it.  
All the fields for 90 miles  
has been destroyed by an immense  
mass or conflagration of fires  
which burned on all the way to  
the Kankakee river. An entire  
population of fire fighters could  
not head it off no matter how  
most desperately and savagely  
they fought it.

All the many magnificent my-  
riads of fields have been des-  
troyed by fire. The smoulder  
continues and spreads.

The Mayor of So. LaSalle received  
a telegram from Morris sent  
by a detachment of investigators  
announcing that they had tried  
to reach what had been Jane-  
ville but even there found the  
heat so fierce from the smoulder  
and the region so enveloped in  
smoke that they could not get  
within a mile of the site of  
Janeville or Chesterchire also which  
was wiped out by the conflag-  
ration. It is said the tornado  
deluge of Chesterchire is still  
burning fiercely and smoking  
like a big volcanic crater. It is

2711 heat and intensity is twenty times worse than the distant wreckage pile fire and the smoke is a cloud twenty miles long and six wide. Chesterhire caught from the horrid heat of the first main conflagration. He was informed that many thousands of the bravest even dare devil reckless fighters would not go there and even could not be compelled to under any conditions or penalties. This type of city fire like the conflagration in Chicago is one of the most destructive the world has ever seen. What ever buildings the tornado left partially standing and all the tangled wreckage strewn by the twist is a fierce inferno of fire. The flames from Chesterhire is said to be seen at night forty miles distant. Another person reported that last evening he and others attempted to force their way with extra equipment near to the smoulder but was with his brave men compelled to give up the attempt owing to the intense heat and smoke which hangs in a dense cloud all over the territory. He did not get close enough to see how glare there was. Nothing new concerning the original smoulder has yet been learned.

ends, rel.

inter.

ry as

scular  
shell & heresets  
itself up & pags  
what it had to  
rel.

1) AX-supply bldg

1) plans ppls

1) P's property

1) making

2

Cons. fabrics

comfy of  
bl & ac induct

growth of  
formulation  
of ppls

5

It has been known that 2712 nineteen small towns were in the territory all were destroyed save Morris which was further away. One could have escaped had no explosions occurred. The strikes as far as Milwaukee is heavily overcast with the smoke. The smoke is rising in larger column than twenty big forest fires in one could produce and smoke smog fills the air all over the country side for unknown number of miles.

Some places it is said it is as dark as midnight, and as two miles away from the smoulder the heat is absolutely unbearable.

All hills including Wicher Castle hill are covered with refugees driven from their towns because of unsurpassing heat and smoke to the number of ten thousand, who are being taken away to places of refuge gradually.

In the meantime provisions are being conveyed to them. The smoulder disaster surpasses all that imagination can conceive. It is reported that one high leader of the dangerous men and the commander of the troops are dead. Many are burned and hospitalized. Four local train loaded with smoke driven refugees from various towns arrived at Chicago in a pitiable condition. They reported that six other locals left that district at the same time. It is not known what became of them.



27/3 Advice received at Gary  
diana from Morris said that  
train arriving at Moline re-  
ported that many persons were  
overcome by smoke and heat  
heat while board boarding the  
train many were fearfully  
burned by being a hundred  
yards from the smoulder bill-  
ing heat and nine died while  
on their way to the hospital at  
Chester Brown.

The burning of the smoulder  
continues. It is progressing  
north and northeastward twenty  
feet a day. The whole  
northern region is now a most  
vast fire sea and smoke  
denuded of all vegetation. Many  
settlements are destroyed by the very  
far reaching heat. Definite  
news however is lacking.

Great distress prevails even  
among the tornado victims at  
Chester Brown where there are so  
many tornado injured. They  
can't bear the far reaching  
heat and want to get away. It  
is believed that about 1500  
persons there suffer heat pro-  
stration and five hundred are  
near death at Chester Brown.

This number is greatly increas-  
ing. The majority of the heat  
prostrated persons are elderly men  
and women.

The children though suffering  
from it seemed to stand it  
better than the grown up  
Charles Brown is only 1000 feet  
from the smoulder and its

tornado wreckage is in danger - 27/4  
ger. It was reported that Morris  
was threatened a freight train is on  
the way to Moline with stores for  
the relief of the sufferers who fled  
there from the smoke. Great tension is  
prevailing everywhere.

Throughout a night ago the heat in  
the vicinity of Morris and also at  
Ottawa from the edge of the smoulder  
was so intense and the smothering  
smoke so unrelenting that it is  
impossible to approach the small  
villages at any time.

As midnight approached  
a three coach local after a heroic  
battle with the heat suffocation and  
suffocating fumes from the smoulder  
succeeded in making a  
dash towards Morris, nearing the en-  
dangered town close enough to enable  
the conductor porter fireman and  
engineer to take on 135 refugees from  
the smoky region all of whom were  
burned or mutilated by the far  
reaching heat.

All this territory is an absolute  
flaming waste.

The still remaining remaining  
inhabitants of Ottawa are panic  
stricken because of heat and smoke  
and intense darkness. 850 refugees  
were brought to Joliet from there  
by a local who were nearly  
roasted to death though Ottawa is  
only 10 miles from the edge  
of the smoulder.

The great cloud of smoke can  
be seen as far as Moline rais-  
ing majestically many miles high.

2715 and expanding into wonderful shapes resembling most enormous cauliflower, gigantic wheels, beautiful blower forms, great thunder clouds all streaked up and down and cross-wise with wind intermittent glow from the fiery emoulders below aweing the beholder and impressing the mind with fear. The great physical changes have taken place in the neighborhood because of the recent conflagrations and the emoulders several districts have not been heard from and the scene of the continuing disaster is absolutely unapproachable.

Every hour brings sudden news, nurses and doctors are overwork, all the country people of all religions are crowding the church praying for rain to quench the sea of smouldering fires.

All business in various cities are being suspended because of the smoke and unnaturally out of season extreme hot weather and smoke darkened skies. The burning of Charleston and the awfully large wreckage window adds immensely to the smoke.

The public mind, every where, is still unsettled, fearing much further disaster. Countless number of people of all ages are weeping and sending the poor friends who are really responsible for this thing, long has to be closely guarded for fear the enraged citizen will break into the prison drag out the four and burn them at the stake. There is terrible unbelievable excitement there. Even

Inherent part  
to all in  
system - H  
power nation  
disarmament  
so what?

C) all  
But what is  
in making for  
the school

C) pay  
Fund is  
plentiful

at burning Charleston 2716  
all types of searching searching is being done. It is impossible to get within a thousand yards of this new conflagration the search is being hindered by the heat of the fire and the very investigators are in great danger. One of the great misfortunes arises from the fact that the storehouses of provisions of all kinds partly ruined by the cyclone have been swept out of existence by this dreadful fire.

Good thing there is plenty of food and provisions brought by the freight even though many places are overrun by smoke refugees. Yet there is no danger of the refugees going hungry. This awful outbreak of fire is now a scene so appalling that it is destined to be remembered throughout the ages.

The explosion during the main conflagration by munitions scattered here and there, touched off by the fire were many and unusual. After seven preliminary explosions among the wreckage there was a freight full explosion which tore away a large part of the field and scattered clouds of flaming grain to the winds setting new fires to add to the main conflagration all over.

In that final effort with records of previous explosions anywhere on this earth were completely broken. The noise was plainly heard at Chicago where houses trembled and windows rattled as if heavy cannon were being discharged. Indeed the ~~thunder~~ ~~thunder~~

2717. The thunders of this great murrel-  
guard explosion attracted the coast  
at Milwaukee near 150 miles  
away from the conflagration.

Let us say for example "the  
correspondent continues" that this ex-  
plosion occurred at Rock Island as very  
resonant as that from where it occurred  
in that part of the field.

It would certainly startle not a  
little the inhabitants of all northern  
Illinois far and wide.

The ears of dwellers in the  
neighboring states had received a  
considerable shock. The sonorous  
waves would or did roll over "to the  
shores of the great lake Michigan  
they were heard as far as the  
battered Rock region. St. Louis would  
or was not too far to the south  
nor Milwaukee too remote to the  
north.

Eight tons of explosives must  
have went off all at one time.  
Evidence of the smoke cloud from  
the explosion were seen in the  
country and elsewhere. The newspapers  
are full of accounts of strange  
appearances in the heavens.

These came from Omaha and  
other places. All had the same  
tail to tell. All these phenomena  
were due from the smoke of  
the explosion and these three  
giant conflagrations. It was the  
next day after this mighty  
blast that the marvellous  
series of electrical  
phenomena connected with the  
great explosion began to be

2718  
displayed as far even as  
St. Louis, when it was that the glory  
of the ordinary sunsets was  
enchanced by a splendor which will  
dwell in the memory of all those  
who are being permitted to see it.  
The smoke for all this honor is  
producing this.

Many who witnessed the great cloud  
from the explosion of such appalling  
violence said to news reporters that  
the cloud rose seven miles up.

The cloud was also viewed by  
many from a distance of thirty-five  
miles. They spoke of the cloud looking  
like an immense wall with ball-like  
upward rushes of flame and like fiery  
serpents rushing through the air.

This decision  
fades pupils  
their rights  
elect

also this dark wall resembled  
a blood red curtain mingled with  
black and white with the edges of all  
shades of yellow the whole of the  
shape of a volcanic cloud with  
fiery balls of flame.

ignus  
lodum  
culture

Many also said that during  
the terrible explosion reports came  
of them seeing all near by  
telephone poles trees and even church  
steeple aglow for ten seconds with  
strange electric fire.

just meaning

Such effects seem to be easily  
explained when we consider how  
enormous must be the friction  
going on in the heated air of the  
conflagration and through the unusual  
clash against each other of myriads  
of particles of explosion torred  
dust, flaming wheat during section  
and in their scattered descent it is

2219 evident that such friction is adequate to produce a sudden short electric disturbance in the surrounding atmosphere. The rush upward of the cloud of the awful explosion also contributed to these disturbances.

Compasses of iron weather departments were disturbed, and yet the fall of blaring wheat tossed high by the blast and also the ground dust and scattered particles of the munition explosives possibly had some share in creating these perturbations.

It is being said that so great is the mass of smoke that profound darkness which has already lasted many hours (from the smoulders) extending even to one hundred and fifty miles northwest from the smoulder or focus of the rising smoke.

There is being the record that it is pitch dark at Joliet and nearly so at Chicago and Gary. So great so they say was the explosive force of the munition explosion that the cloud of smoke was blown to eight thousand or more feet. Another estimate gives the enormous altitude of seven thousand feet to which the smoke cloud had been blown. Tons of burning wheat had been scattered far and wide within a circle of nine or more thousand yards.

It was during this blast that a number of the Union men

Now Count  
equation  
opened into  
consideration  
est. of rel.

near by were killed. The number is not known, but it is said to be 2000. The scattered burning set new fires which soon merged with the main conflagration.

The coarser sheaf of burning wheat fell over a known area equal to 255,170 square feet. As I said before, added the correspondent "whether you believe it or not another distinguishing feature of the explosion of munition was the magnitude and range of the sounds of this mighty explosion."

Henry Sloyds Insurance agent at Rock Island nearly a hundred miles away reported that at that time the report and concussion were simply very deafening. The explosion was heard not only all over the northern part of Illinois but over a yet much wider area.

Even people as far Rockford and also Chicago, Gary Indiana heard the awful sounds. At Chicago all the people were so alarmed that the Mayor sent a train load of delegates to seek the cause of the disturbance. People hearing the cannon crash sound as far as Rockford supposed there was a big train crash somewhere near by and investigating train loads of persons put off for what proved to be a futile and hopeless search.

At that time also the people of Bloomington were amazed by what they thought was the blinding of a big rock, a sound which lasted a few seconds.

The time and other circumstances

2721 show that here and again the terrible explosion was heard, this time also at Lincoln Illinois, and yet there was trustworthy evidence that the sound was heard over greater distances. At Springfield people heard the extraordinary and awful sound.

Also a number of murdering criminals, it stated their very consciences for having been guilty of a foul murder of a family in their home they fled fearing that such a sound told them of the approach of an supernatural avenging force.

Later so terrified were they by the appearance of the Northern shys that they surrendered themselves up to the police.

At Moline it was imagined that there was a train wreck of some kind and search was accordingly made. But most remarkable of all the Mayor of Springfield made a statement which he said that at 4<sup>th</sup> that afternoon a report was heard coming from the northeast like the distant roar of heavy cannon.

Obviously some time was really needed for the sound to make such a journey. On the basis of the known rate of velocity it must even been heard at as far as Kansas because reports came from there that a mysterious growling sound and concussion broke windows in all the houses of the city.

of the near by cities of

2722 Moline and other many houses were demolished were wrecked the streets and sidewalks were covered with glass from broken glass as if there had been a severe hail storm. Emil Ervin Joliet and Moline reported many windows broken - 2000 houses were badly wrecked on So. 8<sup>th</sup> and all windows had not a piece of glass remaining.

It was reported that many pedestrians were more or less severely cut by falling glass. 300 were injured in their shock wrecked homes and 30 killed. The explosion caused a great air wave also but how far it went is not known.

Aid = possibly  
overlooked

It remains to be said that when that part of the wheat country was visited shortly after the great explosion wonderful changes were noted. The whole northern and eastern part of that section of wheat fields except their main by burning wreckage had vanished.

A hole nearly a mile wide and 170 feet deep was left ground and earth was scattered near and far.

What a tremendous work of destruction this must have been as attested by the fact that large where large acres of wheat and other vegetation had been there is now such a large explosion dug craters. 18 towns of small size are reported leveled to the ground with 1000 killed and 3000 injured. Many of the investigation parties were much come by the terrible heat that

2723 and strong gaseous smoke and the accompanying doctors were kept busy in Chicago and Alton local brought refugees from Monroe and enroute it had encountered a smog of such thick smoke through which it could not all pass.

The train was compelled to go twenty miles out of its course to escape the smoke and reach its destination on another railroad line.

The work of succoring the smoke-driven refugees continues incessantly when the Illinois Central refugee freight train started on its mission of mercy she had to pass through a smog of thick smoke, and within a thousand feet of the overheated fiery smoulders at the <sup>low</sup> <sup>side</sup> of catching fire in order to reach the terror-stricken people of Ottawa.

But she succeeded in bringing to St. Ball 1460 people mainly residents of Ottawa.

Another freight of the Alton succeeded in bringing many persons to St. Chicago through a suffocating smoke haze.

An Alton Local with 16 coaches rescued 1500 persons. The relief committees are distributing to smoke-driven sufferers large quantities of all sorts of food milk wine biscuits and cheese.

Mr. Dangers main assistants Daniel Jones, Ruggeds and Reddy are still in a pitiable condition. Daniel was burned from head face to chest and part of his

2724 women. Ruggeds is still worse. Frank Ben Benson one of the other officers who is also in the tent hospital here severely burned assisted Daniel Jones to the hospital. While this was being done several fighters died shortly after their death four officers succumbed.

Jack Dawson did not sustain serious injuries. Another leader was fatally burned. All the survivors of Daniel Jones' company continue to be broken by the terrible experience through which they had passed.

They should have known it was impossible to fight the second fire.

30 of others burned are not expected to live. Ruggeds says while being drawn back by the fire he experienced a feeling of suffocation which was followed by most intense heat.

Another freight train, of the Rock Island loaded with refugees attempted to pass through a smog of smoke but found it impossible. It meant suffocation to dare try it. It returned and entered the smoke belt again miles out but there was the same result. On the horizon there was nothing to be seen but a smog cloud which was piled up like an enormous wall. It made the belt all was dark.

It again put back and retraced its way northwestward on another route. They finally made it to Quincy where the air was somewhat clearer.

2725 It is said that immense balls of fire also issue from the smoulders and let the whole smoulder is one mass of traveling flame. It is impossible to get even near the burning district by train wagon travel or on foot and still there are no means of estimating the destruction of property.

### Rival to the Infernal regions.

Another correspondent says:-

Many poets poets have set their imaginations to play and other writers in picturing Hell. Even Dante and certain Saints, who claim to have visions of the dreaded regions,

But surely the infernal regions or rather lands and all its flaming and torturing terrors all the unspeakable horrors as they conceived them were not more hideous and appalling than the stories of the experiences of those who most desperately fought, and of all hapless inhabitants upon whom the storms of fire from the two enormous conflagrations and the still more fierce and hot smoulders with all its measureable clouds of dense smoke poured and swept Northern Illinois their flaming and consuming fire storm.

The fact is that the day of final judgment as foretold in the prophetic vision of the pious and Biblical prophets and scriptures could hardly impress

the minds of the most 2726 stupid with more horror than the extinction in over two days and a quarter of the whole country side of most expensive wheat and grain fields scores of towns and woodlands by the spread of these two infernal conflagration sending in two much more dreaded fires the immeasurable smoulders.

It is one of the most impressive events of the age. It is a most overwhelming holocaust that is making civilization after all seem very frail and feeble and completely dwarfs the sense of importance which fills every body man woman or child concerning their relation to the universe.

There is nothing like a sure contemplation of your tornado, hurricanes, your earthquakes, your volcano or your most monstrous conflagration for knocking conceit and vanity out of the human heart and mind.

I also for example the following despatch from Chicago 70 days ago August 13. "This city is already filled with thousands of smoke fleeing refugees from the maddening North section of Illinois and

more are constantly coming in.

yet too we've got smoke smog. Fortunately there is no imminent danger of starvation for the city can easily feed them and free. Yet the smoke

Recd  
Relativ

Historical  
Judicial  
Catholic

2727 smoke fumes who have escaped with their lives and even without injury are dazed and helpless as children. They are absolutely destitute of everything save their few garments on their back.

They didn't hardly stop to take anything with them in order to escape the smoke horror. Yet the food supply, fortunately, is very plentiful. From all points stragglers are making their way here. All the relief expeditions that are constantly going out, bring here all whom they rescue.

Two Chicago and Alton freights have already come in here bringing practically all the inhabitants of Ottawa. The large town of nearly 44000 inhabitants dangerously near the smouldering sea shore which so far escaped destruction of by its far reaching heat.

In addition to these are three at Morris something like 30000 in all. All districts for countless miles about Morris are a desolate flaming smoking fiery waste. Even the whole appearance of the country has been transformed into a vast fiery smouldering sea.

I do believe the destruction of Pompeii and Herculaneum described by Sir Edward-Sydenham in the "Last day of Pompeii" can compare to this horror.

This awful smouldering element

42 which was steadily scattering so deep & murky as far north as wealth Minnesota was now settling into a solid and impenetrable mass from Morris to Joliet and South Chicago. At Morris and Ottawa I see smoulders less even the thickest gloom of night in the open air than the close and blind darkness of some narrow room.

But in proportion as the blackness gathered did the flame of the flaming smoulders increase in the vivid and searching glare.

2728 No was the horrid beauty of the glazes conferred to anyone but the usual flashes of fire darting to and fro as the folds of some mighty fiery serpent now of a lurid and intolerable crimson gushing forth through the columns of smoke far and wide and lighting up the whole cities of Morris and Ottawa from street to street. Then suddenly dying into a sickly pale moon like the fading away slowly of some fiery ghost.

Sometimes the enormous smouldering cloud seemed some how from some unusual cause to break from its solid mass way far up into the sky and lay the smoulders bright glare to assume quaint and vast numbers of human in of monstrous size like ships, striding across the gloom hurtling one upon another and vanishing swiftly into the awful abyss of shades so that to the eyes and fancies



2729 of the affrighted wandering  
smoke. refugees the unsubstantial  
smoke vapors were as the bodily  
forms of most gigantic foes the  
agents of the smoulders terror of  
heat and suffocating death.

The smoke it is said bore  
with it a strong and suffocating  
horrid vapor smoke from the deeply  
smouldering ground peat.

Some times as it is said the  
cities of Morris and Ottawa and  
surrounding country far and wide  
would be come lighted with a most  
intense and lurid glare.

Bright and most gigantic through  
the darkness which closed around it  
like the walls of hell the awful  
smoulder stirred by a sudden  
strong breeze shone a glaring sea  
of fire where the breeze hit it  
the strongest.

The immense sheet of flaming  
smoulder would seem driven in  
two or above the surface there  
would seem to rise monster  
and strange shapes from clouds  
of impenetrable sparks and flaming  
embers each confronting one or  
another as demons contending for  
a lost soul.

There would be of one deep  
orange yellow hue of fiery clouds  
of sparks which would light  
up the whole atmosphere. Far  
and wide but under the rather  
part of the immense cloud it  
would be still dark and shadowed  
save in three places would  
rise up a serpentine and also  
irregular pillar of fire.

2730  
Sometimes orange color  
and then glowing darkly red through  
the profound gloom of their  
upward surging they would rise  
swiftly up as towards the devoted sky.  
Over the broadest there would  
seem to spring craggy and stupendous  
arch like shapes from which as  
from the jaws of hell would gush  
forth the source of sudden horrid  
fire disasters, and also through the  
stilled air was heard the hurrying  
of the burning stuff - darkening for  
one instant the spot where clouds  
of smoke would hide them and  
suffused the next on the lurid  
hues of the smoulder.

Many of the inhabitants fled along  
the streets that at times was very  
and intensely luminous. Sometimes  
suddenly a duller shade would fall  
over the air. Instinctively the panic  
stricken people rushing for a rescue  
train would turn to look to the  
onwards the smoulder and behold  
one of the gigantic cloud shapes  
which was divided would seem  
to rock and waver to and fro  
between a wide blinding upsurging  
sheet or pillar of fire.

At the same instant there would  
gush forth a rolling wall of the  
most blackest smoke rolling on  
over air fields and the two  
cities. Darkness once more would  
wrap them as in a veil.  
These sudden bright frequent  
illuminations the upward burst of  
the flood of the fire and the  
awful clouds of sparks and the  
pincen of fire which I have

2731 already described and the appalling character of the big conflagrations and the two awful implacable smoulders which is writing this part of 7.23.19 is fully confirmed by the details of the calamity as they slowly come to hand will pass into history as the most terrible and disastrous on all record.

Many refugees rushing for the rescue train leading from the city to the stations would be arrested by an immense throng more than half the population of the city trying to be first to board the train in their panic and strong overwhelming desire to get as far away from the smoke as possible.

There were not enough trains to take them all at one time and those who had fled to them got aboard first and those who had to wait for the next train are being so terrified by the agitation and preternatural shrieking of the elements the gasping sounds of the smoulder and

by the sound of the hissing and snarling flames that they had returned to the stations as presenting the less frightful aspect of the two.

The conditions existing among the remaining wheat fields in the districts immediately near the smoulders are as yet unknown, and thousands of smoke refugees may have found safety on the big Wicher Castle hill although in putting themselves

for a time out of reach of 2732 keep they may now be suffering great privations and from heat coming their way. No full account of the two big conflagrations and the smoulders are as yet by intelligent and reliable eye witnesses has yet been fully received, as they are unapproachable, and when such a narrative is available it may materially modify the first main first impressions.

At the best that can be hoped for however the havoc being wrought by the conflagration and smoulders are being so more and more extended and far reaching in its effects that all the sufferers and refugees are entitled to the substantial exhibition of sympathy which will promise to reach them from every quarter of the civilized world.

No person it is stated has yet been able to approach within eight miles of the smoulders and the disaster is now known to be considerably greater than was at first estimated.

The present ~~unmeasured~~ unmeasured of the inhabitants still forced to remain until the refugee trains come is increasing by the continuous agitation of the smoulder and smoke horror.

Owing to the great heat it is still impossible to approach the smoulders from the southwest side even though the breezes are against it from the southwest. Every body through out the nation is crowding churches of all religions praying for the army navy

2733 storms to put out the awful  
smoulders. The inhalation of  
noxious vapors of smoke at the  
many towns north of the smoul-  
ders is increasing the  
spread of sickness there.

Some stock still running are  
very uneasy and at times are almost  
uncontrollable. Cattle low day and  
night & horses neigh. Asses, Donkeys  
and mules Bray, loudly bays  
& scream and yell their woe. Dogs  
howl and seek the company  
of their masters and when driven  
forth they are giving every  
evidence of fear.

Even gophers and other Country  
snakes in great numbers crawl  
away. Gophers, moles and groundhogs  
field mice and squirrels have fled  
the country. Racoon are no more  
seen. Skunks either. Birds have  
ceased singing and left the trees  
near a mile from the awful  
smoulder.

A great fear is upon the land  
and it is still more greatly  
shared by the human inhabitants  
who are impatiently waiting for  
the refugee trains to take them  
far away from this earthly Sodom.

It is strangely reported that  
the delicately suspended magnetic  
needles at all portion of the  
near North eastern and Northwestern  
and straight eastern part of the  
country and geodetic survey ob-  
servatories are being disturbed  
since the beginning of this  
horrible conflagration. From and  
at about the time the catastrophe

was first reported and is 2734  
still reported to be occurring.

The magnetic disturbance began  
at the very beginning of the first  
great conflagration and not at all  
at the time of the munition explosions.  
This did not affect them at all.

The delicate apparatus installed  
at these observatories is so totally  
arranged that they register automati-  
cally by photographic means  
the minute variations in the full  
direction and intensity of the world's  
magnetic force.

It is a more worthy fact that  
not the slightest seismic disturbance  
had been reported at any seismolo-  
gical observatory even from the  
terrific measurable explosion or their  
shocks.

No magnetic effects due to  
eruptions of distant volcanoes  
have ever been recognized at  
magnetic observatories. Purely me-  
chanical variations caused by earthquakes  
have been often registered by the  
delicately poised magnetic  
needles.

The Guatemalan earthquake of April  
18 1902 for instance was recorded  
not only by seismographs at  
various places but also at the  
Cheltenham magnet observatory  
of the Coast survey. The earth-  
quake simply caused a mechanical  
vibration of the magnetic needles  
about their mean position of  
rest and lasted about half  
an hour, where as this

2735 this conflagration was a strange unreliable distinct magnetic effect pulling the needle aside from their usual direction and still doing it. In those some strange magnetic power in the past conflagrations and now these two smaller ones.

### a survivors story of the big explosion

In a tent of the relief camp is one of two fire fighters picked up near the burning wheat field after the blast. The grim irony of fate speaks in him. His given name is Ray Dugan. He was one of the fighters. From him was had his story that has been told of the overwhelming of the wheat fields by the awful explosion.

He is a negro a native or citizen of Missouri. He with many others were fighting desperately the grain field fire but were unable to stop its progress along his fighting front. He can't account why he is, being alive to day.

He begged one of the main leaders to be allowed to fall back as he complained that it was impossible to check the fire but the leader could answer "yes or no", it occurred he said though it seemed almost suicide to continue we held our ground against the fire until darkness

2736 advanced and bury them at a distance of five hundred yards away was a most tremendous explosion. It was as though all the most loudest of all the thunder that ever roared and all the cannon in the whole world had been set off at once.

It was a roar that rent the air and sky and made all the fields of wheat to shiver as though all was alive.

After all I can say again I cannot correctly describe the noise for it left me almost senseless for an instant. The whole sky was rolling black and from the shock the whole distant wreckage pile seemed to fly upon down scattering burning debris.

There was a great upright shaft of flame that must have reached for thousands of feet and could have been seen as though it were night. I could see leaping from the one side of the pillar of fire a great streak of black ground mud and flying sheets of flaming wheat and grain. Hundreds had started running swiftly to the rear at the awful roar.

It seemed only an instant before the mud and cloud of flaming wheat and other debris began to fall a hail in all directions, and also a face to the ground.

A great number of the fleeing men were pelted with

2737 the dirt mud fiery  
wheat or iron fragments and a  
number were killed and hurt.  
There was an awful hissing sound  
as the fiery wheat fell all  
around us, I fell on my face  
knocked down by the shaking  
of the earth by the explosion,  
I could not have lain there  
a moment when I recovered  
my senses.

It was perfectly black all  
around me and the heat was  
like a flame. I thought I had  
died and was in hell, I still  
lay quiet the heat of the  
fire drove me mad.  
I could not stay there, I here  
was no wind or the slightest  
breeze and the air was so  
hot that I could not breathe.  
It was now not so dark  
but the air was full  
of tremendous heat and I almost  
went blind.

I dipped a rag in a water  
bucket and tied it over my  
face. I discovered I had a badly  
fractured and bleeding left  
foot. It had been hit by some-  
thing hard and sharp. I  
made my way on my hands  
and knees towards the railroad  
bed.

I took the rag off my eyes  
and saw that some big stone  
wall had been thrown  
down. I thought I  
was mad. The heat made  
me frantic and I saw that

to plunge into 2738  
the river. I crawled along  
the railroad bed men ran for  
me and carried me to this hospital  
tent on the way I must have  
fainted for I knew nothing  
until I found myself in this  
tent. I don't remember anything  
more of it.

From St. Gall it was learned 2  
days after the smoulder began that  
the descriptions of the ruin being  
wrought by the conflagration and  
the smoulders fell short of the  
reality. The middle of the smoulder  
they report is being the center of  
of most mysterious and curious  
electrical phenomena.

At times the air is cut and even  
ever slashed with strange electrical  
discharges and during the second  
night balls of fire and strangely  
luminous clouds lighted up the  
country for miles.

Many people of Joliet and even  
refugees taken there are being forced  
to quit their city on account of the  
smoke and odor from the gaseous  
emanations from the far distant  
smoulder horns.

It is said that public services  
of all kinds are sadly impeded  
by the heavy tasks that has  
fallen upon the authorities in destri-  
tuting everywhere north and south-  
west and south the smoke and  
heat refugees from the smoulder  
districts, even on the south side  
of the smoulder or also southwest

"Wall"  
become on

instead of  
gobs on  
W. Decis

2139 and south east with the slight breeze towards it no one has been able to approach five miles to it which still shows signs in the increase of the heat over the whole northern and northeastern states even as far as Flint Michigan fresh a peculiar smoke smug which is injurious to the eyes and which contains noxious properties that cause much distress. Asthma sufferers are tortured and with all sorts of nose troubles suffer very exceedingly.

Every body still remaining in Monro, Maawa and other places still further are almost blistering in the terrible heat, and frantic in their impatience for the refugee trains to come and haul them away.

Though there is no danger of starvation for the refugees as there is food aplenty the water famine is causing much distress. Because of this fire disaster many of the former supplies of water has disappeared small lakes and streams have evaporated and in the far north is no more any living water that can be reached. Some distance from the smoulders there is a sufficient or inexhaustible stream of water which can be seen but no man can approach close enough to it to tell whether is fresh or smogged. Because of the awful fire reaching heat it is a great distance from the smoulder covered on horse back riding fifty miles of the stricken

territory with its terrible scenes of devastation and extensive smoulders inferno. I see refugees flocking into nearly towns eastward and they are panic stricken.

The heat reaching burned still living cattle wander in agony on roads or through the fields. Water is scarce and an vast area of country as far as eye can see is all smoke and inferno.

The districts in the eastern rural districts are everywhere suffering.

Hundreds of farm houses and barns a mile away from the smoulders are burned or scorched by the fierce far reaching heat.

We saw horrible scenes in country unpromised hospitals were burned fire fighters were and the nurses being inefficient.

I encountered many fleeing their homes from the smoke smug and its fumes who are in a state of panic. One pleaded to me "Please, please pray for rain. Why is God punishing us so?" Hundreds of the refugees were entering the small country towns many of them without any thing, some not hardly even clothed and only a few carrying their property on their backs or in their arms.

They appear dazed and ill. It is impossible to give an adequate description of the conditions we found existing because of the smoulders, what in the world is happening at burning like this? The country for miles as far as the smoke don't totally conceal is burning fiercely covered with a giant and immeasurable smoulder. The stench that comes from the smoke is so strong

Bias?

Hebe.

2741 that it is very offensive as far as Chicago and Rockford, many people are becoming ill. I've read that concerning the four arsonists at Jungs being the whole population of the place the prison is wants to either lynch them, or burn them at the stake. Therefore the prison is well guarded and the prisoners placed where mobs can't reach them.

These criminals I've heard were sentenced in Molino to a life term at the hardest labor that can be given to them. Even strong bodies of troops have been detailed to guard the prison with orders to shoot any mob trying to assault it.

Yet the danger is so great it that it may be needed to remove the prison to some other place. The authorities are taking very severe measures. Fifty persons have already been arrested and imprisoned for some weeks, for trying to form a mob to storm the prison.

While traveling over the desolated southeastern portion of the country what I have and am seeing I am heart and brain sick at the sights witnessed. So as they caused this wide spread horror why protect the prisoners from the mob? I would not. Show all type of property owners in the nearby country are arming themselves to prepare for a chance to storm Jungs prison.

I would like to myself against the time encouraging the country,

people to storm Jungs being. 2742 But the police and soldiers and all the personal and other officials are rendering active service to keep away the threatening mobs and have quite restored again. I met men women and children struggling for trains to take them to Hannibal, Kansas all were so badly frightened that they seemed dazed or badly distracted.

Lords Bays +  
Perry

They were totally afraid to look behind them. As I was riding back I met many more of these refugees fleeing their smug covered towns. All this too I claim the four prisoners are also responsible. I again say they ought to be burned at the stake.

held: Lindsa  
SS. - Union  
under Exalt.

There is still danger however of the prison being stormed and unless the highest precautions are taken the people may yet break in and get hold of the arsonists. Jungs being really is in peril. Even all the other prisoners in Jungs being are mad as hornets because the arsonists were brought there saying it defaming their prison giving it a bad name and running its chachals and putting a bad stamp on them all. Many went to the warden's office threatening the prison not if the four derelict implacable scoundrels are not removed and shipped some where else. The warden is absolutely scared and if a really big overwhelming mob would storm the prison there could be no stopping them.

The most harrowing scene of all was that of Daniel Jones, leader of the fire fighters as we seen him in the hospital tent near what was once Jungs. He scarcely looked like a man he was burned and scared so

Final ~~interview~~ ~~of~~ ~~the~~ ~~prisoner~~ ✓ 2747

3/24

~~26.1.1944~~  
so terribly bad. He sat with his arms supported on pillows and I was surprised beyond measure to hear him in this condition say to me jokingly that there was not enough flesh left on one of his arms to bad a fish hook. Near him lay poor Reggido swathed in bandages. The ~~next~~ sight of them brought up in a fury a hatred of the ~~anonym.~~

I told them both what was happening near Lung Lung and both said very badly "I hope the mob gets them. If we only knew we would have caught them, they too would have burned them at the stake."

I think the performance of Captain Daniel Jones was most wonderful in defying the second conflagration and the more so when I saw his pitiful condition. I do not understand I cannot comprehend how he kept up yet when he was taken to the hospital and medical assistance was procured this brave man asked the doctor to attend to the worst burned men of his unit and refused to be treated until this was done. In being attacked by the roaring flames his men must have undergone an awful experience with him.

Schempp - 2

survey of the country indicated that 64% of our people have church membership.

Religious "fact" story in Valley

Daniel Jones in the hospital. 2744  
Last night. Some tells gave me an account of his terrible experience. "We were fighting most desperately when we saw what appeared to be an enormous black cloud like a wall mingled with big rolling hot fire rising in it approaching us rapidly. With it came an immense tidal wave of seething flames accompanied by a loud and terrible hissing and snapping noise."

I should retreat like shelter to my men I immediately the fields before us was caught and submerged in a sea of flame everything within sight burning at once. The flames came forward like a flood and columns of flame began to rear us with its heat despite the speed of our retreat while the air was thick with sulphurous fumes and dense smoke.

It does not seem to me that I could have done this. I am not a religious person. I am a practical person. I am a man of action.

The whole was a constant mass of high boiling inferno of fire. A small road of flame enveloped me and here I am yet before them knowing that my men was in retreat and instantly realizing the necessity of escape ordered them to flee faster.

The unrelenting moments increased by my sufferings from burn and agony of mind were relieved by the men obeying the order.

431. When government, the court...

yet the stream from the burned



2743 the burned and the injured became more louder. Some were rushing frantically away with the clothing dried by the heat of fire and large pieces of flesh burned from their chest and arms. Other in their agony lay writhing on the hot ground.

By my investigations of the casualties among my men showed that besides myself who is fight-fully burned and injured 150 are dead or in the Chester Brown hospital. I have been there too but it was too far for my condition. I had decided to try to reach the railroad bed for safety. I did succeed in doing by six o'clock that evening.

In the time occupied on this terrible trip the experience of my survivors was still worse than that already gone through. I called the brave Captain whether I am brave or not and my brave men fighting the fire, exhausted, scowled, struggled and worked desperately hard trying to do something to assist our dying comrades. I have not touched by the flaming honor stone to heap up the gallant fight to cover our retreat and flight.

I suffering the greatest agony succeeded in reaching this medical center. I do not know and I can get the proof of all my surviving men that did not strive anything with dark death readiness. I am no such a damn fool. I am trapped in that is all.

2746 A nurse was standing near by during this mental to treat is still injured eyes. Both he and Ruggs and all the other patients in this Chicago hospital - tents, the orderlies, the doctors and interns and the janitors too agreed to the burning at the stake these four arsonists.

A well known journal the New York Independent printed an editorial of the catastrophe which I secured which I have produced. Such a most terrible catastrophe as that which for these four days and nights is overwhelming a vast country side paralleling the destruction caused by many forest fires of the west and yet even surpassing it raises the question how our better reason can deal with such an event.

Think of the sudden ferocity of this fire power caused by four very cool men, countless acres of fields ablaze, like sea of molten lava the odding, remoulders. I thus is paralleling a whole once beautiful countryside.

The problem is easy to a consistent criminalologist. To him all is involved in the chain of criminal forces which have no purpose as it is broad except to get even with the farmer who won the gold ore of their number was in love with.

What was in all this? What involved them into such a unthinking and unfeeling horror as this. We can grope and lament or we can rejoice but the anger shot from a hard, hearted party, more straight on knowingly and most relentless. I thought these four men there is a chain of cause and effect and effect follows cause all too

"Ed." not

D.S.

① - Ed. for personal

② true free fund

Each

group

Rel. cer.

2747 mechanism. There is law only law, and no law no hour no love, only diabolical hate and un-governed fury towards the former great-est is an awful thing. It causes more than twenty or other capital sins. Such is the carnalistic law and it offers the comfort of honor and despair.

But the sign has before it the same facts the same relentless near of the four implacable four and utterly wickedly revengeful four men all crimes are readily broken by them.

Indeed the belief that a big mob may storm the King's prison to get them is possible. If it is proven that they are guilty even King's is too good for them. Hell is also too good for them. If God is good why did he allow these evil men to be born? If he really knows what Judas would do to them why also let him be born? Can he not help it?

Why allow them to make this implacable disaster and not strike them for so heinous a crime? Yet no wonder the American authorities of that city and prison officials fear what might happen at King's if an overpopulation of mob gets loose. They must get the prisoners away to some other prison but where? I heard that at Joliet and Chicago and even Rockford it now seemed to be hotter weather than ordinary. Every body felt more or less without shirts. Despite the heat and hotter along about

2748  
two o'clock in the afternoon it was so hot that every body got to talking about it. We reckoned that something given was coming off but no one could explain what it was, especially as there was no sun and it was nearly as dark as night time.

It was finally discovered it all was lying brought by the southwest from the overheated country side of the two big smoulders, all this frightened every one out of their wits. Unusual numbers crowded churches of all kinds and many prayed out loud in the streets for relief from the intolerable heat.

Everybody are all worried and began to think that the world was coming to an end. I have of the Second Day Adventist thought and predicted its mighty strange things happen during all summer hot weather but this topped them all.

We then went to interview Mr. Ruggado. We wanted to get from his own lips the story of his own escape. I was never prepared at all to see any life. The most terrible sight that greeted my eyes when we went over to his bed.

His face was the color of oakwood it was so fearfully scorched and his legs chest and arms were covered with bandages. You could not see any burned flesh.

His hair mustache and beard were gone. His eyes were tied over

by  
② "mir  
emir  
- We

hot  
- R  
side  
L

well  
above

1944 and he was still in great pain. Mr. Dargen, Carter Green, Scamlon, Manley and Stevens were there when I came. At first they motioned me away but when I showed my newspaper reporters star and other identifications I was very welcome. It is against the law for any one to turn us away. When I told them who and what my position was, he talked a great deal to, relieve him self he said of his suffering.

Along his own battle front he said "he and his men were striving to prevent the fire from crossing a long large clearing. This was the second conflagration."

They had been savagely trying to hold it in check. He was giving an order to an officer to try to attack it on the straight south flank when a big black high rolling wall of intensely thick smoke approached the southwest edge of the clearing from the north west.

It was like from a broad wide volcanic crater it traveled fast though it calm and was accompanied by a tidal wave of white hot searing flame and loud hissing and crackling.

Major Ruggado said he shouted to every one of his men to retreat to beyond the northeast edge of the clearing and then with all their equipment to stand clear. An instant later the air was filled with walls of flame and upward rising large batches of fire. The southwestern edge of the fields was immediately ablaze from end to end as far

as the eye could see and the workers and fighters not being able to bear the awful heat began to rush off across the fields frantic and mad with pain. As nearly as he could remember there were 2 twenty two hundred who had started their retreat and only six escaped without burns, heat prostration, smoke inhalation or smoke blinded eyes.

Yet there was no fatalities. What enabled us to escape was there was not the slightest breeze to fan the fire or push it forward. It came on because of its own terrible far reaching heat. The wheat on the north eastern edge of the fields lay and the breach wide as it was began to smoke and blaze up in flames when the tidal wave of fire hit the eastern edge.

Major Ruggado ran through the fields fell madd but was driven back by flames, but trying to come to flank him.

Then he rushed northward and signalled the others of his men to put on full retreat. They responded and they tore northward through the wheat but a new branch of fire was spreading from the west and they had to flee westward.

Yet he kept the fleeing men going ahead, hoping to outdistance the inferno before it overlapped them and so they ran into swarms of Daniel Jones fleeing men of which clouds of smoke and flames were beginning to overtake. Daniel Jones men were wincing their

2751 hands and rushing in the most frantic flight. Many of his ~~most~~ men had disappeared probably rushing into a dense smoke fog and the rest went out of sight one by one until only six were still within sight.

I heard that a good number of Daniel Jones men died a terrible death, but so Daniel? asked Reggido. Of his friend also lying in agony.

"I was told a hundred and two perished miserably in the flames," he answered.

After a time as he continued Reggido said that he got his foremost men out of danger and headed to the south east. He himself was unable to lift his burned arms. Blood from his forehead kept running into his eyes obscuring his vision. He said his escape was like a passage from purgatory to hell and finally from hell to heaven.

At last he and his men reached another and wider beach on the fields of grain and with the help of an enormous column of fresh men who savagely covered his retreat by unrelentingly fierce fighting held back the storm of fire until he and his men succeeded in reaching

a wide clearing.

During our running from this fire I heard one of Daniel Jones men died a horrible death. He escaped the first

of the fire started to urge 2752 his men on as he did so a column of seething flame overtook him burning one side of his face and body completely away.

Reggido's performance was the same as that of Daniel Jones and of both perhaps never had a parallel in the most thrilling stories of any kind of fire fighting.

When he and his badly burned men arrived at the outside relief hospital camp the brave man like Daniel Jones refused all medical treatment until the others were cared for. They both will live the doctors told me but they'll be probably be badly disfigured.

Not many of his men were able to get about. The air was stifling and you could not see fifty feet. It was an experience to last a life time. We went to Kamhaka and as soon as I got there I noticed that the sun was taking on a peculiar condition.

It was shining brightly as it did not appear to be in the path of the smoke cloud yet seemed surrounded by a thick haze.

It finally took on a fiery red appearance and while still perceptible in its entire contour through the haze or smoke its circumference kept apparently contracting.

It grew smaller and smaller until finally it looked no larger around to the naked eye than an ordinary wisp.

2757 about this time there came a sudden fog of dark smoke the edges which were tinged with a strange light as though reflecting the rays of the blood red sun. This cloud moved toward the city like a black squall without wind.

The city was soon enveloped and so heavy was the smoke that respiration became a labor and fear of suffocation came upon the inhabitants. Great alarm came on and it was believed even the people would be forced to flee from here also in the heat too in the coming terrible.

Life also is becoming unbearable and the suffering of the people and also refugees who continue to crowd into Kambooke is extreme.

I heard that yesterday despite the precautions taken by the city and prison authorities, authorities were being long is threats to stir the prison to get the four criminals in getting more menacing. More soldiers have been sent out with firm instructions to take most severe measures if necessary to put a stop to the threatening disorders. As soon as possible the prisoners will be removed secretly by night.

The inhala inhabitants of the neighborhood had been abandoning the homes, villages and countryside, the collages and are flocking to the city of Kambooke. It was a curious sight of women, children and bare footed peasants, also big black fellows loaded

2754 with all sorts of house hold goods. The air is very oppressive. You must burn. Are they all going to die asphyxiated if they dare to remain here. What has become tomorrow is store for them? Overcome by smoke on a calamity from the annals. Who can tell, yet many had fled their villages leaving all the property and other goods behind.

Even in far distant cities where the refugees fled to the horrors increasing conditions because of the smog is growing worse notwithstanding that the wind won't change its direction.

Yet no place is free from stricken as all supplies are overwhelmed.

Life as far as quiet is made almost impossible by the sickening stench of the smoke that gives the entire region a resemblance to neglected shambles.

Everywhere noxious vapors are wafted by the steady slow southwesterly breezes that seem to be not in the least tempered by the sun warming heated atmosphere.

These conditions are bad enough in the main northern sections of the country and about Chicago and so on. But they are immensely multiplied a thousand times much further southward and westward, about Mexico, Oahu, Kambooke and so on. As they stay far away few animals have died.

In the hospital (former monastery) it is Charter. B. so in there are about 1000 patients all fighters

ua  
do  
ob

or  
an  
of  
ar  
Fi  
it  
de  
hi  
s  
s  
l  
F  
c  
i  
c  
e  
b  
d  
tl  
de  
in  
by

law  
fro  
ove  
a s  
sta  
del  
We  
hi  
the  
wa  
Es  
mer  
of  
the

Spui  
might  
sold  
that  
past  
of  
Tho  
of  
met  
the

① Rel + goit must  
what

② Est  
free etc.

2255 and all suffering from burns  
over heat, heat prostration, some eyes  
from the smoke or from the effects  
of inhaling suffocating smoke gases.  
Supplies are being given to count-  
less smoke fled refugees.

It is reasonable to conclude  
therefore that the immediate needs of  
the smoke driven suffering refugees  
will be met as well as they can  
be, and the attention of the relief  
committees appointed by the President  
Board, as well as local organ-  
izations formed for the same  
purpose soon be directed to already  
maintain the succor while they  
perfect plans for organized relief and  
conveyance on refugee trains.

At the time being supplies  
must be sent without regard  
to expense or the danger of hurrying  
them diverted from their intended  
purpose. But experience which  
such disasters tell us that thieves  
are able to take advantage of the  
charitable instincts of humanity and  
obtain for their personal use the  
money and supplies so freely  
given to aid those in real want  
and distress.

It is the sole strict duty of  
those in charge of the relief  
funds to see that every  
dollar contributed to those funds  
shall go to those who have  
suffered directly or indirectly from  
the smouldering or those fire-  
wrecks while fighting the main  
conflagration and not to any  
other people.

Bringing in some of the  
survivors of Daniel Jones concern

574

Central  
ind.

which went through, the 2256  
fury of fire in the fields while  
fighting the second conflagration  
and who were routed by the tidal wave  
of fire the remaining retreating fighters  
reached near the railroad by 2:30  
in the afternoon.

The men who passed through  
that most awful experience are the  
leader Officer Elery Joseph Scott, and  
Charles Thompson colored who was  
assistant lieutenant of the badly defeated  
fighting men.

Story to me by Charles  
Thompson. He like I never  
want to hear again.

Mr Thompson is a stalwart man of  
sixty. His middle name is Thomas.  
In the hospital tent he told me  
John Manley Scammon Stevens,  
Carter Green and others his shocking,  
blood curdling story.

Both Thompson and Scott  
are still much shaken by their  
experience and could only tell by  
snatches what really happened. This  
is his narrative to me.

"Mr Dargen all us men under  
Daniel Jones and was Henry  
Ward Howe arrived to the fighting  
front of to be what was going a  
disastrous battle about noon with our  
centered for the fight about 2600  
yards from the front of the awful  
conflagration.

There were about five thousand of  
us men ready for the fray -  
including our officers, some newspaper

rehabilitate

No danger  
just now

per  
com

2757

correspondents, some agents, and a large number of reporters who had volunteered to help us.

Captain Daniel Jones was in the front arranging us under officers and I was superintending the removal of wheat to stand a long long way away was the seething fire here in my hood on.

Suddenly at about ten thirty a clock the sky grew mixed dark overhead and the nearby country roads became as indistinct as at twilight.

Captain Jones came up to the front men at that moment and with a look of fright on his face sprang for the front line shouting.

"It's suicide to contest what fire, it's moving too fast for us."

We had barely reached the front when the field of grain seemed to turn into fire and with it came the choking fumes from burning wheat.

"Retreat retreat to the rear, we can't fight it here," shouted Captain Daniel Jones, I sprang forward towards my men to order the retreat and with the aid of two officers began the retreat.

The approaching heat of the fire storm hit and strong rain came and our nostrils were filled with the sharp burn.

of the smoke that filled the air. We had retreated two hundred yards through the smoke when Captain Daniel Jones who had been joined by two other officers shouted again wildly.

"It's coming, it's coming. Open ranks we've got to fight it by the rear breach to survive. Set down our ground. Stand ground."

We retreated to the southeastern section of the breach and started to cut it under whom all at once there came a great wall of flames rushing towards the other side of the breach and into the cut of clouds showing us back by its unbearable heat.

I started my men to dare resist any way when a great wall of flame rushed across the breach causing the wheat there to be topped with fire and flame. Thick darkness had fallen on us also but elsewhere the blazing grass and fierce flames illuminated all the country side.

The fire was struck our side of the breach, broadside on. It flared up and I thought we would be overwhelmed right away. Nearly everything before us was burned away. I and my nearest men ran to the rear I covering my head with my wet coat to shield it from the blistering heat. I was caught in a rush of men towards the rear.

Certain  
Assumed

2759 knocked down and trampled upon. It was at this time that I received burns on my neck. The flames had penetrated the room of the fleeing men and a few were collapsing and dying all over the field caught in the fiery fury. I should have been to death with them to had not two spectators volunteered, rolled men from the blazing fire and dragged me into a clearing.

There we for a time stayed and by wrapping our heads in wet blankets so far escaped serious injury. Daniel Jones tried to rally the main force when he saw the wave of flame hesitating after all but to be restrained by some of the men. I and my men remained at bay in the clearing until the advancing fire turned sideways.

It was still as dark as night in all the vicinity of the center. Eight men fleeing with me only thirty remained alive and the fields were now a fire in a dozen places. I saw a large fire column of flame coming towards us in our right flank apparently unmanageable.

It collided with another column of fire, seemed to back away and turned towards the north. It was threatening on right flank.

Then I turned my attention to Thomas P. Helms squads. Only five fire men were fit for duty.

We together caused our suffering comrades to the rear and

made them as comfortable as possible. 2760 Then hundreds of us began to fight the flames threatening our right flank. Our struggle continued until 10 AM when it began to drive us back.

We had been three hours breaching and trenching. Suddenly we saw a new force of men through the gloom, twenty yards away. Every man of us shouted to gather for help and everybody with wept with tears of joy when the troop came up to cover our retreat and began fighting too.

They also took thirty injured men to the further rear but some died before they got there. Most of them suffered terrible agony being burned internally as well as externally. The frightful heat had entered their noses and mouths and even penetrated their ears.

First officer Scott's son was among those lost by being trapped. A under officer ran for ten miles when the fire struck us until he dropped from exhaustion. Men running ahead of him were struck down by the heat and several times he fell over their bodies.

Each one struck looked as if he had been fallen on but by lightning. His fall was near a brook running through the burning fields but when he cooped up the water to drink, it he poured it boiling hot. He lay by the stream until rescued by some of



2 27.66 the men. My men observed the fire still advancing rising a hundred feet high. Several columns of fresh troops came to reinforce us against the flames. A troop of well equipped men came up to their own formation off the northwestern part of the burning fields less than a mile from the fire.

The still unburning fields were high with grain and although enormous quantities of flame and smoke were boiling from the distant conflagration the view was partially obscured.

The real main left wing of the conflagration seemed to be three or a half mile away from us. Had we swiftly retreated from its advance guard we still remained in the clearing.

It proved a log screening between us and the fury that rushed towards us afterwards and so fiercely.

Not one of us in the clearing would have escaped with his life had also a wall of rock had not been in position to protect us. About half a mile to the north-west west of us a tall smooth field of wheat confronted us, altogether in the distance of the main fire were many fields catching fire ahead of it because of the tremendous heat. I went to the edge of the clearing and found many of the men

lined up like an army in 27.62 battle array to put on the dangerous show. Some one remarked to officer Brown and officer Scott that the conflagration was at its worse. They had never seen anything like it before. Evidently that was the opinion of every one of the fighters for even at some distance the railroad bed was covered with spectators who also wished to fight.

Second Lieutenant Moreley said to Brown and me "I captain Daniel Jones gives us permission will you go closer with me and get as close as we can to the fire?" I replied "No I value my life more than that. I have read all about all forest fires. I have fought some and I wouldn't be foolish enough to go near this fire."

This was about five minutes before the main fire struck us. This time all the reinforcements were lined up along the prepared fighting front but really dreading to fight the fire. Most of the spectators were lined up on the tracks too. Captain Daniel Jones had gone for a time to the rear.

While Moreley Brown and I were standing in the clearing we saw coming an awful long mass of fire miles long. At the same time a fierce heat radiated at us. In less than a minute the second break we had made struck the wheat on the other side with a frightfully loud hissing sound.

2763 and clouds of smoke  
strangely came rolling  
over and over and over upon  
itself as it advance upon us,  
I never saw anything like  
the rolling of this smoke. It  
was headed by a high gigantic  
beach comb of flame with its  
top part also seeming always  
rolling down and under the fierier  
mass and with the after part  
of it constantly rising up to a  
height of hundreds of feet as the  
great mass of flame leaped in  
our direction.

Vast clouds of steam arose from  
the troops running through the  
fields from the contact of  
fire and water. The fire seemed  
to blot out the whole landscape  
from our sight. There rose up  
an out cry and tumult of count-  
less myriads of voices.

Now as the fire wave advanced  
close to us the steam from the  
brook arose in great clouds and  
cut off from view what was  
left of the burning fields of wheat  
and grain.

I heard some one cry: Run  
for your life Mr Brown. He  
answered "Oh no it will stop  
when it gets to this clearing.  
Here we will give it a fight for  
all its worth."

At that moment the fire  
reached the wheat surrounding  
the clearing and here the men  
did not flinch at the  
whet with a fury of a whirl  
wind. Then the terrible storm

fire struck. At the moment this  
fire wave struck and tried to  
sweep over us I heard a noise frightfully  
loud and threatening. That was the  
sound of the troops of battling men  
yelling cursing and shouting defiance  
at the flames.

Even then we had not received the  
full edge of the fire blast for the  
clearing served as a gap for us.  
It is said the flames of this  
conflagration could be seen for many  
miles distant.

I forgot to write that when Captain  
Daniel Jones heard of the swift spread  
and advance of the conflagration he  
leaped away from the rear of the small  
clearing dressed in his wet clothes  
and rode on his horse to the front.  
He was a brass band leader man.  
But still he called to the first  
fire fighting officer.

"Mr. Scott, 'get ready to retreat'  
for God's sake let us get out of here  
as soon as we can!"

We had a full strong column  
of strong fighting men well  
equipped and another column of fire  
to hand grenadiers, to cover the  
retreat of his men, and to keep them  
to get going.

I inst officer Scott yelled to the  
other leaders.

"Command the retreat!"  
The commander gave the orders  
and sent them the fire blasts  
struck on side of the fields  
and sent them running, but  
he was trapped and never

2265 escaped, to the rear. Mr Scott was running for the rear of the clearing so as to get beyond the fire where he could give further orders when a big black fire fighter by the name of Ben Logan seized him around the waist and dragged him into a field of water drenched wheat.

That act saved Mr Scott's life and neither he or Ben Logan was even singed by the fire.

When I ran for the rear by brook which was thirty five feet wide my idea was to plunge into the water and so protect myself from the wave of fire and smoke gas from the awful conflagration.

I did not fairly accomplish my purpose for before I got half way near the stream the fire hurricane crossed the clearing. I finally got there however, but found the water almost scalding hot. The water was so hot that I felt I was burning up, and I madly tore off my coat and waistcoat.

Captain Jones was my front giving orders and trying to save his men from a disastrous defeat when the billow of flame overwhelmed us. Bare headed his clothes dried by the terrific heat and a large tongue of flame embracing him from head to foot his hair and beard was singed off and he was burned from head to foot.

2266 Then whether he was crazed or delirious by the pain or whether he became so weak that he could not support himself I do not know but our Captain fell into the brook. Someone jumped in after him & caught Captain Jones by the shirt collar and pulled him out of the water.

For many minutes Captain Jones lay unconscious and I thought he was dead. Then I was surprised to hear him say suddenly - "Get me back to Mr Grott. For God's sake get me back to the rear. I must die I want to die near Mr Grott."

Then the Captain lay as dead among the wet wheat as if dead. As he stood beside the Captain he saw the Stewardess of a chuck wagon Mrs Angela Reed all burned and bleeding and with her clothes hanging in burned and bloody shreds. "My God what the matter?" I cried. "How did this damn fire get you?" And I ran forward to where I had left some of my comrades in the back of the clearing. I got them to put her in a closed wagon and haul her to the camp hospital.

It was at this time that I made my way forward to get out for her. That I saw a young fellow sitting crouched on a log stone. I found that he was dead. Her hair was all burned off his skin was scorched black his clothes and skin hungy together.

2767 in ragged patches. By now breathing was almost completely impossible. It was impossible to see at any distance. The hissing of the flames, the shrieks and cries of the dying, the awful showers of sparks and fire brands and the poisonous smoke gas and fumes everywhere made it seem to me as if the end of the world had come and we were all in either purgatory or hell.

The fields were on fire on three sides of us and some in the distant rear on our left flank was blazing.

Mr. Scott, Bern Logan and Daniel Saunders were looking at each other. Every where that we went lay dead men, and dying fighters who were so gas stricken and torn and disfigured by the fire that no one could identify or identify them. They were all begging for water. I am sure they must have inhaled the flames.

"Set out the fire near our own left flank before it gets to our rear" Mr. Scott said and we got four companies rallied. We did pretty well with the fire there but we found it was now trying to flank us to our right. There a whole lot of wheat was on fire. We found two more bodies here. They were not burned and I believe that they must have died from inhaling the flames and the smoke gases. We did not fortunately put out the fire in this section saving ourselves

from being snuffed. The page 2768 says in the fire there had ~~ceased~~ <sup>ended</sup> and now there were <sup>no</sup> ~~any~~ <sup>long</sup> ~~any~~ way in the darkness that almost was like midnight.

Twelve of our injured were speedily taken on the ambulance wagons. Most of them had the hair burned off their heads. The faces of all of them were swollen and cut and they were disfigured.

It was necessary to place each sufferer on a stretcher which was carried by four men to the wagons. They were handled with great care and then loaded onto the wagons.

Four of our men died on the short run to the camp hospital. We were all in half burned rags and I don't think any of us ever noticed that until we found ourselves in the more safer near the railroad.

My custom consisted of a battered fire fighting hat that I picked up from the ground, my suit of old summer winter clothes and an old pair of trousers tied around the waist and at the ankles with marlins. No stockings or shoes. A slipper on one foot and a woman high heeled shoe on the other. When Mr. Scott and I stepped up to the road bed we were so shaking and trembling that we couldn't walk or talk. It makes me shake even now to think of the hell that we went through fighting the fire. I am not

2769 much burned as you can see but when we reached the roadbed Mr Scott had to scramble the ashes off my head where they had caked in my hair and formed a crust just as melted sugar would.

Mr Scott lost his son a very fine boy of sixteen years old who helped fight this dangerous inferno. I saw some more of the burned lying dead contorted and burned out of human resemblance. Two more have since died.

All the survivors of my men and all the others too are loud in their praises of the heroic conduct of our brave Captain in getting his companies out of the path of the inferno with his own leadership which were badly burned by the envelope of fire that enveloped him from head to foot.

By and by all over his body the Captain is safe as well as healthy though he is badly scorched. Many of my men were simply like rats in a trap and had no way to turn.

I asked Thompson?

Do you know who caused this catastrophe? "Do you know what a really nutty question?" he answered "I hope the mob breaks into the prison and gets them before they are taken away so softly and he said some words about them that he has observed for me to write."

Through some source which I mention not from forgetfulness came for the town long long is in the very sad story that a young school teacher living there is prostrated over the news of the terrible fire disaster as her sister father and mother and grandparents and others resided at Morris. On learning of its destruction by the oil tanks explosion and fire, and smoulders heat she swooned and already has been in a very serious condition for twenty four hours.

Whether all her relations have been killed or not is not known, as there cannot be any news learned about them. The real truth is they're safe in Chicago but so far because of the smoke horror there, no way to get news to them for trains refuse to run through the smoke fog.

Yet from the same city came one of the most touching stories also. I here is deep grief in the home of its Mayor of the town, whose son and his wife and two daughters was in chief charge of the oil tanks near Morris. His wife is completely prostrated and in addition is in a delicate condition.

With her elder daughter also her mother and sister no news can be obtained with her is her grandmother and grand father and uncle and aunt and sister and her own father.

2770 father who vainly try to cheer her with what is feared is false hopes. They anticipate that she will not survive her coming ideal. Suchily her husband was successful in preventing her from committing suicide.

The mayor who has already held the mayorship for six years is a native of Ireland where his father is an. in a high position in Dublin and still lives. His poor wife is in bed surrounded by her grief stricken husband and friends. Every time the bell rings she is startled.

She is not permitted to answer the summons. But anxiously asked "Is there any news?"

Ha He. Do you wonder the people want to get their hands on those four arch fiends?

Summary news in Chicago of the two conflagrations and the mysterious fiery mounds,

I had the paper which was brought to me from So. Lake. I read as follows.

"So rapidly have the horrors of these four days and nights piled upon one another that it now seems ages since the first news was received here. It was received August 16 a Saturday just two days after the infamous tornado that

RM 2771

The first telegram received from 2771 So. Lake announced the awful conflagration of fields of wheat and gave dire warning of the disasters that were to follow.

Chicago learned that a great wheat field fire had been threatening the whole country side and that on the night of the sixteenth it had begun. Serious operations defying all the efforts of the fighters to subdue it.

As far as here volumes of smoke could be seen by people from the upper windows of the tallest buildings accompanied by a most stupendous glare on the sky from that of a distant direction.

At midnight flames could be seen. Naturally all the neighborhood of the fire were in a state of great consternation. Some took the warning and began leaving houses and Ottawa but it was some before all the population went rather than meet an awful fate. Yet business in Chicago and other cities because of the dense smog is being suspended in all stores.

It is worthy to note that the flames were first seen to issue from near the extensive wreckage pile. The question will be asked - Why didn't they let the four men be lynched? Those who investigated and turned it was arson believe that it was the east wind that spread the fire so fast. I wish that morning were the first really serious news.

It was told by telegraph that

2772 in the morning there were eruptions of munition shells among the wheat and one very big explosion had dug an enormous crater in the field, destroyed large other sections of the fields and scattered flaming wheat starting new fires.

It was reported that two hundred and fifty of the fighters were either killed or injured.

a. muzzing  
It was not believed in Chicago or Rockford or elsewhere that this could be true. It seemed absolutely impossible that so great a catastrophe could occur, if so where did the munitions come from? But a gloom came upon the people of these cities who had many friends and relatives in France.

The same morning news was received that the conflagration was threatening a line of big and long sheds or barns loaded everyone with high explosive and that great trouble had resulted near by.

Yet by the most savage fighting ever known in all record the fire was checked in that direction.

Yet it troubled the fighters getting away from them and going north. It was not until all of this news reached only to impress every one that a great catastrophe could occur, but no one was prepared for the sacrifice that was soon

to be reported. 2773  
Finally with orders to counter fire this feat was accomplished by forenoon. Even then it was feared that danger awaited the fighters should they suddenly change direction and the counter fire was instructed to use their own discretion and to take no unnecessary risks.

All communication with five big cities ceased this day even though after all the counter fire was a success. It was announced that all telephone and telegraph wires were burned loose cutting us off from neighboring cities. Detonations that early morning were heard from the south, especially an extra big one whose concussion broke a lot of windows in our city.

It was like the heavy guns of a ship of war far out at sea.

It was now believed that there first detonations were from munitions scattered over the fire fields on the path of the fires by the recent intertown tornado (Chertlestown).

That is indicated by the fact that they were heard in other cities coming from different directions.

It was said they were heard over an area of five hundred miles.

Panic was beginning to make itself felt here. After the counter firing the enormous number of fire fighters prudently withdrew for fighting room.

It was feared that there would be trouble here and that the companies of men would not have room to manoeuvre for their own safety.

2774 No news was received here that afternoon until evening when the report was circulated that a new conflagration had been started by the resulting remainder of the first one and that some terrible calamity had befallen thousands upon thousands of acres.

From La Salle came a telegraph announcing that a large troop of fire fighters which went under Reggato to oppose the inferno had retreated to the rear a wreck of the former column with many dead during the fire, from the fire, counter attack and with others so terribly injured, smoke and heat prostration that they could not recover.

It had been told by Reggato who was badly burned that all the fields within view was being destroyed and that hundreds of acres of wheat was going into a big second big remainder.

That was a terrible blow to us in Chicago. We knew that Reggato's fighting men were straining most desperately there and it was feared that Daniel Jones men had gone into grave danger to cover the retreat of Reggato's men.

That fear was soon known to the well founded, that afternoon and evening will be long remembered as Black Friday here a day of mourning and heart rending grief to many among us a day to make the most thoughtless shudder and stand aghast.

2775 The wind burst failed to take in the enormity of the calamity. At first holding their own Daniel Jones men were abso-letely successful, but in the end the conflagration fiercely counter attacked drove them back all the way to the road bed with great loss in men and officer officers killed wounded heat prostrated and overcome by smoke.

Daniel Jones was seriously burned but will recover. So will Reggato. I thought some unknown reason Stevens had failed to communicate with Stevens or Reggato and Jones until too late on Thursday afternoon.

The conditions were then three hours after the catastrophe so threatening when covering the retreat of the two that Stevens with Scamler, Manley, Carter, Green and even Dyer and others though fighting desperately to hold their own that they dared not move their columns nearer than two miles but had to retreat, reinforcements were sent in under "Reddy" and "Pharo" to try to do something.

How near they got to some kind of success I do not know but near enough at any rate for Stevens to send word that all the fields were still in flames even though not one man was yet yielding.

A slight description was received from Carl Stibel Staley of troops in the field. He had been driven from the fields of fire along his front by a counter attack of savage fury.



2776 and conditions there were so against him and his men that he fell back towards the narrow clearing behind his line of battle. He lost no men however. He was near enough to see the awful fate of the fighting lines of Buggedo and Jones and of those trying to cover their retreat.

Meanwhile the terrible news continues of the fire defeating everybody and only blocked by the Kanabossee River and then running into the unquenchable smolder more disastrous than the two conflagrations put together.

Days of 'terrors' has been spent by the people of Morris and Ottawa and elsewhere.

Thousands have left there because of the denseness of the smoke. Some have gone even to Kanabossee.

Others have come here or also gone to Rockford, Elgin and other cities of refuge there to depend upon their the charity of strangers.

The smoke is driven during every one away over a wide territory. They don't stop even to take any of their belongings with them, too paralytic to take with them their money.

Every train coming or going, freight or passenger was constantly crowded with those who would flee from the dangerous smoke house and far distant reaching, parching

decision requires.

( For these reasons I respectfully dissent from the opinion and judgment of the Court. )

Dangerous heat and at the next appearance of great danger clustered on the railway stations about the waiting trains are even wagons of all sizes filled with people who beg to be taken on. Hundreds finding it impossible to obtain wagons to take them to the stations have walked there to avoid avoid the danger which fills them with so much dread.

In the dreadful excitement admitted the fury of the awful smolder. One is found to give praise to even the engineers, porters and workmen and laborers of the Chicago and Alton trains of all kinds who never lost their presence of mind and are working most bravely to save those not able to save themselves.

One of the trains the Simcocks was ordered to run down to take as many refugees as they could to Ottumwa Bloomington.

It tried to leave So. Dale southward but couldn't get through the smoke. All along the railroad right of way the smoke comes in trailing clouds and such curtains of smoke that there is no view of the country side possible. It had to turn northwest to Davenport Iowa on another railroad.

2778 Even despite the wind was  
a slow southwest smoke like a  
fog was seen noticed as far south  
ward as far as Starved Rock and  
Peoria. What caused the smoke to  
backfire only heaven knows.  
Even towards the south the  
heat from the smoulders was so  
great that the paint on northern  
sides of north suburb houses of  
the town of Mathieson were  
blistered.

People were moving away from  
there too.

An extra freight of fifty box  
cars took on a great crowd of  
men women and children on the  
railroad right of way who were  
signally wildly for help.

All were taken on board  
the train and brought to St  
Louis by another train route.

There thus rescue work al-  
most choked and overcome by  
smoke. They faced no hunger  
hunger as they took plenty  
of provisions with them.

From all over the northern  
country not cut off by the  
big smoulders smoke driven  
refugees are coming into Chicago  
and Gary.

The country roads are filled  
with panic stricken and  
smoke suffering people arriving  
at our cities there terror and  
suffering do not decrease and  
they are in anxious to press  
on to some still safer place  
as they were to get there also  
smoke fogged.

All the roads are dotted

dotted with dead killed by 2779  
smoke fumes and many are  
reported dying to be dying having  
fallen from smoke inhalation heat  
prostration and from weakness on  
the way. Liberal wages are offered  
for rescuers to go out and assist  
those who have fallen by the  
way but the laborers are too full of  
fear to be tempted by any large  
offer.

The panic during the main second  
conflagration yesterday was greatest  
when it seemed to be heading  
for Kankakee. The skies west of the  
city were filled for many miles  
with rolling whirling sheets of most  
dense smoke that appeared fiery  
red.

Many believed that the flames  
were about to engulf their city  
and the terror that ensued was  
most pitiful.

Even the inmates of the Indiana  
Asylum were terrified. The spect-  
acle was so appalling that the  
population could not appreciate  
the sum sublimity of it quickly  
the streets were filled even  
soldiers and sailors priests brothers  
and nuns mixed freely with  
the citizens all frightened unless  
all struggled to get to a place of  
safety they knew not where.  
All believed that where they  
were was the place of the  
greatest danger.

Some cursed in their frenzy  
frenzy others fell on their knees  
on the streets and brought pro-  
tection from above.

2180 Few were able to restrain from tears. When after all Kan-  
kakee was to be spared the panic  
subsided a little and there was a  
general scramble for the various  
railway stations on river boats and  
ships. When a New York Central pulled  
into Chicago it didn't go any further.  
It took no part in the work  
of rescue of the refugees who after  
being driven to this city found as  
much smoke here too  
and feared to be taken else  
where in the west or west.

Yet other trains going to  
Kankakee found the panic here  
even greater that was reported  
about

The city is west of the river  
not east and is situated on a  
bank of the river and  
almost surrounded by fields of  
grain and wheat.

A steam launch called the  
Kankakee Kankakee east Bend picked  
up two hundred and fifty  
persons who were struggling in  
the water of the river and took  
them by transferring them on a  
train to Gary.

30 Scores of others were taken  
by locals to Gary also some  
even to Michigan city. The  
small river boats were on  
duty constantly saving many  
who otherwise must have  
been overcome by smoke fumes  
and unendurable heat.

This was a work of much  
danger as the whole not too  
far away was burning as if all

2181 hell were set loose. Scarcely  
any here in plenty but great suffer-  
ing is being caused by lack of  
water. All of the natural water supplies  
have been polluted by the wheat fire  
which have developed nitrophosphoric acid.  
No price is demanded for any  
kind of transportation or even allowed  
and anyone trying to charge will be  
heavily fined.

Thousands are gone and thousands  
are waiting for an opportunity to get  
away. Those fortunate enough to own  
small or large boats that are suffi-  
ciently well worthy to make the  
run from Kankakee are warning  
them to escape from the wrath of  
the conflagration.

With three hundred refugees aboard  
the Illinois Central train can local  
the train arrived at Chicago from Kank-  
akee. Many of those in the coaches  
had barely sufficient clothing to keep  
them covered so quick had they fled.  
Some didn't even take their money  
with them.

They said they fled believing  
their city was doomed. The inhabitants  
had either taken refuge on  
the farm lands of low crops  
by bridges across the river or  
had fled into the territory south  
of the city. Many had found  
means of transportation to other cities  
and towns. A great number of  
able bodied men if not all of  
them left the city to go out and  
fight the fire but couldn't  
face the heat and it was  
beyond control.

1782 We knew before leaving  
Chicago that the disastrous  
fires, and the conflagration was one  
that shocked the world but we  
were not prepared for what we  
found. Following our way on a train  
we saw the entire country side  
in a sea of fire and smoke as  
far as eye could reach with no  
signs of life about the territories outside of  
of the conflagration.

The fire peril that threatened  
Kankakee is greater than that  
which almost destroyed Muncie  
and Ottawa and still remaining,  
are filled with panic and every-  
one awaits in fear a calamity  
even worse than that which  
only recently filled the world with  
horror and consternation.  
It was terror and alarm here,  
they deserted their homes and  
with frenzied cries were  
crowding the streets making their  
way to the river on trains to take  
them any where to escape the  
impending fire danger. Thousands  
my little city.

Many of them carried house-  
hold effects in their arms while  
others ran about waving their  
hands and crying.

Words were inadequate to describe  
the actual conditions. Disaster to the  
city by fire was expected any  
moment, and in the river every  
boat was ready to speed away  
with refugees. It is estimated  
that not the people present  
to still remain behind were

2781  
rushing out into the streets 2783  
of the city shrieking crying and  
praying. I hope I am exaggerating the  
awful situation. This conflagration that  
threatened the city was horrible. Every  
woman and child is fire-fearing to flee  
from here as from an epidemic but  
all able bodied men and the fire  
departments are staying to fight the  
fire otherwise it would cause a general  
panic.

All this was very sad. The heat  
coming towards the city from the fire  
was suffocating. No one could see  
beyond anything open as the dense  
smoke entered every where the  
heat burning our faces and the  
smoke fumes our eyes. No one has  
the courage to attend to any house-  
hold duties.

They have plenty of food but  
have no heart even to eat.  
All other crops high as the wheat  
are burning. Though there is not  
exactly a drought, it hasn't rained  
since the great tornado. To this  
punishment from God. If so  
what did we do to deserve it.

While in this hard territory  
I had heard that it was believed  
the terrific destruction of the fields  
and the smaller houses and  
Kankakee dangerous situation was  
a terrible punishment sent by  
the almighty on account of the  
wickedness of the people of  
the territory I don't know about

2784

the Divine retribution but I do know that these cities including Kankakee were not such people at all, and who ever said so are damn sure. I remember it to said God forbids rash and hasty judgments.

In the presence of such an awful fire disaster there had been many persons who did say that it was in some unusual manner a visitation decreed upon the communities that are suffering so severely.

The very magnitude and superhuman force of it well suggest to all minds the thought of God punishing us. What did we do that so offended Him so much?

I should that many multitudes of the innocent should suffer such indescribable cruelty for imaginary sins and this fire disaster.

It therefore would be an impossible feat of justifying the actions of all this country side where it is proven completely where all the inhabitants lived lives of peaceful keepful industry.

And it is said God inspired these four wicked men to set the fire.

Did God do it? Well no. This was no vengeance decreed for our sin or shot coming upon here was no imposable vengeance ever decreed by any persons known as was those

2785

of those inhuman four friends. It seemed ~~super~~ natural superhuman but not at all supernatural. It was but a wicked manifestation of the unchangeable invincible meanness of four heartless scoundrels governed by probable physical urges by the Devil whose wicked laws and ways are inexorable.

They knew inhuman revenge had malice but no pity. They selected their victim a poor farmer because he was won as his first wife a woman one of them was madly in love with. They did not turn aside out of pity or forgiveness to save the farmer from their pitiless revenge.

As their concern was not of him but of their own selfish whom they were not moved by mercy but by abject hatred. The limited vision of all the four men were incredibly cruel savage and wasteful of many countless acres of valuable wheat they are now paying not only with their most severe sentences but are in danger of a mob breaking into the prison to get them.

When night came the remaining inhabitants were still struck by the approach of the conflagration fearing a repetition of the fire catastrophe which overwhelmed houses and stables.

They ran from the streets across the river bridges onto the open country east of the river.

crying and praying for preservation from dire calamity, no one still remaining in the city or out in the country sleep that night. Villagers from the outlying towns are also pouring into Kankakee. Trains are bringing in smoke refugees from Ottawa.

Kankakee was congested and the demands on the Illinois government are increasing very rapidly as more and more persons are obliged to leave their smoke smitten towns and homes.

A thick smoke cloud now overspreads this city too. All business is suspended and the streets are crowded. Every one is filled with fear of the future. The feeling of suspense is intense. And the people pass their time gazing at the south western sky - at 4:30 - that afternoon the people observed a curious and inspiring most huge fiery cloud surrounded by a fleecy white cap resembling a highly polished silver.

This phenomenon caused alarm among the surprised watchers. So rapidly have the horrors piled upon one another that it now ages since the first news was received here.

Meanwhile the terrible

news continued and the people in even Chicago and other far northern big cities fear that other and greater conflagrations are to come. Even all in the neighborhood of Joliet are still in a state of great consternation.

Some take the warning and are leaving Joliet but the greater portion of the dwellers in the city are definitely remaining to dare anything. Great extent of country even outside the fire zone was overwhelmed by a sheet of very hot air.

This will explain too why the inhabitants could be gradually suffocated if they did not flee away. There still continues to be an exodus from all over the country. Consternation is increasing. The night clothes carrying children ran out in the dark streets carrying any sort of lamp or candle. They had sought up in their haste, wailing and screaming and running arm in arm about the streets of Joliet.

The mental strain the coming and unendurable doubt towns were got ready and the refugees hurriedly went on board the streets of Joliet. The streams of frightened refugees were being sent from Joliet to Chicago and from all the surrounding territory. The

2788

but they are terrified. They want only one thing and that is to be taken far away, away from the fiery country with which they say God is angry and which he will destroy by fire.

The car consuls here and the crews of various trains are waylaid by hundreds of people crazed with fear and begging to be carried away.

It is now known that there has been loss of life among the refugees and what is more distressing a large number of persons mostly women and children are imprisoned by a certain saving of the smoulder in their little town which surrounds them.

Those unfortunate are those remaining at Moira. They are cut off from escape when a wing of the smoulder from its heat swept away all the roads filling a brook channel with so much boiling heat so that bridges were burned down and consumed and reaching railroad lines and making the air so hot as to be almost as incandescent as the smoulder.

It is impossible for assistance to be rendered to them by any human effort and nothing less than a miracle can save them from the awful death which confronts them or the total burning of the town.

No one knows however how the town with the people really did get surrounded. Efforts very very

desperate efforts are made 2789 and have been made to reach them and though they can be seen pleading for deliverance it is impossible to give them aid as the terrific unusual heat drives them back and also the choking smoke. Their supply of food is limited if not wholly exhausted and starvation if not a more terrible fate confronts them all.

To add to the horror the oil tanks are burning fiercer than ever, gradually but steadily the smoulders are spreading and if the smoulder increases a wave of smouldering fire will sweep away the doomed victims. Union Vinton town has been destroyed as has 50 Carberry where two hundred and twenty perished.

Many of the inhabitants of the town of Harrisonville are also believed to have been lost but it is impossible to tell the number. In all this part of the conditions are impossible to describe or think of.

Also believing that Kankakee is still facing doom, the remaining population continues in a state of frantic panic just as fast as possible they are leaving by trains or boats. They do not care where they go. All they ask is a means of leaving the place they have come to. Fear will turn sooner or later in a blazing inferno.

2790 Countless numbers of refugees have arrived at Gary Indiana on trains of any road. Two thousand more are expected soon. But none are in a state of poverty because many are almost naked and not one has brought more than the clothes they wear.

They were in such a hurry to get away that they did not stop for anything, leaving nearly everything behind.

Among the homeless ones are many too old or too young to fight for themselves. Some are from threatened country of their homes, or also orphans whose parents were victims to the rage of the smoulders.

Relief commitee has been already formed here and the state and other authorities are doing their utmost to relieve the distress.

Face nations are being disturbed and because of the smoulder cutting off so many roads the supply will not last long. It is probable some of the provisions intended for Kanbakee will not get to come here.

7 ears are prevalent that some sort of firestorm will result. If true the country will be smothered in smoke and the sky has an unendured aspect. We felt

a number of strange unaccountable electric commotion and even though twenty thousand feet away from the smoulder our

very shoes were damaged from the heat of the ground below our feet. A tall iron cross twenty five feet in which stood a hundred feet from the edge of the smoulder has been melted down. Only the base of the masonry on which the cross stood and the lower part of the cross can be seen, but glowing red-hot.

Even where we stood the heat from the distant smoulder was most intense and the whole aspect of the country side was most terrifying. The whole spot was changed with strange electricity which became so violent that we were obliged to retreat.

Our retreat from the smoulder country was much more difficult than coming into it. A blinding glare swept towards us flamed by a breeze and one of us was nearly killed by the blinding heat though that far away. We succeeded in reaching So. Hills on our return after having been four hours near the smoulder under the most dangerous circumstances.

The treat to Kanbakee by the smoulder still on caused and increased so much consternation among the inhabitants that those still who had not left the city were over anxious to do so and large numbers were emigrating to Chicago and Gary from Joliet also where it was estimated 100,000 from Kanbakee and Joliet had already sought shelter.

At 11

Joliet  
Indiana  
Sept 11



2.7.72 During one trip with refugees from Kambakoo an ILL Central engineer of a local which did go towards Chicago noticed that all the formerly cultivated land between Kambakoo and Morris, Grande Kambakoo River, and many gold also burning had been completely destroyed.

The inhabitants of those towns are suffering severely but they had not yet determined to abandon their localities, are trying to conquer the fires to save their towns, and efforts are being made to supply them with provisions.

That local engineer also reports that as it approached near Haute the thickness of the smoke coming from the smoulders yet so far distant caused those of the population of Haute to hastily evacuate the place. A short flight of the Illinois Central took into its box cars about 6,150 of the refugees of the neighborhood of a town whose name is not exactly known.

It was estimated that about three million in all had left all smoke smoldered town cities and farmlands for all sections of the extreme northwestern part of the Country.

I saw terrible night terrifying sights in the hospital at Charleston which was once a big great University. The men felt those have been salvaging the few last wood of the tornado smoldering and feeling them up like wood

BAD TASTE

is staked in a big city lumber yard. We saw several men who were literally burned to pieces but were still living. They were some of Daniel Jones fire fighters who were trapped near Morris. The whole side of one man's face was gone but his right was still preserved. Also among the patients were Charles Curtis Evansville of So. Salls and John Gerald Becknell of So. Salls also who were both leaders of the wheat fire fighters.

They were terribly burned but were bearing their suffering bravely. Their bodies were scarred and seared by the red hot conflagration flames. However they will always have the proud record of having saved some little girl from her burning home in the path of the inferno.

She was at the hospital too, and presented a most pathetic figure. The child was most terribly burned. The end of her nose was burned off and her face and neck were disfigured. Both arms chest and one whole leg to the foot were fearfully burned also her back and belly.

She was greatly distressed of the fact that her parents in her Chicago were not notified of her condition.

I live at 1500 Webster Street Chicago the little girl said who she said her name was Jenny Hopton. We came away from there

2794 on a Chicago Rock Island train  
and was going to Houston Texas  
where mamma was born. They  
went back for grandmother and left  
me with my grown sister

Margaret. On the way we were at Morris.  
On the morning of the awful oil  
tank explosion and fire we were at  
breakfast when there was a sound  
like booming thunder and the  
convulsion knocked us off our chairs  
by our table.

I caught hold of my sister  
and she took me in her arms  
and carried me out of our suddenly  
burning house close to the big  
tank fire. The heat of the burning  
oil tanks set our clothes on fire  
and my sister tried to beat the  
fire out on me.

My sister fell down and some  
men carried her away. Then she  
and myself were brought here.

I don't want to die - I hope I am  
not going to die, but if I have  
to die I want my mamma  
and my mamma to come before  
I do and papa and Grandma  
too.

The only friend the child has  
besides her parents and grandmother  
is her elder sister Margaret,  
who is a very capable woman.  
She does not know what to  
do with little Jimmy. He sits  
waiting for the coming of the  
parents and grandmother.

The doctor says the little girl  
will recover and will probably  
be terribly disappointed all  
her life.

Her elder sister who so unselfishly

protected her little charge. 2795  
is more badly burned than the  
little girl. But she too will live.

Because of the increase of the spread  
of the smoulder northeast it is  
still feared that an explosion will  
occur among the thousands of high  
explosives stored in these long  
rows of explosive filled racks  
on trains.

And horrors there are only  
a mile away from Kanabek.

And the exodus continues another  
party from these numbering nearly  
2500 people left last afternoon  
for Gary and other places.

There with 1500 who have gone  
to Gary and many others who  
have sought refuge as far as  
Bloomington has considerably  
lessened the population. Moreover  
3000 have gone to Lincoln. All  
Lincoln all overcrowding that small  
city where three thousand refugees  
have assembled before.

Most of the shops are closed  
because of the flight of employees  
and also because of the large  
quantities of supplies of all kinds  
which have now reached Kan-  
Kakee for free distribution.

And my news paper correspond-  
ent Partners climbed to the summit  
of Wicher Castle hill toward night  
the first night after the smoulder  
began. As far as you could see  
east to west, and to the north  
all the territory was covered with  
flaming and densely smoking fire.

begin die

die a year  
later  
- mother  
not if died  
sheds the  
skilled me  
in apph

ocean in a state of terrific and wild ebullition like a vast lake or sea of molten lava seeming at times to roll to and fro its fiery surges and flaming billows.

This smoulder presented itself as a tremendous volcanic panorama the effect of which was most greatly augmented by the constant hissing of the vast furnace.

Probably not counting cities like Moscow and Chicago, also of Richmond during the last stages of the American Civil War, this is the greatest destruction on record of all times, and especially the great ever-headed smoulders.

Even still now a immense canopy of smoke cloud hangs over the city as far as even extreme Southern Canada. A preternatural smoke which smothered towns and cities which obscures the sun as far as Benton Harbor across the Lake covers all Michigan as far as Lake Huron over which it seems it cannot rise.

During the time of the first conflagration many explosions of scattered munition occurred like most enormous bombshells and hurled away like projectile masses of burning wheat and all other objects in the neighborhood.

Great explosion also occurred among the immensely blown burning wrecks and houses.

A most serious of this kind occurred among burning wheat about three hundred yards away from the burning wreckage.

A crowd of fire fighters, under Captain Green were cutting down the masses of the high roof on the

path of the fence fire other were carrying off the wheat when suddenly the whole section of wheat field earth and all rose up like a gigantic volcanic eruption and burst with a loud and inevitable tremendous crash daring forth in every direction immense clouds of smoke and volleys of burning clumps of wheat and broadside of clouds of ground, volleys of stones and other debris and even fragments of trees and their branches.

Everything was destroyed by this most terrible explosion acres of wheat trees far distant farm houses and distant cultivated ground and so on and it is said that two hundred and thirty nine fire fighters who were knocked down or flung about by the concussion perished immediately or in the space of an hour.

The disaster was occasioned by a number of munitions flying together at that spot in the field by the tornado and which exploded with all the force of a hundred thousand tons of dynamite.

This explosion shook the houses in cities and towns from St. Louis to Kansas to such a degree as to alarm the inhabitants and drive them out into the streets.

Many windows were broken roofs shaken loose and as I have seen walls cracked by the concussion of the air by that explosion.

Desolation absolute fire ruin and flaming destruction

2798 and death that is this world  
remoulds them. In the world's  
history since mankind was a  
part of it there has never been  
an extinction of wheat fields  
as in this part of Illinois.  
In more than two days ago  
this was destroyed and turned into  
a monstrous remoulder.

It was through the courtesy  
of the authorities of So. Pass that  
passage was given from there to  
the edge of the inferno.

The government local train  
and a party of newspaper men  
besides officials to the danger zone.

When we arrived within a mile  
and a half of the remoulder the  
locomotive engineer said:

If the instant remoulders be-  
come threatening, I shall blow the  
whistle and you must act  
immediately for if you delay a  
mudslide of cloud and gases may  
sweep towards you and annihilate  
you.

We had been in this dangerous  
territory perhaps an hour and a half  
the party widely scattered every man  
for himself when a half a dozen  
sharp calls from the locomotive  
whistle caused us to look towards  
the remoulder.

A most thunderous darkness  
was rolling across the sky.

From new stretches of remoulders  
near at hand were gusting smoke  
and flame.

Other clouds were rising from  
sunken sunken fields and the  
stretches of new remoulders.

2799 that reached from the main  
ones, ones, arrived as well the firing  
of most enormous armies.  
Indeed the spectacle except for the  
gloom that fell lower and lower  
across the heavens suggested nothing  
so much as vast long lines of  
troops many miles in length and  
in many columns or divisions fighting  
their way into the sky.

A wide long haze began to spread  
over the fields bringing a sulphur  
and irritant smell of some thing  
like sulphur, wheat and heat. It  
was time to be off. We did not stay on  
the order of our going. It is alleged one  
of us cleared twenty feet on the first  
bound leaping across a road blundering  
over cut down wheat strewn in piles  
over the fields, ploughing still grown  
wheat, shrouded by the distant heat.  
We made for the railroad bed  
where the train was waiting  
for us.

The company had no roomer got on  
the train than for some unknown reason  
two new remoulders flared out where  
some of the men had been exploring  
and the drift of yellow haze  
grew thicker.

Something unknown caused the  
remoulder to smoke yet more  
vehemently and hundred of smaller  
rolling clouds gave an effect of  
great volcanic activity, or making  
them like entrances to hell.

As we passed by the fields  
you might look for wheat fields

2800 in vain. "Torno me ciao"  
"Where are the fields?" But you see no  
fields. Only a smouldering inferno as  
far as eye can reach. You mean  
that big cloud of smoke which  
more than any other thing sug-  
gests a whole endless country side  
in a violent volcanic eruption.  
Beautiful extensive wheat fields  
and other high growing crops as grain  
barley rye and so on.  
There is no such thing, only a long  
wide inferno.

Yet it seems for the time  
being the fright which shook  
Kankakee on the day the second  
main conflagration is still worse  
because of the smouldering. People are  
still trying to leave the city.  
All shops are closed, dry good stores  
and others also.

Windows and doors in all of  
the best houses are boarded up.

Two things are now sign-  
ificant beyond belief. Hourly  
services of churches of all religions  
begin at early morning. The  
interiors are draped in mourning  
and the bells clang at frequent  
intervals.

You would say perhaps that  
because nations mass prayers  
in Catholic churches and all were  
said so often the congregations  
would be small, but no there  
are being large attendances  
and a democratic one - negro-  
labor police officers, sailors  
from river boats, sugar  
fellows secured in from the  
country and officials of the  
city who carry themselves

with a certain elegance 2800  
and conform to rich man's fashions.  
Where people are on their knees  
and there is earnestness in their  
petitions. More earnestness  
than their worship has shown for  
many years.  
Yes this at all times of threatened  
disaster. And in the school buildings  
in the middle of the city the  
refugees are quartered dirty, crowded  
not depressed and unhappy for if  
the torch of the conflagration hangs  
over them at least they are all getting  
food.

Besides these immigrants who are  
turning into the streets finding real  
reassurance in the company of their  
fellows there are others who are be-  
ginning camps a month beyond the  
city of Kankakee.

The frightened people turn with  
trust to their lay and clerical leaders  
priests and so on. The only danger  
is that of so great an influx of  
the panic stricken into this  
city, unprepared city as to menace  
the health of both newcomers  
and remaining residents defying  
the fire threat.

At the hospital here it does  
not look as if any type of person  
would trade on the misery of  
his fellows. The ill and fire  
injured are well treated on all  
circumstances allows and their con-  
ditional is favorable. Those who  
are being discharged are finding  
their way out of the city and  
are seeking safety in Chicago.

2801 yet every thing reflected the alarm that is felt at this most unprecedented cataclysm. In fact in Chicago and other places intense heat is said to be increasing but what the people insist is most unusual is that to this amazing heat is added a willing scorching humidity four times of a hot New York August.

Along the outside of Kankakee along the edge of some railroad line at night were twinkling a score of fires, and dark figures flitted to and fro against them. These were the refugees preparing supper. They are quartered in a country school house and in a country botanical experiment station very near by crowded in on beds, mattresses and on the floor, and cooking in the air a throng of ragged men half dressed women and naked children who are chattering scolding squalling gathering eagerly about the visitors to learn any fresh news about the conflagration and to beg a penny.

There are few outward signs of grief. No one has lost friends or relations or bereaved of families. No one can say that the air is of dull resignation. Rather it is a haze. They do not realize what is happening. They have passed through fire and the turbid hot air and smoke and sense of rapidly are still strange to them. Ignorant and slow of understanding they are and they are emerge from this calamity

like men in dreams. It is 2802 doubtless marks an undeveloped mind in the people of Kankakee and refugees that few if any had been made insane by the awfulness of their experience.

Their sufferings are chiefly of the body and there are endured with a will like patients that is most wonderful to a person made supersensitive to the refinements of city and country life.

Step across to the tent hospital and note the silence and resignation there. These tents have been pitched to the railroad road bed to get air and to escape flies and mosquitoes. Their sides are drawn up for breeze free access of the breeze and the lots are arranged with feet toward the central pole.

All the patients are burned or scorched fire fighters or those of heat prostration or overcome by smoke. There are young and old in the company but no rich or poor. All are burned fire fighters and so on. It is to most of these men this care and tenderness is a new wonderful experience.

The doctors go from one to another with a cheery reassuring word and a smile that are worth more than medicine. As the cotton and bandages are ripped and peeled from the raw flesh the patients wince and sometimes tremble with the pain but there is no outcry no yell, moan or word of complaint not a sign of weariness.

2803 not a groan though some of them to morrow may be carried from the place and lowered in to the earth out there where the grave diggers is laying his line of double trenches long lines filled in at one end as he lengthens them at the other.

There were injured fire fighters there too from the big explosion with slightly fractured skulls crushed skulls broken legs deep lacerations and big bruises and some even worse. But those who were burned the flesh has been seared and baked, the skin has been peeled off in strips, ears have been nearly roasted from the heads, eyes have been half blinded, arms and legs chests and necks are deeply swelled in swelled in cotton or gauze.

A few relatives a wife a son, are visiting the tents and sit beside the sufferers, as still and as patient and fan them or pass water to them from time to time.

Especially vivid are the recitals of the victims in the burned men main hospital at Chester Brown, the once big University building at the north southeast end of the town where Ruggles and Daniel Jones now are.

It would need a Vedder or a Goya to paint the scene at night when the burned and injured settling in their cots or low hospital beds their burners almost black skins the blueness against the sheets and

2804  
gown suggest mummies in their winding sheets. They were ware their bandaged arms and nod their bandaged heads, their eyes shone in the light of the patients wards or the light of the ragtag and the rooms and the smaller rooms that bobtail of the smaller rooms that has stolen in to hear the sad narrative for the hundredth time stands fixed as graven images and listens in awe.

Says one a negro at 11 o'clock we lost in the run. A thick cloud of fire rushed towards us and when it came close we burned.

When the flames got within a hundred yards of us the air is so hot - so hot - I burn, even all in my throat.

Oh God how I burn in the throat. I want water, but there ain't no water and some of them died. I almost died too for I am all on fire in the inside and I lay down on the road between the wheat and can't move untill rescuers carry me away to the railroad train.

The people in Cambridge closed their doors and windows and prayed. The smoke came in suffocating quantities bringing an awful heat that penetrated the houses and buried the city in midnight darkness. The people crowded into their attic shelters but were half stifled by the smoke fumes.

2806 It seemed a great bunch of strange fire swept by and as some windows were opened the air rushed violently out as though a vacuum had been created outside.

Some were saved, though with arms, legs, and head terribly scorched and flayed, while others inhaled the burning heat and smoke and died. Those who survive tell of the dreadful thirst that was upon them, a thirst they could not slacken till they staggered down to the river.

Because of the far reaching smolder heat there is little vegetation but it is withering fast.

All farm animals are starving. Goats and sheep are bleating most pitifully for their foliage is withered by the far reaching heat and those that can are wandering southward to other farms where things still grow.

Just southeast or straight south of Kamkakee are dozens of large hospital tents all filled with burned survivors of fire fighters and attended by volunteer surgeons from Kamkakee and hospital stewards. The doctors say that even numbers of refugees died from the stifling far reaching heat, even entering Kamkakee last evening we encountered a throng of people gathered about the doors of relief stations with picnic boxes and baskets

big or small. They were 2806 refugees of all ages and both sexes and they displayed or disclosed the admirable patience that is shown in the hospitals.

They were smoke driven refugee applicants for relief. The food that has been distributed is mostly bread ~~corned~~ canned meat, corn, cauliflowers, flour and salt fish, besides cheese and milk. In the stricken district outside the city the people must rely for a time on stores.

There are not one soldier in this city and only a handful of police or plain clothes men. There is no thieving and the behavior of the populace and refugees is excellent better than the behavior of an equal number of Chicago citizens would be under the like circumstances.

Every body is behaving themselves most beautifully. Yet at this evening too nearly a thousand of the refugees who are quartered in and about the supply houses on the main street were conversing them with Methodist hymns, seated and standing in the windows and gathered on the streets they waited a leader.

Some strong voice would begin "Jesus lover of my soul, blessed assurance, 'Thell be glory for me are you weary a heavy hearted 'or 'Heaven my God to Thee Thee and in a moment all the others would be joined in harmony. The musical



2807 skill of these people is  
wonderful. We loved the way  
they sang my Mother's Bible song  
kindly light. Back of eyes meet  
mother in the skies and where is  
my wandering boy to night.  
There is no false chord  
a sharp or flatted intonation.  
All who were singing were  
colored folks, some whites, but  
few.

nobody had singing lessons  
nobody had heard anything about  
correct breathing or method. All  
sing from the chest and the  
head. The alto carried by boys  
of more or less years and girls  
too who do not know how  
to sing. The music from a prescription  
is startling, fine and true like  
child angels singing.

I hate to say this, but it is  
proven true by any measure  
of experience negro singers are  
far better singers than whites,  
especially by the sound of  
their voices.

Though the snore was still  
strong light shone on through a  
dense smog the music was one  
element to make this a perfect  
August night. And think what this  
comfort of song means to a  
people so bereft so lost so  
terrified.

at the close of all the High Mass  
in all of the Roman Catholic churches  
throughout the whole United States even  
since the tornado to have fine  
calamity. began funeral psalm  
and the 3 for the souls in purgatory

2808  
chant and prayer for the  
dead and suffering burned and  
wounded were said especially also  
for the dead in memory of those  
greater number who perished in the  
chesterton zimmerman and chesterton  
tornado disaster and conflagration horrors.  
The congregations were so large and  
the churches so crowded that long wide  
rows of lines waited to get in at the  
next masses.

At a special service held in the  
church of Notre Dame in Chicago the  
Cardinal, I forget his name, first pronounced  
absolution and then to the congregation  
it was announced that  
it was known that the four men  
who started the world record breaking  
conflagration belonged to St Peter's  
Catholic Church in Lincoln Ill and  
were Catholics.

Because of their way of bringing up  
of their boys who were four brothers  
they are fully responsible what kind  
of men they became. The four  
as well as their parents from now on  
are excommunicated from the church by  
the Pope's decree. Their excommunication  
is so severe they're barred from the  
church and mass and all sacraments  
and well if not repentant receive  
no mass for the dead nor Christian  
burial. All Catholic church with the  
priests of all will be notified of  
their excommunication. At this announcement  
all in the congregation clapped  
their hands.

Appropriate services of all these  
victims were held in all churches of all  
other religions throughout the  
whole Christian world and collections

2804 To aid the sufferers were taken  
up. Many of all churches no  
matter what the Religion was even  
arranged a adventist loved in their prayer  
for the rain to come and quench the  
smouldering terror. St Peter Pray for  
us. St Peter pray for us. But  
the prayers if offered to the Saint  
seemed absolutely ineffectual as  
opposed to the wrath of the smoulder  
which after its third day is spreading  
inward the north, northeast, and  
east and still no rain.

Is there truly an inefficiency of  
petitioned prayers? It seems so. It  
is claimed by many that such  
an awful upsurging heat of the  
smoulder should cause a violent  
conflict between the heat and  
cold air and form a severe rain-  
storm about it and put itself  
out.

But no such thing is happening,  
it does not seem as if it is  
going to happen. Yet I suppose it  
is God's will.

I had on the morning of the  
day the river checked the progress  
of the second big fire crowd. One  
went, and there was also a  
main St. Louis religious procession  
with music and holy images  
and banners and large companies  
had been gathering for that.  
Especially in this time of serious  
trouble and anxiety and these  
actions learning early. Masses are  
going to the later service and  
better prepared for death than  
they could have been at any  
other time. A large statue of  
Christ flung in the field near

ly by the tornado has broken <sup>2805</sup>  
and scorched near the edge of the <sup>2810</sup>  
smoulder. The other churches have  
their complement of worshippers also  
but social and official life has not  
and is not being awakened. How  
hard it is to realize that there is  
life at all.

Despite its own peril Kankakee  
being the remotest place from both  
the main conflagration and the following  
smoulder that work burn out but gets  
worse and is spreading. is the  
objective point of the smoke and heat  
driven emigrants.

The State government is keeping  
the people to remove to places of  
safety from the smog, the various  
freight trains and loads bringing  
to as far as Gary a hundred or  
more three times a day from the  
Kankakee were refugees come in the  
other terrified Kankakee citizens go  
out, and taking relief supplies on  
the journey up the road.

3000 Three thousand five hundred  
people have left Kankakee for  
Chicago or even Milwaukee a few  
at Evanston but more seeking  
the southern cities.

They assemble twice a day for  
supplies and are supposed to receive  
enough for three meals. Freight  
bracket rice sugar sweet corn and  
rye bread canned meat and tomatoes  
are the staples and there is milk  
for the children doubtless from  
local herds. In the common  
buildings of Kankakee the women

2811 children and infants occupy the top story and the men and the older children and teens on the two floors below. They are as comfortable as they were in the towns over whelmed by the smoke they fled from.

The world has no other sight like this in Illinois to say.

When you see the extensive smouldering fires in the south in early morning of its third day with its smoke clouds of various hues as if the spirits of upals were dwelling there, or you see it as in the gloom of a vast landscape violent eruption, it is strange and insubstantial no less than immeasurably distant a chaos of wild form something aside from nature.

The great smoke clouds does not issue in quick uprising gusts but rises high extensively suddenly opening into great prodigiously great rolls of cloud as far as you can from southwest to north east or north as if a whole extensive country side was a vast volcanic eruption. It changes color showing black a dazzling white among a gray then a dirty yellow or brown.

A strange very singular phenomenon.

Yet to my mind the most interesting point about this country wide smoulder is the fact that the southern country side land of smoke rising up so high from

the smoulder in a upward 2812 vertical direction, while through the breezes at a lower elevation the lower part of the smoke wall takes a broad long horizontal shoot or north-eastern spread and while it is too early yet to attempt a definite sort of explanation of this singular phenomenon, I am inclined to believe that the main country wide cloud is rolling - to a very great unexplained unknown height while southwesterly breezes spread the lower part of the cloud northward and on deflected in a horizontal direction.

This action is like a blow pipe effect and spread the smoke northeast over so much of the northeastern north and eastern states and across the lake. This is the reason of the almost eastern country wide smog.

The intense heat of this slow blow pipe spread also so far north that the temperature everywhere is almost like an African tropical climate and humidity.

The complete annihilation of all these countless wheat growing farms, the principal centre of wheat commerce in this part of Illinois is being unique in one particular so far as all farming history is concerned.

It cannot be pronounced the most destructive of wheat and other fields of high crops among the catant ravages resulting from unusual natural causes. It caused by far of the most derelish men that ever

1813 were created or lived. The number of wheat fields burned by the two conflagrations not counted with the area spreading round them are computed conservatively at nearly 75,000.

Considerably fewer districts were lost through great forest fires or city fires like those of Moscow or Chicago if we may judge from the number of districts destroyed.

Considerably more wheat fields and fields of other high crop perished on the steppe than which consumed this section of steppes, than wheat was destroyed in the other three fires put together.

Considerably more miles and miles of wheat fields perished on the other hand in this conflagration which destroyed the country side from near Jeminsk all the way near to Karakum than any other conflagration on record.

And what renders the fire tragedy a "suicide" is the specially appalling quickness with which the work of destruction was completed despite the savage furious efforts of all the forces fire fighters to even try and check it.

Counter firing the first one did no good as then it changed only into such a fierce wind round as to burn that all new and second round that all hell couldn't stop and brought on a huge casualty among the fighting men and some of their highest and best officers killed. Mr. Dargun says the loss

cannot yet be estimated. But may 28/4 may be three thousand in killed, more or less severely burned, heat prostration or smoke inhalation.

About 6.0 M. four night ago a fierce conflagration enveloped 80 miles of country territory within two day and five hours and then when all seemed over came more extensive rounders.

We repeat that so far as history accepted as authentic is concerned there is no record of a catastrophe equally sudden and decisive. And other things to boot it is impossible to name even my life to describe how angry are every body in the nation are against those four men. Here is one proof of it. The prisoners were secretly removed from Lung gung put on the train coming from New York and spirited away.

The train arrived at the station of the city of Evangelista which is said to have a small strong prison. Usually crowds come to the station to watch trains come and go. But here was a most unusually large crowd and every one was armed with every thing you can think of and the towns mayor was at the head.

To the guards of the handcuffed prisoners the mayor said:

"I'm sorry but you can't put on bring your prisoners to this town prison. In the mob there won't let you. You'll have to take them somewhere else. They're too unworthy for our prison or town."

2815 A dispatch from Buffalo reports the same train made an unsuccessful attempt to unload the prisoners at the station there where also an armed mob was encountered. They could not communicate with any of the authorities of the city. The mob at the station were so threatening that the engineers dared not stop long and quickly pulled out with the terrified prisoners still on the train.

The train then put back going backwards to the station but it was impossible to get back to the station. It encountered a mob on the tracks of its rear. They attempted to parley with the assembled all armed to no avail.

"No no" they yelled "you are not letting them derail off here. Take them away. Get out of here. If they put the train well lunch them"

They pulled away fast

The train made on. When near Delaware Ohio there was a great crowd near there. Prisoners were coming.

It was impossible to get over close to the town. In front the tracks were littered with trees and other wreckage. They left and proceeded to Columbus but it found it impossible to proceed. It received an attack on the train to try it.

The train returned to Delaware but again found the same result. The train put back and steamed away on another route. Near the town of Springfield Ohio the train encountered a large mob carrying all sorts of weapons. To the north however the entire territory of the country

to the surprise of the guards 2821

appeared clearly visible and 2816 no mob. When they were close to Springfield the train passed on another line to the windward to a along the east and saw no sign of a throng of people. It was believed that every person were assembled on the stations.

"See what you fellows get for what you've done?" said one of their guards. "For suddenness, completeness and extent of it because of your revenge on that farmer. This appears to surpass all disasters recorded in a long history. No town will let us even set foot on the platform of any station." One of them says "we don't think it would go that far."

That's no excuse the mischief is done" said the guard.

Despite being beset by imminent and terrible danger the party of officers and the four prisoners from the train seemed to have the chance to get off at the station at Dayton Ohio. Hoping to bring the prisoners to a train for Chicago.

Advised to persuade the prisoners to the mercy of a coming mob and save themselves the men who were in possession of the prisoners refused to do so.

With steam up the train stood ready to run as soon the guards and prisoners could get on board. Finally the brave guard were forced to make all speed for the train. They were barely in time.

As the train got well under way a crowd came up to the station yet later on despite the threatening

2817 aspect of the city and its hostile inhabitants it was determined to make another attempt to bring the prisoners to some station. Dayton Prison. By permission for the sake of the news, I accompanied the party of well armed officers and the prisoners.

The prisoners did not at all look as mean or brutal as they are. And they looked very very apprehensive. Six stalwart officers stepped to the station platform. We saw a column of men head for the station.

Directing his men to make all haste back to the train the lieutenant of them turned aside to give warning to his party which still had left the prisoners on the prison car.

"On God, take boys get to the train quickly if you would save your lives" he gasped. "The mob soon will be upon us."

Then the loud siren whistle of the engine which was in the road ahead screamed a warning and without cessation the engine whistle kept blowing.

Then as I looked backward a column of men were near us and as rapidly as possible we made for the train. It was with great difficulty that the party was taken on board the coach but it was accomplished swiftly and just in time.

Stright out from the station ran the train followed by the yell of demon demons and hoots of the mob who ran after the train until it left them far behind. There had been more hostility here than the other towns.

to the surface of the ground 2874

2820

have to abandoned. Beyond the station

Where could they bring the prisoners 2818 Chicago was mentioned. Yet an attempt was made for Indianapolis Indiana but conclusion there were so threatening that the engineer dared not run his prison train nearer than five miles but had to leave without at least trying to do something it was brought into the city by another route at night. A worker at the station said to the conductor.

"You had better pull out of this station. he called to the conductor. "They'll know why you here. They won't permit you to even land those prisoners on this station platform. It's better get out of here and pull out as fast as you can."

"Oh you are just a little scared about us" a official replied "There is no need as we can see to flee this station. No body knows we are here at this time of night."

"It's better to be safe than sorry" said the man loading his truck. "All towns know of it from being being to way Smith to New Orleans. The place will let you get off at their stations with those prisoners. You'll see."

"Then where can we take them?"  
"Back to being being."  
"They're in danger of being lynched there."  
"I'm sorry but I can't save them." said the man.

of the great mob there in about the prison. These four men.

2819

Finally towards midnight in spite of the great danger the engineer was given the go ahead signal and the prisoners train went on ahead toward the station in the local track.

At first they seemed to have the advantage for there was no crowd or number of persons of any threatening aspect anywhere.

The six guard officials were divided into two squads of three men each.

One under Sergeant George Miller got off at the main station and went to the ticket agent to inquire where the prison was.

"Who have you got on your train?" he was asked.

When told the agent answered: "You can't do it my friend. There's a big big crowd by the station where the prison is. They won't let you bring them there, and they're armed with all sorts of weapons. Don't go there. They won't let you through."

The guard returned to the coach and the engineer pulled out of the station. Finally the distance was covered but at the end it was discovered that after all the attempt would

to the surprise of the guards 2820

2820

have to be abandoned. Beyond the station to the south a great crowd had gathered. It was with great difficulty that the train passed through the threatening assemblage but it was accomplished rapidly especially as the train went on faster without stopping.

Straight out of the station ran the train while all stern men, women and elder children watched it pass with threatening and decided gestures, hostile but yet the grandest and most awe inspiring sight ever witnessed by any one before.

Yet as the train increased its speed no hostile move was made though those in the crowd shouted threats, imprecations, yells of derision and warnings. No attempt however was made to stop the train.

When the train was beyond the apparent danger zone an observation was taken. Then the engineer switched to another rail line. Then as it went it was run close where the prison was supposed to be without courting danger.

The four prisoners were in great fright at the sight of the great mob there in about the prison. These four men



2821 became panic stricken. They fell upon their knees and begged the men guarding them to take them back to being, and away from the destruction which they feared was about to fall upon them from the waiting crowd.

They were in hysterics, not one of the four but was in tears. Under the circumstances the presence of 7 rapid and bravery of their guards was really worthy of the greatest praise. They refused to give up trying to reach the prison.

"If we do" one of them said "the prisoners will die with us." The fellow had spirit enough to greet this sentiment with a cheer. It was heart-rending. As rapidly as possible the train made its way near the prison. Half a mile was covered in this manner, even here from the distant far distant across the heat coming up here was comprehension, and made respiration hard labor.

Finally the distance was covered and at the end it was discovered that after all the prisoners could not be brought here though after all the crowd did not appear meaning but only strangely curious.

All eyes watched the stopping train. The circumstance was also a grand and most awe inspiring sight ever

to the surprise of the guards 2822 witnessed by man. Yet none of them appeared armed with anything. They only had pleading and distressed looks.

Two important looking men stepped out from the crowd. One who turned out to be the Mayor said,

"From being informed I know whom you have on the train. Maybe most of our people on this spot are almost unconcerned about this matter but all the hearts here are. I have a heart. Bring your prisoners some where else please. On all the prisoners here will go on a prison note. Please go away. Have a heart."

Straight out of the city ran the train.

"See what you got yourselves into" said one of their guards. "We can't bring you any where. We'll try Chicago next. If that won't do you may have to be exiled on some island. No one wants you any where."

of the Quimbri, owner and manager of a vast farm on plantation six miles from the lawning which lay that far northwest of the conflagration reached La Salle with his family on a Rock Island local from Keokuk. To the correspondent of a Chicago Tribune he told the story of a man's escape from death.

"The first great conflagration had given warning of the awful destruction that was to come" he said but we did not know there were munitions

judge as  
confirmed  
for you

category  
speechy  
protected  
/const.



2823 among the burning fields  
It was a little before nine thirty  
in the morning of its second  
day that the main awful blast  
came. I was in one of the fields  
of my estate when in the fields  
some distance away rose a great  
black cloud which rose high in  
the air and had that peculiar  
roll as from a most big explosion  
of dynamite.

Everything fell or was scattered  
far and wide over the still un-  
burned fields. It flung everything  
with a rapidity that made it  
impossible for anything to escape  
it. From the bottom of the  
cloud came explosion that  
sounded as though all the masses  
of the world were in the fiercest  
gun duel on all record.

I was fixed I stood not  
knowing in what direction to  
fly. And it is impossible for  
me to tell how long I stood  
there inert. Probably it was a few  
minutes but so vivid were my  
impressions that it now seems  
as though I stood as a spectator  
for many minutes.

What seemed to come down  
from the top of the cloud  
was like fire and brimstone.  
The shock it is said overthrew  
many houses in Morris Ottawa  
Moline and so on and my  
estate mansion was a shambles.

I still stood and looked towards  
the scene of the mighty  
explosion and toward all the land  
and its fields of grain and the  
its smoke went up as the  
smoke of a most vast furnace  
like big rolling smoke of

to the surprise of the guards 2824

the big explosion still remained  
like a huge high thunder head and  
refused to lose its rolls right away.  
like the smoke of a dynamite ex-  
plosion does.

This was like a sudden volcanic  
eruption which destroyed in one night  
the cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum.

At the time of this convulsion  
white hot clouds of burning wheat  
were hurled every where and fell  
in fiery showers upon the wheat  
fields a vast tract of country com-  
prising the four cities and some  
land to the south of them were violently  
shaken and many buildings overthrown  
by the air concussion.

The whole aspect of the district is  
altered. The whole country is covered  
with blazing fields the hamlets  
and villages have been involved  
in the cataclysm. Every thing near by  
was upheaved by the explosion  
A large sheet of water filled the  
water dug by the explosion.

The record of this mighty  
munition explosion will be  
known some will be preserved  
by the living and spoken traditions  
of all the world relating how a  
large lake of water was formed  
in wheat fields by the most  
terrible explosion of munition on  
air record and how how in  
four cities had been partially wrecked  
by ground and air concussion.

But if popular traditions  
has not been yet forthcoming  
the aspects of the country will  
show that it had suffered from some  
terrible munition explosion caused by

rolling in the  
glass. The  
direction of  
the explosion  
by the  
the

the  
the  
the

2825 the conflagration igniting  
the explosives many tons must  
must have blown up at one  
time.

At the time of the explosion  
I felt myself drawn into some  
thing like a strange mysterious  
vortex. The mysterious force almost  
flattened the still unburned fields  
almost leaving a flat field fif-  
teen yards wide and more than a  
thousand yards long.

When I recovered possession  
possession of my senses I ran to  
my ruined mansion and collected  
the members of my family  
fortunately very unharmed all of  
whom were panic stricken.  
I hurried them to the station  
where we boarded the first com-  
ing train in which we made  
the trip in safety to So  
Sale.

My estate of fields were on  
fire while we were still in  
sight of it.

From Indianapolis Indiana  
we rode in the afternoon of  
August 1st but did not dare stop there.

The four prisoners were still very  
uneasy and apprehensive. The  
sky and atmosphere was terribly  
smoke fogged and the sun was  
darkened. Everything was a mass  
of smog, when we were about  
eight miles of Logansport Indiana  
the dark smog grew worse and  
thicker.

It darkened the sun. Partial  
darkness came upon us and the  
four prisoners on board the  
train was badly frightened.  
You ought to be frightened and retorted

to the surprise of the guards 2826  
you caused all this by setting the  
farmers fields on fire.

After the stories we have heard  
and the sights we have seen  
of the burning fields we did not  
know but that we ourselves were  
to danger from by all this smoke.  
"Crowd on steam" the guard  
signaled to the engineer and he  
needed no urging.

Slowly we drew away through a  
suffocating atmosphere and at last  
the air was clearing somewhat.

We came to the station at Joliet  
Illinois but we could not get rid of  
the prisoners there either though  
there was no threatening mob to  
hinder us. The city Mayor would not  
allow it. Here too was a dense smog  
so thick you could hardly see  
a hundred feet.

The train then ran from Joliet  
through ten miles of smoke to Chicago  
that was so dense that there on the  
prison train was almost suffocated.

For more than a quarter of an hour  
the train engine had to be left  
to its own guidance. Nearing the  
Great New York Central Station we  
received a message from someone that  
the passage was impossible, not from  
hostile crowds but crowds waiting for  
train to take them out of the city  
away from the smoke.

Nevertheless we proceeded on our way  
but slowly. We saw great crowds  
crowds who were coming towards  
the station in every direction  
and crowding tracks and platform.  
Great quantities of smoke were

Frank

Op

Issued  
4/11

no more  
events  
in the  
city  
at the  
capital

May  
11/11

1877 were in the air like a  
shroud thus obscuring every-  
thing. Because of the crowd it  
was impossible to get close to  
the station. We backed up and  
got on another line the main  
road of the Pennsylvania through  
the shroud but reaching  
Chicago station of that route  
found it impossible because of  
the crowd.

Some wanted to get on our  
train but we had only one  
coach and seeing it was a prison  
train were afraid to board it.

We returned back to the  
New York Central station but  
there was the same result. The  
multitude of people had redoubled  
even the prisoners of the  
county jail and other jails  
had already been taken away  
somewhere.

We tried to go further south  
west on another road but it  
meant suffocation to try it.

We put back and tried  
the Milwaukee and St Paul  
rail road line but there was  
the same result. There was  
nothing to be seen but  
smoke, smoke, and more smoke  
and crowds waiting for trains.

We put put back and  
steamed eastward to Gary  
Indiana. It was virtually im-  
possible to approach the station  
here because of crowd anxious  
to leave for eastern places.  
It was smoky here like Chicago  
too. Such was the unhappy  
condition that the terrified residents  
were compelled to face. It was.

2828  
going to write some of  
them in the coach but the  
guards said no.

"If they find out who the  
prisoners are they may kill  
them" one of the guards said  
coughing. We desperately longed and  
prayed for rain. The heat and  
dryness were unprecedented. It  
hadn't rained since the tornado.

We headed for Michigan city  
and then Detroit before we got  
away from that smoke house.  
From Port Wayne we headed for  
Cleveland.

From there to Pittsburgh  
Pennsylvania. We tried to  
unload the prisoners there. We could  
do so. We tried at Harrisburg and  
then Philadelphia with the same  
result always a menacing crowd at  
the station.

We tried Wilmington Delaware and  
nearly got mobbed. Camden New  
Jersey the same. We tried Baltimore  
Maryland and were glad to get away  
though they threatened to derail the  
train. We tried Jersey city and  
nowhere and had to go for  
haste. The same at Boston.

We then entered the Grand Station  
at New York. No success here  
either. Back to Sing Sing they  
are now unknown to the town  
folk this time.

The smoulder war.

A large force of heavily equipped  
men were employed to try  
and give desperate far ranging  
battle to the western burners  
smoulders which is the first  
one. The force employed  
against it consisted of three score.

2829 Brigades of regular very experienced forest fires of the west come by special trains and the whole militia of John Mearl Manley mine and Stevens well rested fighters and the assembly who said that the smoulder had within the time it started greatly increased not withstanding all the measures that had been desperately concerted for its suppression.

It was to the great terror of all farmers and men of cities and to the manifest weakening and preventing the further increase of the strength of both the smoulders otherwise there was danger of a new big conflagration flaring up.

In this special affair to be in progress at the time of this description was called "the Smoulder War".

The smoulder not yet having been fought because of its far reaching heat was in one way a hotter and more severe inferno than the ordinary conflagration because it burned in so deep and hotly.

It was of extreme heat much more than the flaring swiftly racing conflagration and ten times much more formidable and hotter.

Yet under his leadership leading the various bodies

2830  
of men under Stanley (I was not in this yet) were consolidated into one strong force and thoroughly organized.

He was the religious as well as the military head of his men, a staunch catholic. No new party could be sent forth to fight the fire by the government but he knew it in time to deploy the men safely before the smoulder would spread out in ambush or descend or move forward on the region left unprotected.

His men were always supplied with the right kind of fighting equipment and as his men were perfect and very swift workers never wasted a minute and never rushed a close battle his forces naturally increased their length and width before the slowly advancing smoulder a breach never cut for before in front of the fires.

His men were now never driven back and to the smoulder never gave quarter yet it did seem that it was impossible to tell when the smoulder was defeated in dealing with it, "success" was not purchased by victory and the only one who could obtain the slightest advantage against the smoulders "were St Michael and his highest angels on a long heavy rain given season from that sort of rain was doubtful.

2831. The smoulder was never being held back and yet never took the fighters by surprise though wheat was decimated by long stretches the smoulder increased. For 15 hours this particular was continued unchecked Stanley ruling the smoulders by day and the smoulder by night and hotly too.

The smoulders had every topographical advantage for their shield. Immense possession of the extensive infernal. The smoulders are furnished through and through with thickly grown stony root and deep dry series of white hot stretches here and there.

These white hot stretches vary from 300 yards to two miles in length in the main smoulder the smoulder flames are fifty to a hundred feet high at times and the very edge of the coolest position of the smoulder is absolutely inaccessible and approachable.

The low stony thickly matted roots the deep burning feet are too thickly matted in too thickly grown together lots of inflammable liquid & sap is in them and they also communicate with other inflammable substance forming a sea of fire which it is feared a belated that mat. a long heavy rain could ever

2833. It is not strange strange. I am sure that this period should have pronounced the subjugation of the smoulder a thing more difficult than to obtain a victory on St Michael in a boxing match. Maybe I could enter him, it like to try.

Nothing been when weariness of fighting seemed to have brought about a calling off the fight until something better should turn up.

Near one point of the fighting against the smoulder led by judges who wished to crush that point of the hoard smother an attack of most desperate proportion was made but they were glad to "march" back again as expeditiously as it was possible.

In this attack he was killed. his men most miserably defeated his under officer had to flee for his life amid a perfect panic of the troops in which some sixty or seventy of the troops of nearly fifteen hundred were killed and the rest in danger of being prostration.

The only man who could cope with the peculiar tactics of the smoulder was James Stanley. On one occasion at the night mentioned he led a great volunteer force closer to the smoulder side held nearer than any of the assailants had yet penetrated. After a very unequal

2836 The smoulder was  
leiman

2832 and most exhaustive much  
he brought them within reach  
of an oven like heat and the  
glare of the fire as bright as a  
white hot lava sea.

"So far" said he, pointing to  
the still distant smoulder "we  
may pursue, but no further no  
force can come closer and face  
the fearful heat and fire."

With the greatest difficulty  
I have penetrated five hundred  
and sixty feet farther and no  
one else has gone so far as  
that.

With this was accomplished  
and then my clothes started to  
steam, wet as they were and  
my face felt as if it was  
blistering. There are two other  
ways of getting a little nearer  
to this inferno practicable to  
the most daring of the men,  
but not for any one of me  
or you.

In neither of them though they  
are on the fire's rear can  
we go forward with any  
number of men or equipment  
or fire fighting apparatus.

One of the ways lies to  
the southwestern rear of the  
smoulder inferno and the  
other to the westward where  
the slow breezes are towards  
it. Yet the smoulder will  
take care that neither  
neither of those sectional rears  
are taken by surprise.  
They will now oppose us

the conflagration guards it. 2834  
ering rear of we were there  
and we would advance fifty  
paces the rear would advance us  
of it."

"You mean its like grabbing a  
cobra cobra by the tail" suggested  
John Scanlon.

"Yes in grabbing a rattle snake by  
its tail" yet our men are being held  
together by a remarkable firm faith  
in God and our leaders are kept  
constantly informed of every act  
and purpose of the smoulders.

This "smoulder" was its terror  
its cruelty from the heat its  
slaying of the fighters its burning  
and prostrating them is constituting  
one of the most romantic and  
thrilling features of all type of  
fire fighting history.

On the early night 1961 of  
August slight hopes were held  
by witnesses in consequence of the  
unusual violence of the assault upon  
fields dangerously near the smoulder,  
accompanied by heavy assaults on  
the tall weeds near by.

The assault increased and at  
nine P.M. several of the acres  
were mowed down and men with  
cut lasers began to drive steadily  
forward.

As time progressed the attack  
added by many more men

The change was  
too slow but  
the young could  
do it.

2836 The smoulder was

2835 increased in fury by fear the smoulder would start a third big conflagration. It appeared to have reached its height at quarter after nine but long ere that time approached the work of destruction had commenced, an eye witness during this time says, "The havoc which met the eye contributed to subdue the firmest mind."

The howling and shouting of the men as they worked most desperately, the swishing noise of the descending cutlaser, scythe, rickles and other cutting weapons, the incessant glare of the distant smoulders giving them plenty of light to work by the dismal yell of those too close to the parching heat and driven back the shriek and howl of defiance formed an accumulation of hatred, defiance and mockery too great for human fortitude too vast for human conception.

Those within too close to the heat radiance considered it unsafe to remain in ear so they retreated to the fields further to the rear to avoid being scorched or heat prostrated and continued their hard and swift toil there.

The cattle of some nearby farms had looked far from their folds and their dismal bellowing increased the scene of woe.

2836 The force and fierceness of the work surpassed all conception. When these workers became fatigued, they were relieved by fresh men, while they retired to rest.

The face of nature seemed completely changed not a single acre of wheat or hay even strongly grown or thickly had escaped being cut down.

Near town bridge the grain was already piled in heaps waiting for the wagons not more than 30 acres of grain were still left standing all of which had suffered more loss at the hands of the cutters.

Great high soft weeds were leveled to the ground barley buckwheat and rye shared a similar fate.

"A stretch of grass higher than a man called the 'mole head' to be made into hay was destroyed by fire the men and covered with sand and gravel.

Had it not been for the fierce distant heat that soon became unbearable and drove the men some what further back the total destruction of the fields in this location would have been unavoidable. The fierce radiance of the distant heat by setting their coat clothes to steaming broke the force of the assault which rushed with fearful impetuosity through the fields. Near by a grain field was cut down near a farm house

2836 The smouldering

2837 and barn which by this desperate work combined with the fury of the cutters was soon to be destroyed and thrown wetted down and thrown far to the south end of the barn.

The loss of wheat cut down if having been burned would have been \$6,000,000. yet all was hauled away to safety on long processions of hay wagons and other wagons of all sorts.

By the farmers who kept cut down the wheat most of the live stock and horned cattle were driven to safe places so they will not perish by overwhelming heat and smoke the corn closely grown in and ground provision were made protected by trenching to prevent their destruction or a famine might threaten because of the fire catastrophe.

By the fighting men the cutting destruction continued added by all the farmers at who helped to save where a destruction never accomplished by the Chester town tornado.

Yet for some reason all was confusion and alarm during all this desperate toil and even men during the at last sought to also escape the immense heat which from even that far distant smoulder threatened them severely.

yet despite all this the number of workers increased, accompanied by men with buckets

of water to keep every one of the fighting men clothing soaking wet. As to mention it that way the wheat was cut down in 'torrents' many of the farm houses and even some sugar works on the estate were spared from fires destruction this way and a great number of the smaller houses had branches cut around them.

This was hoped would also spare the other main wheat fields from suffering any consequence of the smoulder. heat should wind begin to blow.

yet this night the continual glow of the smoulder though the smoke was awfully grand and the men worked furiously by the heap of the far reaching reflection.

At ten thirty the temperature rose of the general attack increased because of added reinforcements of men. But they had to be careful nevertheless as for some reason the nearest portion of the smoulder shifted its direction and slowly headed winds them.

The whole territory beyond the smoulder was from time to time illuminated by the incessant glare giving the workers plenty of light to work by but the quivering sheet of blaze was surpassed in brilliancy by strange darts of mysterious electric fire which were exploded in every



2836 The smoulder

2837 direction over the smoulder at this the curiosity of the workers was attracted as the noise of the strange electric fire was peculiar and bewildering. Sometimes the reflection ceased for a few moments because of dense smoke only at a time and in the intervals the blackness in which the territory was enveloped was infernally awful.

Sometimes like fiery meteors were presently seen rising up from the infernally smoulder in particular of a globular form and a deep orange hue was observed to swiftly rise perpendicularly to a vast height with a loud roaring hissing sound of great magnitude.

It then fell evidently by its specific gravity and was not propelled downward by any extraordinary force. It curved so far outward however that on approaching some of the still intact wheat fields it came down with accelerated motion and assumed a dazzling white mass and an elongated form and clashing among the wheat it splashed around in the same manner as melted iron ore would have done and was instantly extinct without doing any harm after all.

In shape and size it appeared much like a very large common bear-burnt.

2840

a few minutes after this the appearance of this mysterious and strange phenomenon the deafening noise from the startled fire-fighters rank to a distant roar and the glare of the smoulder which from the beginning of night had flashed and darted here and there with few but momentary intermissions now for the space of a half a minute played frightfully between the very clouds above the smoulder and the smoulder too with novel and surprising and most startling action.

The vast body of rolling smoke appeared to touch the sky and reflected as from a vast volcanic eruption.

Even from the clouds the reflection seemed to issue downwards flaming glances which were numbing returned from the smoulder upwards.

The convulsions as a short space of time they continued incessantly succeeding each other this strange quivering or dashing of flashes or reflections down and up may be compared to the very miniature blazing produced by the rapid and irregular discharges of opposing artillery closely engaged.

Whilst this most remarkable phenomenon proceeded the other type of reflection related in a manner and in some answers with the action of the phenomenon.

2836 The summation

2841 The moment after this very singular actuation of flaming reflections the fighters recovered from their surprise curiosity and apprehension, and renewed their assault with a violence and speed and exertion beyond all conception, working with all kinds of cutters and slashers the weapons of all human industry and art. The horrible roar and yelling of the men in their defence defiance and decision the noise of the tumultuous slashes whackers and slashers at the hands of men and farmers threatened the world with destruction of all the other weapons might spare, the hissing sound of the wheat being cut or slashed the sound of it falling and the combination of other sounds formed the most horrible din which would appall the heart and boulder the mind.

After ten o'clock the storm of assault now and then for a very few moments abated from the men being exhausted, at which time the dreadful roar of the shouting fighters, having partially subsided, the shriek of suffering victims reached on prostrate by the far distant approaching heat which in the breezes had probably been carried

2842

forward forward to a long distance the cries of terrified spectators and the howling of dogs and screaming of cats were clearly loud and audible and awakened the mind to a distressing apprehension of the havoc which the men were still desolating the fields. This continued till eleven when the sound was more moderate. At quarter after eleven all these men were withdrawn from the horrid fray and fresh men came to relieve them, over a prospect of war and wretchedness a replete replete with real misery of facing that distant heat and sickness to the heart than the fuel of battle ever presented in any war.

"We shall have plenty of time to this over before we proceed on with the work" said John Manley looking towards the raging smoulder yet? do not believe we will have a run of good luck contesting any part of this inferno. We are in really hard work as it is."

"Do you think so sir?" asked John Barclay.

"I do indeed and if we do get on at the work it is likely to be very tough. Fires of this kind even in forest was much feared by forest fire fighters and they have kept up their reputation ever since. But these smoulders are far worse than forest ground fires. I think they are going to give us a taste of their quality."

2843 "So Manley you think we are going to have a hard time of it?"

"Yes any one with half an eye could see that."

"Which way are we going to move against the other wheat fields?"

"Most likely from the southeast at least that. The quarters were well have to fight through but there aint no saying which way we may go cutting through."

"At the beginning early this night I thought things had been going on too smooth to last now we are going to see what real work is like. We thought it was hard work before beginning this night."

"So it likely to be much heavier work than before Manley?"

"Heavier?" Manley repeated solemnly. "Why there is much difference between a capful of work in this section as there is between one and a new born baby-girl."

"Did these smoulders last nearly two days already generally?" asked Jim Scanlon.

"Sant? Yes, and it'll go on for weeks if it don't burn soon. I've wondered sometimes to myself where all this smoulder fire comes from and why it does not burn out like smoulders usually do."

"But don't you think there's a change

phenomenon and mystery to it this?"

"Manley?"

"Yes when I think of the center of it. Why for more than thirty six hours since the conflagrations started it has continued and they're hotter near the center. If this wind would shift we then would get hell. But so far the wind has been blowing all the same time in the same quarter."

"Some of this is blown straight towards the edge of the remaining wheat field."

"I have been among the ground forces. I guess that many a fighter nearly lost their lives fighting them, and no news ever come back home as to tell what we went through and what makes it worse as that this hure them all put together don't?"

"In one way what difference that make John?"

"It don't make no difference as long as all goes straight and fur. I have heard in course of smoulders fanned by strong breezes rising but that's only when either the breeze is strong."

"So far we've had no trouble with strong breezes. The wind is keeping liberal and it is not doing anything out of the way to the smoulders. The officers in charge of the fighting men seem a good sort and there's no smothering of them about needless so there aint no fear of trouble with the smoulders as long as things go square but if things go wrong and this smoulder turns out to be a headway driven by a strong breeze, anything of that kind will get them there well nigh to

2836 The smoulders

2843 In serious trouble on the start of a new conflagration. By the breezes the smoulders would seize their opportunity and it aint scarce in human nature for us to oppose them because of their far reaching heat and then there aint no saying what will happen. "Why what a croaker you are John! I didnt expect that of you?" "I aint no croaker or pronosticator Jim but I know what I know. I have been through a job fighting fence ground fires in the west like that I'm telling you of once and I left the west because I didnt want to do it again. I aint saying as I expect any such thing to happen just now."

God forbid. Yet theyre light unbekingly that smouldering hallo and our fighting men have got as good officers as ever we got under our command. We have with our men as good a chance to defy this hell as any main leader ever had. But when I see these sort of smoulders here I feel we are in for a very, very, very tough job."

The conversation was broken off by the call of a foreman.

"Mr. Dargus says all troops get ready to renew work."

The horns are blowing up for the beginning of the main performance. How goes the first line?

The next minute the whole of the first fresh company were ploughing through the fields, for the first division were all in the hands and the order was perfect. For the signs of the smoulders could by this time could be seen by every man and officer here. A line

the sky was still more thick with smoke and around, the country the smoke should seemed to hang like a curtain.

2846 "Annally, look annally!" I shouted shouted "dont hurry over your work and put yourselves in unnecessary danger but do it with a will. I hope we have not left it too long. Mr. Scanlon, I have held on longer than I ought for every stretch we cut down the wheat is an advantage and we have been marching nearly due southward ever since I withdrew the first line of exhausted men when we got up the first of the fight." "I think we shall have time sir," the foreman said. "We are going to have a lot of tough work to do, and no mistake presently, but just now the smoulder does not seem to spreading up fast."

"The smoulders temperature is going up fast," said, and the heat is still increasing. Mr. Mason, I went on to the officer in command of the detachment of say the caps "will you kindly place your men under the orders of James Scanlon. I'm going to this time send forward all of our extra groom men and they can be useful on hand."

Here was what wheat and grain stripped or cut down more rapidly for every man was conscious of the urgency of the work. As soon as the men went forward the grain was slashed down. Other stretches of wheat followed them and in a little of an hour the men were a good way from the time the men brought forward that location of the field was greatly

2847 The melomorphed. The first two acres were gone every field of grain had been cut down and by wagons hauled away and the rest still lay on the farm. I gave a sigh of relief as the men began pushing swiftly ahead.

"Thank God that is being swiftly accomplished. Now we will be in readiness for what ever may come."

I lived forward into a wheat field and returned almost immediately.

"The distant front has increased somewhat more in Stanton," I said gravely. "I never before have seen the like. All of you waiting men."

I went on addressing the volunteer spectators who were gathered in a group talking in low tones and anxiously watching the incoming glare and smoke which now seemed to rise from the infernal region and reach far up in the sky. The most common exclamation was a mass of it extending in any direction. "I must ask you to go forward at once and reinforce Carter Green. We got to strike against the smolder at any moment now and when we do we must do it heavily. I should like everything cut away, every cloud, and nothing to disturb my thoughts from the cutting of the grain."

But Reuben Stanley had not yet gone forward, no he was cowering back just as he began to move forward to ahead the grain with his cutters by John Stanley his father and ordered to go around the open field and cut on the smolder. When this was done he aided

the newly recruited spectators and 2848 also the farmers and their hired hands and ranchmen and village men in selecting their fire fighting equipment and then went round the territory to which help was needed by seeing what the smolder was up to. When this was done he joined Carter Green, who with some other leaders had been and still was at work slashing the grain. The other spectators who volunteered willingly but long since been sent forward.

"I shall send my men forward," Mr. Dargen, Mr. Mason asked me.

"There is no occasion for it just at present. But you had better pass the word for all of them to hold themselves in readiness when needed. I but will be though for the critical moment. One fact that everything will be all right till the heat begins to rise most then we better retreat for we shall have the fire reaching heat blasting away all of us otherwise in no time. I should say send them forward at once but I know all of them have fought forest fires and maybe useful in cutting away everything if anything goes wrong."

"He looks dangerous enough captain," the young officer said to me glancing towards the ever widening smolder.

"Is dangerous enough for any ordinary forest ground fire," I said but this here is no ordinary ground fire. When we once get the field clear of her it will be all right. I hope so you think we have another half fire minutes in Stanton?" "I here is no saying so but I should think so. What do you want to do?"

2831 7th

2838 "I wheel went that high grass field cut down altogether" "I will do that" the officer said and calling Bob Handy and his three companions and two of their best officers he led the way quickly to the field of grass. Every eye was fixed on the five companies as rapidly but steadily they pressed to annihilate the grass.

There was nothing but the slightest breeze but from the smoulder a low strange humming sound was heard.

"Quick Mr James Scanlon never mind the high grass, all men retreat to safety" shouted but the work was just done and Scanlon's men retreated quickly towards the rear. But nothing happened.

"Thank God" I said reverently "that is done" I thought there was going to be another intuition explosion.

"Scab towards the smoulder" I said to my highest officers as the hum had increased to a roar "you be a few fighters for fifty years and never see that again"

They looked towards the smoulder, that dawn fire fellon had reappeared again and seemed to be arcing with the most extremely velocity.

"We have that crazy column of fire again boys. Now let's hold on to our fight"

For another moment it seemed to me Reuben that the end of all things was come. The object was moved down as if by a mighty invisible hand, and some wagon almost broke over from being almost swifter.

Chas. present

2850. The cut team wheel was thrown upon other wagons and though he still crept he thought one of the wagons had crept and inclined no more overloading. Reuben saw Carter Green was his hand but his words were lost in the fury of all the desperate work. He became in leadership. William Ben Handy and two or three leaders knew what was required and got their men busy also.

There was another wagon almost going over on its side but with some of the hay covered gradually it had begun to pull off and she slowly righted. A minute later the mules was going at a tearing pace towards the barnyard.

Scarcely had this commenced when the left hind wheel flew off and rolled into a field.

"The wagon being overloaded done this" shouted Bill in Reuben's ear. "I thought the wheel would do this and be gone and its lucky the wagon didn't turn turtle."

Carter Green had used almost two of the same work to his first officer adding. "He won't be able to go ahead now for a while but we shall have to replace the wheel and to unload her a little more."

All some of the men not busy just now and got this axle back on and unloaded to buy what she has. "Here we are getting her and its also more than the mules can pull."

This was done the mules were pinched from their fright and pulled it onto the southward. Carter went for word to the front. Two or three officers

285' not yet busy were attacking on a small rise of ground looking things over. They are deploying your men for a last time now though that may not last long. No one hurt among your men I hope it.

No a third of us have got lions fighting the conflogations a heat two hours ago and I think we have all of us got a severe case of sickness from that terrible gas reaching heat. We thought she would come over to us.

"I thought so too" Carter Green said. "Suddenly she has a long wide gap that we made before now and it's a very long one so that kept it back. But it was touch and go with her for some time."

And now gentlemen if you will take my advice you will just deploy your fresh men and then go along with the works and not hardly on too close and then attack will all your might. Now you can do so easily another hour and there will be no saving the heat."

Carter was right.

For less than the time he seemed a terrible gas reaching had got up. There was no regularity in the sweltering radiance the temperature seemed to rise suddenly even from that far distance now driving a company of men back this way another company another and pouring shots of smoke about heads.

The gas reaching heat radiance was so tremendous that even Bill Hardy and the old officer who to with a with drawn and they could only move along with the

greatest difficulty to carry out the orders of John Macleay, who went through the thick branches of wheat on his front now half hidden in the wheat now almost held back by the thickness of its growth with the roots almost holding to his feet.

He yet no more slashing was done in the direction facing the heat for there was no facing it.

Although running on slowly in a slight retreat before the dangerous radiance a slight forward cutting of some of the wheat was kept up upon the other field before them so as to edge it out from the center of the radiance and the second cutting by the desperate men took more than twice as long as the first to complete although the field was tightly grown and each line of men was proceeding with equal speed and calm through the fields.

Every quarter of an hour the heat increased and it was so terrible as to be almost bewildering to the oldest fire fighters.

There was more of the regular rise and fall of the temperature. The fire men fighting men were sent to the rear for nothing could be done in the face of that terrible heat and the heat was swiftness over the whole country as in such measured time measure as to threaten at times to overcome even the firemen.

More further off but his leg broken by ploughing through wheat too tightly angled tangled severely wounded but his body covered covered by the wet mud and smoke. "This is terrible" Bill said.

2852 as he went to the front  
by had I heard Bell say, "I have  
fought numerous front fires, men  
and long ones (faintly) and this  
is the worst heat I ever felt.  
I expect to see the whole ahead of  
the smoke right before the heat  
wave. I don't know how long  
I can stand such conditions as this.  
You had better turn your men  
to the rear at once unless I'm  
mistaken. It will be all companies  
on the rear retreat before long.  
If these fields had not been  
wetted down by us yesterday it would  
have been dried by this heat  
and on fire by now."

Reuben felt the instant that  
he started the slow retreat that  
intimidated towards the northward was  
out of the question for it needed  
all of his strength and the strength  
of his men to prevent them  
from being held back.  
The light thickness of all  
this wheat, the more the front  
the other men was terrified the  
rush and swell of the smoke  
driving more fiercely heat like  
swell of cutting down against the  
wheat the swirling sound of  
the scythes and other cutters and  
distant noise of cattle dogs horses  
dozen mules sheep and even for  
house cats.

A quarter of an hour after the  
slow retreat was started there  
was a shout  
"John Scammon is trapped and  
lame back all over  
and cover his retreat"  
The men quickly rallied and  
began to make their way forward  
in that direction and also some  
myself in cutting under the

which that trapped Scammon was 2853  
which holding light behind the  
thatched with even increasing size on the  
composure of the heat to dry it and  
make it worse.

A sheer look from Scammon men  
on the last stretch was out door and the  
wagons being loaded with it took off  
the worst of the radiance had come close  
to the nearest field threatening to dry it  
up and start a new fire.

"Now Mr. Garner?" shouted we must find  
present. But Scammon at once story this  
front the main advance of the heat wave  
may you go on if it like and at  
present we shall be all the better without  
it but the heat we must keep away  
if we can."

for us I shall set about it at once.  
Picking out a few companies the head  
officer proceeded about the work.  
Go and let the forward fields of  
which Reuben I said this smoke."

Reuben went off at once and  
returned in ten or fifteen minutes  
"There are four acres of it dying."

"If so?"  
"Four acres, are you sure?" exclaimed  
quite sure."

I handed over the command of  
my first detachment to the Scammon  
officer and went on ahead with  
Reuben I first explain my field  
glass. I looked the situation over.

"Now are you right?" I said. "It is  
drying up. I fear that this ruggles  
and ruggles heat must have ruggles  
this drying up is what could be  
time dried up as quick."

I made my way to Reuben  
"The wheat are nearest the ruggles  
is drying fast" I said we want  
at the water which belongs to  
with I want the spare any of

which

the day



2854

my men their hands are full will you not your men to work?

In a few minutes very soon irregularly they worked, for it was next to impossible for the men to start the fan reaching heat too much. I had remained near by I shook my head.

Reuben made you way over to the chief officer and tell him to get rid of the drying wheat on your left. Tell him to see that everything is cut free from the main edge.

Reuben made his way towards Stanley with difficulty, it needed all his strength to prevent the tightly grown wheat from holding him back. But at length he reached the fields where Stanley and his men were at work.

Hodderwood my message. Ask Mr. Dargen to wait till I get this wheat chopped down I will send my men forward over there as soon as I'm ready.

"You take this say the" said when Reuben regained my side and stand by this field when you see my men ready to cut the wheat cut at the same moment."

In a few minutes Bill came forward with a message to me that all was ready. The latter raised his arm to Reuben. He waited till some of the straw and moved away. The two columns of men moved simultaneously.

The wheat fell by the wholesale before the cutting equipment. "Thank God for that" I said as I cut away a portion of the field on the other side. "But no off my hands."

The cutting away all the grain gently relieved the strain on the rest of the men and they were

less than

also to work more easier. In 2855 chief an hour the first officer returned to us with his men and reported that he had done all he could to wet down the wheat.

"The machine is becoming more regular" I said now that we are further away from the edge of this smoulder. We shall soon have this parching heat behind us, and we will have to shake out the rest of the wheat to keep the heat behind them. Now let us see how they are getting on beyond."

The threatened wheat field was again inspected and it was found that steam was rising from it.

When the machine gets a little more regular and somewhat less Reuben you must take all your men and work your way through here to the wheat that is steaming and try and cut it away as quickly as possible."

"I will go at once sir if you like." "No no" I replied "it must not be thought of. Every body will be heat prostrated in no time and many of you will die from the heat to a certainly certainty you must wait until we are out of this danger area territory. If the heat from the grain is so fast that it does now burn in three quarters of an hour will make no material sort of difference and by that time I hope we shall have regular rain of the heat."

Timothy there was nothing to do but rest his exhausted men. Reuben went to the rear. The heat from that distance was still tremendous but he could feel a sensible change from what it was before the wave of

2856 heat was less violent and sudden and though it still radiated tremendously it came with a easier motion. A chief had taken a new fresh company of men came forward to relieve the exhausted men.

The others were still working as desperately as when the heat began. But the aspects of the forward fields had changed. Soon I sent the farmer to Reuben.

As he came up to me I said "I think you might content the steaming wheat now. I will send Bills men Richard Livingston and Jack Whistler, too with you to help you then."

Reuben Reuben got a wagon loaded with barrels of water and a large number of buckets and then he made his way with the other three towards the steaming wheat fields.

The way the wheat grew here however so thickly showed that it would as I had said have been impossible to plough through while the radiance was at its worst. The radiance for a time had slightly diminished. The men rode the long water barrel wagon, the mules with some difficulty making their way onward.

"Ah here's the steaming fields now" Bill said. Look how the steam is rising. Now the first thing to do is now at dawn. I'll show it."

They waited and slashed for a time and then Bill returned to the men front to fetch two more companies. They brought long cut tusks and broad smooth scythes and rakes as the wheat was crowded so tightly together that

It was most difficult in the extreme to cut it. It took an hour's hard work before they slashed it down. As I had supposed the heat had started these fields to steaming and the wheat did feel fearfully hot.

"A few more hours would have settled the situation," Bill said. All our efforts would not keep down such a field as this. We had had another big fire!

Reuben and his men at once set to work cutting a long wide breach in the steaming fields. It was a long job but it was successfully done and at last Reuben had the satisfaction of having it nearly all cut down.

"That's a first rate job," Bill said approvingly. "Now to scouse it!"

After Reuben went towards the wagon. The water brigade were now working steadily. The companies of men relieving each other by turns. Reuben reported to me the progress of the work.

"Yes but though cut down its steaming still. That for reaching heat is fierce," I said. "It will have to do now. But they need buckets of water still. Some of the wet wheat is very hot. I have been looking it over and can't find where it's hottest and we can't do anything until this radiance recedes and we can't go among the hottest part as it will scald us."

We all found that the pillars of fire had set itself

285 while we were busy, at one moment, it shaped like a broad very tall fiery smoke then it mounted still higher and the top of it then seemed as if it must slide down head foremost. Yet higher the column of flame, rose with an accelerated motion, it from a great distance threw a parching heat.

I ordered all men to concentrate upon the steaming wheat. They worked in strongly as ever three or four companies taking turns and the contrast between different parts of the wheat fields struck all of us very strongly.

Sadly indeed they looked with so much out down and carried away on wagons all gone. It was past midnight now. For a time the word of the fire reaching heat had some what abated but it still came strong enough to steam what was left of the wetted down wheat and rendered it impossible for any one to come to close up for safety.

"I think I am as strong as most of them" Reuben said. "I am young fighting the most stubborn fire" and four years leading men against the most stubborn brush fires ought to make me very experienced and strong. If there is anything in me to begin with. I think I shall do in that respect."

"I think so Reuben" I said. "I don't think there are many men who I could hold their own with you in any grapple with wild animals and other fierce game of our it already, and now to

new business, you have heard of that dreadful affair of inspection George James Thomas in the house 2860 what field district it was a very business He and four companions were out telling down what even 500 yards away from "Soulder soul" and it is called and he and they were set upon by an awful wave of killing heat and he and two men were killed and the rest roared a number suffering minor burn and heat prostration.

"So I heard in the Reuben said quietly. Well I have decided in sending up you up in this place with your men. It is a very bad district, the worst we have at present, also a hell field with its killing heat and it needs a man of great resolution, cautious, cool headed and intelligent. I am sure you have plenty of all that and that I cannot make a better choice than in sending you and your brigade there.

against you is the only thing that I don't not with me you know, but others may think that I have done us any in selection so old am officer but you see I know my man. I know too that several of the wheat field fire inspectors are getting to old for this sort of work. I do not mean too old perhaps in point of years but they are married men with families and for most desperate work I prefer men without incurtances.

The work should be done by a field fire inspector but I cannot let you take too much shame with that hell hole and yet I know that is what you like to face. I will thank you very much in danger, do my best to show myself worthy of your confidence."

74. S. Ch. 2  
the subbed.

43 Thayer  
661 (448) 44

Plan intent

2861 you will have all your work  
cut out for you Reuben that district  
has all along been a most trouble-  
some one, the few there is the most of  
all, and which reach its head and  
corner in the northward towards all those  
San Antonio, cities and towns.

The number of people south of what  
because of heat and smoke is very  
small and diminishing steadily.  
There is a good deal of higher  
wheat stubs than usual about it  
which makes it desperately difficult  
to come in too close and the  
surrounding forest at a distance of  
ten thousand yards is especially  
very severe and troublesome.  
Besides which at present there  
are two or three sections of the  
west part of this smoulder with  
do strange pillars of fire and that  
makes it the worst smoulder fire  
ever on all record.

You will have to be cautious  
in the alert as well as bold and  
valiant Reuben. It is a most  
dangerous game. I am sending you  
on still the more danger the  
more credit to you. But you have the  
liberty to refuse it if you wish.

I'm not the type to back out on  
anything no matter how risky and  
you could not give me a letter  
I should have liked better answered  
Reuben "and I hope ere long I may  
be able to give you a good account  
of the smoulder."

And now Reuben if you will  
assemble all your men in an hour  
we shall be free to move as well  
also go with you in the same  
mission. We will not however  
commence this risky attack until  
we do. We are to fight that large  
smoulder. Trust.

Lovely Gab and Little Angelina  
Ritchie so alarmed loudly when they  
heard what about the commotion

Had  
intent

Adversity

folks  
vulgar  
Adversity  
not bounding

close to them that Reuben was going to  
to the good done wheat field district.

"You don't mean it in I argue you don't  
mean it that you are going to send Reuben  
to that dreadful district with his men  
and to follow him with yours to actually  
face that worst of all the smoulders and  
fight it at close quarters. Why we  
are always hearing of persons dying from  
the heat two or three hundred yards from there  
and you know the last week and two  
of his men were killed by the heat at  
that distance away and we brigades of  
fire fighters recalled because you said  
they had lost their nerves because of  
the heat and now you are sending  
Reuben there and following him?"

"But I look upon it as a great honor  
nothing being chosen to oppose the spread  
of the smoulder; and you see there will  
be capital chances of distinguishing myself  
and getting some promotion and we

have a good number of cannon that  
will shoot chemical bombs."

And capital chances of being killed by  
that smoulder that anyone saw in a  
wooded tone. I do call it too but I mean  
that you are going to take such chances  
too."

But my dear little girl we need more  
of luck and energy. Besides you know  
we have been getting into hot water  
over all the for reaching mischief  
of the smoulders their heat and  
smoke should driving every man away  
from the northern cities and towns.

Even the press in cities all over the  
country have been saying very severe  
things about our incompetency to protect  
this part of the country and overrunning  
the unknown and I am obliged to  
choose a man who will give satisfaction

2863 with my help and you will agree with me that Reuben will do that.

Of course he will. Angelina agreed and Dorothy would not be alone now if she hadn't had plenty of pluck and energy but for that very reason you ought not both of you go to such a dangerous district. You and the Thompsons will never come back.

But I wish to give him a good opportunity for distinguishing himself. He is one of the most distinguished forest fire fighters of all times and has lots of experience. He wants to get on so do I and I want to push him on and my reef too but you see we have more a good number of long range cannons and ought to have some more.

"Well we don't like it Henry I tell you frankly. I always thought he was wrong to go into forest fighting at all. I can't why all you great army of men are so fond of fighting when you couldn't even get the best of the second big fire."

"But we had no change in the direction of wind to counter fire at Douthan as all my leaders have found. It is less dangerous trying to whip the ammunition with every cannon fire when you are prepared for it than to have this ammunition start up another conflagration that will wipe everything out and all assistance within reach against it cannot stop."

"How both little girls remembered how two nights ago how June Darnel Jones got injured as he had no ready answer answer ready for the argument."

"Well I hope Reuben and you

Remember me that and see how 2877

2864

For Henry, Dorothy said if you both go to this forest of very territory you both will take of yourselves and not be rash or do any more stupid mess."

"We are going to take care of our men too Dorothy. You know if he had taken care of himself and hadn't been rash you would not have come out so well out of that fire trap you got into. How savagely he and his men fought to save you both. I am sure he looks as if he could take care of himself doesn't he?"

Yes he is big enough and strong enough. Angelina agreed. "But if he was strong enough to fling a dozen of these wagons loaded with hay a mile away altogether with one hand, that would do no good against the terrible heat."

"Why Dorothy, you are not generally a chatter," I said lightly. "But for once you seem to be determined to do your best to frighten us before we start."

The two little girls laughed.

"No we don't want to frighten you two, Henry I only want to make you more careful."

"We will be as careful as we can Angelina. That man, Jim Scumden who will accompany us is a treasure. I will warrant if there are any dangers he will sniff it out somehow. I don't like his wildness and nose like a dog. Around he has always been most useful to us in any firefighting but he will be invaluable at the gun-doro wheat-field districts."

About half an hour later Reuben and I left for the gun-doro wheat-field. Stanley was surprised when

Rule

2865 etc

Reulien rode up to the field.  
"New Stanley" said after a little preliminary talk "I brought friend Reulien with instructions to keep out to try and kill the rear section of the smouldering inferno."

Stanley smiled grimly.  
"We have been doing our best since yesterday evening sir, but we have not made much of a hand at it."  
"No" agreed "and I don't suppose of course that I and Reulien are going to succeed all at once. Lucky if we succeed at all. In the first place tell me frankly, what sort of officers have we got here?"

"All the men and officers are good sir, but they certainly have got disheartened lately. One way or another we have lost ten men in the last two hours facing that killing heat and of course that last affair with poor Tom was a bad one."

"I understand" I said quietly "some of them are not so eager to meet the heat waves as they used to be, very much too much heat."

"Well that is perhaps about it sir, but I must say the men have been most tremendously hardy worked, pretty night half this night at it often called forth to check the spread of the smoulder at one of end of the district, and then to find when they return it is spreading somewhere else. I do enough to dishearten any man."

"So it is Stanley, I was speaking to Sirmon Segra about it and saying that if we are to succeed we ought to have some fresh companies who will take up the work with new spirit. We are seven below

advocate  
rec. or  
propriet

our force at present and he 2866  
has promised to come to my help with twelve and fifteen new companies to reinforce you and there will be eight more from Roddy. I will leave it to you to pick out the first companies to go at it. Mind put it to them that they are not to go too near the heat radiance, just pick out the companies you whom you think would be most pleased to go at it."

"Very well sir I am glad to hear the news for to tell the truth I do think we must need reinforcement today."

About two hours later the new companies arrived and I and Reulien saw at once that Sirmon had chosen a picked set of companies. About half of them were freshly enlisted in the force, the others had all been employed fighting upon smoulder fires and were well acquainted with the nature of the work before them. The same two hours, the eight companies picked out by Sirmon as being the first useful in the fighting front started for the left flank most of them well pleased at being put to work although it would be somewhat risky and arduous duties.

Reulien himself that there came from so balls a great many letters from farmers and townfolks asking for protection from the smoulders. It was impossible to comply with all these but after a short consultation with Stanley he sent five companies each to as many separate localities keeping them on hand to move as required.

Taking from Scamden (Mr. name), and John Stanlon who had been

Believe - O  
ADVOCATE -  
IF NO "O"

2867 shortest in the forest he spent twenty two minutes in traversing the Gas door district as far as time would allow and making himself thoroughly acquainted with its geographical features for he felt that, until he had mastered these he should be working only in the dark.

For a time through some came not unknown to us the but rays from the edges of the smoulders had ceased the smoulders having shifted their most heated quarters and the southern firing flank withdrawn after the death of the late inspector.

This was a great relief to us as it permitted us to gain a half hour insight into the smoulder before settling to work in earnest.

The coming of morning when it does appear makes the smoulder thirty to eight hours long since the second conflagration, upon upon an hour later we and our officers were everywhere being reinforced by more new men mostly volunteer spectators and sightseers who also wanted to fight the smoulder every where we heard the same tale of sheep killed by the far reaching heat cattle and horses driven off and the insolent demonstration of the smoulders.

I was thinking of given it up and moving back in turn the softer comfort of the rear one of the leaders said to Reuben "but now since you and Mr. Wigger have come with your fighters, I will hold on for a bit longer and see how it turns out. If you look to me the right sort of fellow for this fighting front - but the difficulty is with such a large scattered district we have to be nearly every where at once. What

been the mean that awful loss 2877

I have often thought of it 2868 that it would be a good thing if our whole entire force of men were to turn out and rush into the heart of this tenting and overthrow this awful monster.

say: "I am what I hear" I heard Reuben say: "It was next to impossible for us because of the heat to approach within a mile of this smoulder. The two smoulders are so vast and covered with such a rolling sea of ocean of flame and smoke that there would be no safety in approaching it. We are going to try long range cannon to shoot by chemical bombs into it. They arrived early last night and are now in position. The inferno has no fixed conflagration and water drench would do no good.

But the worst point is no one is well informed as to what is going on, I suppose no one ever got warnings what this smoulder is going to do later on I am afraid if something is not done we will find all this country in ashes."

"Yes that is true," Reuben said. "I suppose it couldn't be done. But it annoys me staying here and there never content at what hour one may be aroused by this smoulder starting a third big conflagration. The conflagrations were not as bad as these smoulders, which smoke every body out of their towns and cities. The conflagrations didn't.

They were more fire than smoke. I think God has got a good force of good fighting men and they can make a pretty good fight of it."

"Well I hope we shall soon put a stop to it" I said cheerfully. "We could give it a lesson if we had the help of rain. Do you think it soon will?"

For two  
pages

In state view  
substantial

BAD TEND  
a dense  
immense

2869 "I hope so" the leader said.  
But we've been mighty unlucky  
lately. Never seem to have been  
at the right place at the right time.  
That is, I am surprised at that  
in such a burning district as this  
but somehow they never come up  
with the fellows afterwards."

"No they seem to have bad luck"  
Our Reuben agreed. "Who can face such  
heat? I hope we shall do better  
now with the help of rain or  
no rain."

About 20 minutes to 12 o'clock  
I rode at full speed up to the  
"Captain" he said. The armoulters in  
threatening my fields. And the heat has  
killed my two shepherds and driven off  
the sheep."

Sergeant Glover turn out the men  
at once. I should see that their  
equipment in all right and that each  
man has his rifle on the  
wagon wagon. When is it done?"

I asked turning to the farmer.  
"It's becoming threatening already  
because of the fire reaching heat  
at least I judge so. One of the  
men was to have come in with food  
and supplies and when he had  
just left and he hadn't come I  
began to be afraid something was  
wrong for I know I and family  
were getting short of provisions  
so this morning I rode out with  
the hands I have about the  
house. We could see nothing of  
the sheep because of the smoke  
around so we rode straight to  
them. men but I have a lying  
some twenty yards away was  
the body of one of the men  
with his clothing all as smoking  
and the top of the hat too.  
The awful radiance there...

Armoulters  
to clear fire  
dangerous!

should clear  
point clear  
be removed to  
cart - yes

been too near that awful killing? 2877

2870  
would not let us go near  
the body and drove us back. He  
had evidently been running to the  
heat when he was overtaken by the  
awful heat and struck down. Because  
of the killing heat I did not stop  
to look for the other for no doubt  
the heat killed him too."

"Well we'll do what we can for you"  
Reuben himself said "We will be ready  
in five minutes."

Soon the water wagon were loaded  
with water barrels and the whole column  
went on at full speed, followed by the  
company of blasons and cutters. The  
driver of one of the wagon soon named  
his mules in.

"I will not do to push them too hard  
at first there is no saying how  
far we shall have to go," I said.

"Do you mean to follow the armoulters  
all the way around?" the farmer  
asked.

"I do if necessary," Reuben himself said.  
"I will follow it till I outwit it if  
I have to go across it."

"That's the sort," Glover said.  
"I expect you will find half a  
dozen other companies at my station  
by the time you get to the farmer's  
farm. I sent my foreman off on  
horse back to the station near to  
tell them what is taking place  
and that the farmer has come to  
us and asking them to come  
around."

"How far is it?" I asked.  
"About half a mile?"  
"But you know well enough he  
able to do it through this dust  
and smoke," Reuben said gloomily.  
"I am not for my opinion."  
"To get a fresh horse at  
four or five hundred yards of a mile  
from your station so I am all right."



1871 "That part of the snowoulda has  
had two days start of us since it  
began." Reuben remarked presently.  
"No about thirty six hours. But it  
surely can't learn footed very fast  
with resistance it meets you know."  
"No," Reuben agreed. "If I had a  
stronger breeze it would be useless  
to ever try to fight it, but without  
any breeze we may come up to  
the threatened section soon, ex-  
pecially if the fast reaching heat  
don't start mischief."

"No that's my hope, Berder  
had it not been that I was  
expecting the shipyard to come in  
with supplies for me I might  
not have found it out until  
too late. So I expect the  
snowoulda will not do anything  
serious yet. I had not crossed  
my road, yet yet its nasty work  
you see and look at it what  
smoke."

"It's got to be done," my reef said.  
"It's impossible to keep guard  
everywhere and the only way to  
put a stop to these attacks by  
this snowoulda is to go to it  
hammer and tong."

"It was twenty minute later  
before we arrived at Stevens station.  
We found twenty one companies  
gathered there, very more than we  
expected. Their leaders came  
forth as the sound of the wagons  
muller horn and the tramp of  
men were heard. Three of  
them were known to me from  
their having joined me in  
the confederation squabble.

"Glad to see you Captain but  
I'm afraid you are too late and  
said I could arrange."

been too near that awful killing? 777

1871

"That remains to be proved" I  
replied.

"Oh the snowoulda have got twenty  
four hours start and its line comes  
west and hotter. We wonder what  
in the heck is burning. It must  
be thirty miles wider by now."  
"If it were a hundred I would contest  
it," said.

There was an exclamation of surprise  
and something like a cheer on the part  
of the leaders and a good number of the  
men.

"The difficulties are very great," one of  
the elder leaders said. "Here, neither  
abatement in the heat or smoke and  
neither food or water to be found  
as the heat is drying up food food  
and small streams."

"I know it's not an easy business"  
I said quietly. "But as food we've  
got our chuck wagon, as to water  
we've got our long procession of  
water wagons and also there must be  
water in some places. There must  
be small streams and water holes  
here and there. And we have the  
Indians river not far away. But  
however difficult or risky, I mean to  
attempt it. It's the only way of showing  
where this snowoulda get off at and to  
bring it to book, there can never  
be safety among the outlying districts  
unless this snowoulda is brought  
under. If it ever starts a new wild  
field general conflagration we are  
done. And now gentlemen before we  
go further I want to say this. I  
know that you are all ready to  
help, that you are all thinking to  
wipe out this wide spread inferno.  
But at the same time I would  
point out to you that it is likely  
enough that these snowoulda which  
continually work with each other

2873 will follow up its burning  
forward progress intensely increase its  
heat follow up also its stroke  
therefore it will not do to try any  
dare reckless moves. I want  
a still larger force with me if  
possible. If we once get to the  
threatened area I yet have no fear  
whatever of being able to give a  
good account of it.

I therefore I would urge all of those  
not to do any dare reckless  
moves also. That it is very important  
and of the first importance that  
you should stay beyond reach of  
the terrible radiance in case the  
smoulders take the opportunity of  
our heavy close to it, and kill  
us all. I am in the very first  
thing to be thought of. If I  
can get more companies to go with  
me I shall be glad of their full  
assistance. We may soon have a  
field of vision or more for  
sight? I know.

What is certainly the best plan  
captain Donald Ainsworth said as you  
say let me man do a dare reckless  
movement. I think we  
all of us will go with you.  
I have been of approval.

"how far ways and means Deacon  
said as the companies were glad to  
be called upon for the success  
of the assault. What spare  
mules and wagon have you in  
your army.

"I have only two beside the one  
I'm driving" like to take at least  
six if I could. We must a good  
deal of barrels of water.

"I don't think you need trouble  
about that. The summer said 'my  
two wagons are fourteen feet long  
and eight wide. We need a

been too near that awful killing? 877

878  
but of Deacons must take a good  
supply of mud with us and of course  
gunny sacks and a few bottles of  
fire or linguist. I don't want to be  
all those I can furnish. But as to  
a load of wool I don't do not think  
we need doubt, going as fast as the  
smoulders will travel. There will be  
lots of sheep fall by the way because  
they'll get too close to the radiance.  
I don't think we'll be as many as it  
can hold even the heat of those smoulders.  
I can't go far beyond its limit and  
there will be plenty of time for  
us to be sure.

Yes I did not think of that. Deacon  
replied in that case your two long  
wagons will be enough.  
few more. I would be a good thing to have a  
few more. I thought "one of the leaders said.  
"My place is only a quarter of a mile  
away off. as we go along we'll reach  
there then. I'll ride over and bring them  
with me. They are all good strong big  
ones and I should be sorry to find  
they were loaded with other merchandise  
when I get back. I can drive one  
my boy can drive another and  
lead the third. It is likely enough  
some of the cattle may get out of  
the way to the pasture. If the smoulders  
make a fight of it and a half a  
dozen such wagons would come in  
very handy.

Both I and Deacon thought the  
plan a good one where upon the others  
volunteered to ride over while we were  
on the way to fetch their own  
wagons.

That will make ten more altogether  
with the farmers two we shall travel  
faster. I think every one will bring  
enough water to use in the fight.  
After awhile the three settlers  
who had rode off soon returned

2874 with the <sup>fine</sup> spare wagon  
they had not been idle. They  
reported a bullock had been killed  
by the heat. They continued on their  
way the distressed farmer first  
leading them first to the first  
man which he had found the  
shop and killed.

His clothes were burned from  
him. Because of the terrific heat  
they could not dare go that way or  
they were his terrible fate.  
We now took up the search  
in another location. The sheep  
found half a mile away. Even  
here the heat was enough to  
almost blister your skin.

His body was in a swelling  
position by a burned tree half  
the body was smoking ashes  
and it was evident that the  
heat had done. Killed him  
before he was aware that any  
danger was at hand. The men called  
trucks were not long in finding  
the place where the sheep had  
been also too close but driven off  
before the heat killed them too  
and a broad track of trampled  
small green wheat showed clearly  
enough the direction which had  
been taken.

"How many acres of your wheat  
fields are in danger from the heat  
of the smoulders?" One Reuben  
asked the farmer.

"Great many of the nearest  
ones Captain," he replied.

"What do you call a great  
many?" Reuben asked.

"Twenty thirty nearest the  
smoulders Captain, can't say how  
many. All together I've got  
hundred acres. No one Captain

been too near that awful killing? 2877

never be able to find them 2875  
what part of the smoulders is near  
them. Never find them.  
"We are going to try anyway," Reuben  
said. "How do you lead the way?"  
"I think there are more than 30  
nearest the smoulders. Kaliko said  
yet I don't much like the look of  
that part of the smoulders" and he  
nodded to the southwest of the nearest  
part of the smoulders which was burning  
on ahead. "No good appearing that  
part of the smoulders. It looks as if  
getting out of hand."

What makes you think that Kaliko?

"Three hours ago I saw something  
peculiar there half a mile to the  
southwest. I had thought that part of the  
smoulders not only no good but very  
suspicious. If rain don't come soon now  
it will be too bad."

I myself had often thought it  
singular that each continued to look  
with the smoulders should have attended  
to affairs of my predecessors to hunt  
down persecutions of the smoulders.

But the thing that the smoulders  
was up to something worse had  
not occurred to me. I had the  
greatest faith in Kaliko's sagacity  
and now saw that the idea was  
presented to me him it seemed  
plausible enough.

"I very good Kaliko you keep your  
eyes on that part of the smoulders  
I will do the same. We shall soon  
find out if the smoulders is up to  
any tricks."

Kaliko had been riding alongside  
me while this conversation had  
been going on and now he dropped  
into his usual place with the other  
officers.

The smoulders is not burning  
so fast here" Kaliko  
said. This part of the smoulders

2876 does not go in pairs as some of the others did at first yet down there under the south-east six ion seems to have gone forward into the speed of the first at there is the first ahead of the first at there is

100 a hundred yard distant with my field glasses I saw the head of the spread and if this sheep on nothing will be down unable to keep up with the rest of the smoulder it had been shearing itself the fire eating it raw and hot. This looks dangerous.

We came upon the remains of two sheep which wandered too close lying dead with nearly all their wool and some skin scratched off here the smoulder track widened out and the flaming fire was scattered and confused. The horse horses were reined up and I and Kachio examined the smoulder.

"This is the point which is threatening my fields" said the farmer soberly. Kachio returned in a minute or two. Smoulder seems to slacken in speed here could go no further, slack down and smoulder move badly though."

One of the trackers came up. "In some season the smoulder stops its forward movement here have done some it for six hours till moon rise make steady much hotter fire now some of the hill those sheep and have fiery forest on the wheat stubble."

Reuben and some of the men rode over us near the spot as the parching heat would permit to which the trackers pointed.

"I found this (blanky blanky blank) smoulder Kachio exclaimed. Look there there are at least twenty sheep killed by the heat."

So there are Reuben said. Then "Look there in Danga" there must

been too near that awful killing? 2877  
nervance. I'll bet too that somewhere there must have been a lot of persons driven off."

"Yes there must have been a good many" a settler agreed "but not so many as you would think. Nobody has ever found out yet how much grain roots this smoulder can eat through at once they are so thickly grown but who would think it would go far away from them kill these sheep. This smoulder yet will turn them to ashes."

"The fire in sure could not eat as that with a long wide spread before it" Reuben said "but allow to over come by heat there to a sheep. There must be sixty of them destroyed by such heat. My man said there were a good many more than the trackers put it down at. How poor dumb animals."

How much the better I only hope this mysterious action of the smoulder won't start another big conflagration.

After two minutes had the advance was resumed then three more dead sheep were passed and then hidden a woman. This time the flesh had not been scorched though most of the wool was gone - but the poor beast had been in every case killed by the heat.

"This smoulder is savagely brutal" said Reuben exclaimed, "the damn fire might at least have given the sheep a chance of life if even they got close to the radiance instead of wantonly over coming them."

"That's the way of such heat always" Kachio said "the heat will kill at a long distance from fire overheated radiance over when leaves are towards it. But I don't suppose it makes suppose it makes much difference in respect the sheep have dropped in much from thirst as from the terrible heat and smoke if not also from fatigue and this would probably would never been got up again after they once fall."

878 I fancy we shall come upon the worst of the smoulders before long. I never or have never known forest fires to kill so far with its heat as this smoulder. I don't know that the smoulder is burning something below the wheat stubs and roots that is causing all this mysterious killing heat. We

At other mule and they come upon a part of the smoulder where ever been at that distance in glare, despite the rising smoke was blinding.

The southwest breeze was increasing a little and the smoulder's glare was as it appeared from edge to edge. Some of the flames were nearly thirty feet high. A score of mules sheep lay dead almost to the smoulder's edge. They had apparently rushed headlong too near and scuffed dropped dead from the heat. I had first been cramped under by the heat except companions pressing upon them from behind.

For ten miles within our sight the glare was plainly blinding enough. I had yet here another temporary halt had been made in the spread of the smoulder.

"We must have come a mile and a half," Owen said. "I answered quite that, Captain." I answered the flock must have been dead, heat by smoke and heat by the time they got here. Why are they so dumb to come so close. Does their thick wool fool them? I should think they must have stopped here before being over come we will soon see there is one of the smoulder over spread here."

The former dismounted and looked through his glasses. "Yes," he said. "The smoulder is spreading more here. It wants to 'camp' here. It started

2829 spreading here last night when the moon was no doubt I was the dawn smoulder had eight or nine hours start of us last night and as it came burn of mind first after such a movement as it had yesterday we ought to be able to combat it long before this morning."

The smoulder will go better before to morning morning than it did yesterday. Mr. Kaliko said "And the sheep running are over driven by the heat and smoke to start with and that's what knocks them up but some of the more reckless fellows will feel themselves safe to move and will let their sheep go their own pace. Sheep can do twenty miles a day if not hurried. Yet the sheep owners are as dumb as the sheep if they don't keep them off from and away from that killing heat."

"Well at any rate," I said we have to give our horses a couple of hours rest. It's just eleven P.M. a clock now and I should think every one wants to eat."

There was a chorus of assent. The men who could eat on flat wagon where there was a place to sit or even on the ground. The girls were poised the bits taken from the horses' mouths. But they were not turned loose for fear they'd wander too close to the fires heat and drop dead.

There was a fear of their attempting to stray after the short night yamons too close to the white hot smoulder. They got their food from the chow wagon all what they wish to eat.

Many had fired on baked mutton and they had a hearty meal. Some afterward tried to doze for a while but it was too hot for even a shut eye.

"Twelve o'clock," I said at last looking at my watch. "It's time to be on the way again."

1886 The horses and mules were  
fetched in and hitched in to the  
wagons and for the horse back  
riders the saddles were replaced and  
the girls replaced.

"Now which way Reuben asked the  
trackers.

"Along here the path is plain enough.  
Don't get too far the smoother though it  
feels fine enough here."

It was so a track of some  
undt. tropped in what appeared to  
be low wheat.

Reuben was about to give the  
order to proceed when he caught  
Kaliko's eye and saw that this  
helper wished to speak to him  
privately.

### Escaping the awful treachery of the inferno.

"What is it Kaliko?" he asked going  
apart from the rest.

"It's dangerous to go this way  
Capt. A hundred two hundred farmers  
shut. gone this way and perished.  
The rest are gone down the other  
way and am in great peril."

"Are you sure Kaliko?"  
"I am quite sure as the grain here  
is thick stiff and hard very hard  
no one can get through here. While  
you were resting I rode forward  
down a path through the field and  
saw plenty of sheep lying dead  
killed by the heat. I went  
straight forward and then turned  
away to the left. This turn  
smoulder over yonder have only gone  
to throw us off an trail."

"What the smoulder with those  
trackers. They ought to have seen  
that as well as you Kaliko."

said angrily.

"They see see sure enough could  
no help seeing with a chief's eyes."

1886  
You see see they are confused by  
this dreadful heat which is up to  
no good and in their panic and  
distress almost loud faintly warning.  
They were brought away to the  
near for emergency treatment. Don't  
say I told you. If you say that they'll  
think I have no sympathy for them.  
You ride along the trail for a bit  
just as if to talk about trail  
being to dangerous to follow then  
turn and come back here and go  
over the other way."

"A very good idea Kaliko. I will do  
what you say. Show what a heat and  
smoulder."

A few minutes after my conversation  
with Kaliko we started on again  
following the broad path through the  
high wheat along the far distant  
edge of the smoulder. I informed  
Stevens of what Kaliko had told me.

"By gone I think he's right" Stevens  
said. "This track is as broad as it  
was but it is nothing like so  
much tropped down. But if Kaliko  
says the main body of the distant  
smoulder is going up a slight rise  
of ground why are you following  
this track?"

I gave my reasons and said that  
his man had before had suspicions  
that the trackers were getting  
an attack of head frostation and  
were brought to the near for em-  
ergencies treatment. I said Kaliko  
thinks that why it is that we  
have so frequently failed here  
to come upon the farmers  
threatened section. The fears had  
won't let us."

"I should not be at all surprised"  
Stevens said "surprisedly" the best  
thing would be to put the trail  
into the hands of these farmers for

2886 70 1

2882 Starting this long long in-  
ferno"

"I think Kalibo idea is best" Reuben  
said. "Now that we have one got  
our eyes open, the moulders wont  
be able to do us any more harm,  
and Kalibo will see we follow the  
path right and be able to turn the  
tables on the moulders."

"That's so" Stevens agreed "What  
are you going to do then?"  
"I will call to some of the other  
trackers who took their place in a  
minute or two and tell them what  
it is your opinion. But only  
a small portion of the flock have  
come this way. Then we will  
have a hot consultation and no  
doubt some of your commanders  
will notice that the ground is not  
much trampled. Then we will de-  
cide to ride back to the point from  
which we started and will follow  
the other trail."

"Yes that will do very well" Stevens  
agreed.

Reuben and even I called to the  
trackers who were trotting on ahead  
and then ordered a halt.

The three new trackers came  
back. I said to one of them whose  
name was George Haley

"For George Stevens think that  
the main body of the flat fleas  
only the heat have not come this  
way. He says he thinks only a  
hundred or two have come. The  
ground does not look to me anything  
like so much trampled as it was  
before we halted."

"Then why did you come this  
way, come along here the trackers  
said suddenly. I warned you of it  
but you did not listen."

"What do you think Reuben  
wished the other Reubens who

which have formed and 2889

had gathered around" ~~it~~ <sup>2883</sup>  
I did not notice it before Dick  
Staten said. But now the Stevens  
has pointed it out. I agree with him  
entirely. There are nothing like the  
full number of sheep have passed  
along here. I should say that they  
have not gone along more than  
two or three deep."

There was a general chorus of  
assent.

"Come gentlemen let us ride back to  
the starting place and see if we  
cannot find out which way the main  
body have gone"

"Three minutes riding took us  
back to our starting place."

"They must have gone down that  
narrow road" Reuben said. "They certainly  
have not kept along at the cross-  
roads or we should see their  
tracks in this road"

"The trackers had exchanged a few  
words in a low tone and they now  
moved up the road and began to  
examine the ground carefully. For  
some unknown reason they found  
the ground unusually warm.  
Some of them have gone this  
way Captain."

"Of course they have" Mr. Stevens  
said. "A blind man can see that"

The mark of the sheep were  
indeed plain enough to all when  
their attention had been drawn to  
the subject. On getting on the road  
the trackers turned to the left and  
we saw that they felt it would  
be hopeless to attempt further to  
go another way.

All were perfectly capable of  
following the road. We were deter-  
mined to prevent these

25 2884 from getting to close to the  
fence heat of the snowdrift.  
Julius had some speaking to me  
remained in the rear of the troop  
of officers. After three miles of  
pushing on ahead down the road  
when we again came upon a country  
covered lightly with rising ground  
here and there pieces of wood  
abutting to the edge of the wheat  
were visible and the trackers went  
steadily on for some little time.  
Then their pace became slower  
and finally stopped.

"Trail dangerous further on"  
captain  
What do you mean trail dangerous  
further on? asked. Why what's  
causing all this snowdrift here?  
That is so captain but only a  
few sheep have passed here. The  
are heading straight for the  
snowdrift. It is tracked us by sweeping  
around this way. I was seen because  
of this snowdrift.

"Very well" Reuben said then  
on that case we must go the  
back again. He saw that the  
others had examined the territory  
with their field glasses carefully  
and declined they were of the  
same opinion as the trackers. They  
were altogether there and blocked  
by the snowdrift in this  
direction like we would have  
to take up the trail again.

"It is plain enough what this  
action of the snowdrift has done"  
said Reuben to me. "A part of  
the snowdrift has broken into  
small sections and have scattered  
strange this is. The question is  
what shall we do now? What  
do you think Mr. Stevens you  
have had more experience than  
any one here and you are the

have formed and 2889

most interested in our driving 2885  
the farmers fields. What do you  
recommend?"  
"I don't know what to recommend"  
Stevens said. "The snowdrift has no  
doubt done this to confuse or trap us  
in case we should follow along  
side so far. The part of the snowdrift  
may really have scattered in small  
sections to different parts of its own  
bosom or again it may have scattered  
as if to meet again at some given  
spot which may be 1000 and may also  
be two thousand yards ahead. I say this  
looks very dangerous if we dare to continue  
to proceed in this direction."

Melvin

"The worst of it is" said Reuben  
said. "I fear now that there is an end  
of all chance of getting to the danger  
zone of the farmer fields to night. And  
the question of those water wagons come  
in. If we would have gotten to the  
farmer threatened fields before now we  
could have done very well but"  
as that seems to follow now we  
must consider seriously what to  
do. We had best do before we go  
any further. I know by the strange  
look of this part of the snowdrift  
it means to make a fierce attack  
upon us by setting ablaze a part of  
the fields. So no army on horse knows  
anything of the whole field country  
ahead."

"There was a general silence.  
The wagon horses and mules have  
plenty of water supply" Mr. Stevens  
said "and can if pressed hold on  
as long as the supply of water lasts  
in here."

"In that case" I said let us go  
on our retreat or fight. We will break  
up into three companies. One shall  
go straight forward the other two



2886 moving to the right and  
left each following the tracks  
a path as well as they can.  
We went go much beyond a fast  
walk. We have five more hours  
before morning and the horses  
and mules can manage another  
fifteen miles if we intend to go  
that far. I will halt  
when it is necessary and light  
a small signal fire on the  
bare ground of that small  
clearing over yonder. The smoke  
will be a guide to the other  
two parties and the lights too.  
The parties should not be a  
mile to the right and left  
and they will then close in.  
If you can suggest any better  
plan than that in Stevens  
please do so. Of course I can see  
the objection that the shoulder  
may tick us more and may  
move around us.  
"Yes that is an objection" Stevens  
said, "but the chance is still  
around us without our preventing it.  
No more than probable that some  
of the shoulder has remained  
behind us and we may be in  
for a savage squabble sooner or  
later."

"The shoulder has done that  
already" said Kaliko who was standing  
close to my elbow put in something.  
I saw a new cloud  
of smoke curl up from yonder  
just when we turned when we  
lost the trail."

"Why didn't you tell me before  
Kaliko?" I asked.

"You didn't ask me any question  
I thought you saw it for sure."

"I didn't see it Kaliko. I didn't

you think have formed and 2889

think any of us saw it in Aug. 2887  
except pickle we're in. We were all  
too much occupied looking for the  
trail another time please you tell me  
without my asking."

"Well in that case Mr. Stevens  
will you take charge of the right hand  
company, Jim Scanlon will take  
command of the left. Do you each take  
a tracker with you. I will take Kaliko.  
Kaliko & three officials will go with  
each of your command and four with  
me. Will you gentlemen please to  
divide up so as to take seven companies  
each together in each command with-  
out delay. I need not tell you to  
keep a sharp look out for Captain  
Whitney. We do know the shoulder  
is stronger yet and it may  
make a stand."

FUNDAMENTAL  
DISTINCTION  
FROM DEANS

Though short the  
most savage fight  
on record.

"Yes that is quite possible" Ruben  
agreed. "Will you please be careful  
that neither of your large com-  
mands gets more than a  
mile at the outside away from  
mine. We can hear the sound of  
salute rifles at that distance. If  
either parties fires a salute, the  
others will of course hurry to  
their assistance. Now let us move  
forward."

With Kaliko in advance our command  
moved on Kaliko carefully examining the  
distant shoulder as he went and  
occasionally some what to my big  
surprise raising from the rocky  
position in which he was walking  
and looking back over his shoulder

2558 The smoke was explained  
when Kaliko exclaimed  
"These eruptions are the strange  
phenomenons again."  
I and Reuben turned in the saddle  
on the distant edge of the smoulder  
were three immense new columns of  
smoke. Scarcely had we looked at  
them when the smoke ceased to even  
ascend, and long high columns of  
flame took their place.

"Is there danger that the smoulder  
may encompass us three parties?"  
Reuben asked Kaliko.  
Kaliko nodded and proceeded  
on his way again.  
"That's awkward," I myself said.  
"I must warn the other two  
commands."

So, saying, I at once ordered two  
of the constables to ride right and  
left and warn the others who were  
not as yet more than a quarter  
of a mile on either hand that  
the smoulder had three new pillars  
of fire; the fire pillars were mov-  
ing forward and that the greatest  
caution must therefore be fully  
observed.

In ten minutes the constables  
returned having performed their  
mission, although I had no reason  
to believe that the smoulders were  
four miles of us. I now took  
the precaution of sending one officer  
out on each flank to a distance  
of fifty yards, a third was  
directed to keep with Kaliko  
fifty yards ahead of the main  
body consisting of Reuben him-  
self, a lieutenant and two sergeants.  
Occasionally Reuben rode ahead  
to question Kaliko.  
How many new sections, etc.

you think have formed and 2889  
made a junction with the main  
smoulder? "About thirty sections and three  
main ones."

"How do you know there are  
three main sections, Kaliko. There's  
so much smoke that I have not  
seen no new conflagration at all."  
"I see them through my field glasses  
plain enough."  
"How far are the sheep ahead near  
the smoulder, Kaliko. Have you any idea?"  
"Six or eight hundred yards ahead in  
but there's no saying how far they  
are now, may be only a little way."  
"I think they have not gone so very  
far, that smoke worry them?"

"I wish you had said that before.  
Kaliko." I myself said "We don't want  
want any more sheep killed by the  
heat if we can keep it. We then could  
have kept to gether and have  
continued on and taken our chances to  
drive them away from the reach of the  
smoulders heat."

"Might have found fifty or sixty  
of them," Kaliko replied, "but the others  
all scattered by the smoke and heat."  
"No good to try to find them until  
they come together again."

"No you are right there, Kaliko.  
We must catch them altogether if  
we can. There are some twelve  
hundred sheep somewhere ahead I heard  
there fifteen hundred driven off by  
the smoke. We have come upon a  
hundred dead ones killed by the  
heat and three or four hundred may  
have taken that turn to the right,  
as you say it would be no good  
coming upon only thirty."  
For another half hour the columns  
of men and wagons continued their  
journey.

It's two o'clock Reuben now looking

2890  
at his watch. We are at the  
farmers threatened fields. My  
what a radiance from that distant  
smoulder at this spot. My horse  
Two of the constables were told off  
to keep watch some fifty yards in  
front and the others gathered into  
ranks to be a water bucket br-  
gade.

This was soon done a fire was lit  
in the proposed clearing and the  
smoke mounted straight and clear  
a signal to the other commanders  
to close in.

Suddenly a cry was heard from  
one of the sentries. The men stop-  
ping round the fire leaped to their  
feet just in time to see the  
wheat nearest the wheat wave from  
the smoulder burst into a front of  
leaping flame. This section was  
just the same distance as the  
oil tanks at Morris near the  
edge of the smoulder there.

The farmer yelled in distress  
at the sight and almost wept.

I saw one of the constables stumble  
from his horse as a section of the  
flame enveloped him and the  
animal while a great cloud of  
sparks whizzed through the air.  
He fell forward on his horse  
which not itself killed carried  
him up to the signal fire as it  
he fell from the saddle as it  
stopped he was caught by two of  
the others. The flames had burned  
all his upper clothes off and  
singed him black.

"Attack that fire and how and  
for your lives" Reuben shouted.  
"Kaliko send the horses by the  
wagon we must attack the  
fire and by no means what  
even let it spread we got to  
fight it here" he continued  
turning to the other leaders  
until help comes"  
Not a moment was lost.

The companies of men with 2891  
every equipment they had thrust  
themselves with manly desperation  
at the burning wheat.

It had become a fierce fire  
but there were too many against  
it and though it was inconceivably  
stubborn it was held at bay and  
so far helpless to spread.

They furiously assaulted on all sides  
savagely closing in.

The whole turned from the front  
alarm until all was ready to  
storm the blaze did not occupy two  
men. The men with wet sacks  
and others I never have seen fought  
so tenaciously as before. They fought  
as if their lives depended on it.

All was done without flinching  
in excitement although the hiss  
of the flames rose from the blazing  
wheat.

The wheat was fortunately not  
very thick at the point where the  
flame up had started. When the  
second conflagration started there  
was yet not enough men to  
fight it so it got away on  
them. In its way to here, this  
fire was facing enormous  
numbers of fierce fighters ex-  
perienced in fighting ground forest  
fires. Reuben had selected this  
spot for a reason to fight here  
if necessary but the wheat was  
sufficiently near enough to the  
branching far reaching smoulder  
to enable the overpowering radiance  
to creep up and set the blaze.

It beyond description to state  
how fiercely the fire tried to hold  
its own and spread but it was  
still held at bay so  
inconceivably desperate was the  
savage attack made upon it.

2890  
at 12:00

2890 "Don't do any more reckless  
mess" I called out but saw the  
fire at the right distance.

The fire companies were all en-  
gaged now. Fortunately the companies  
were furnished with every type of  
fire fighting equipment and had it  
not been for their great numbers  
all of the men would have been  
unable to be rushed by the fire.

As far as possible they attacked  
by concentration.

For half an hour the terrific  
fight continued, not could the fire  
now spread but could not hold  
its own no more. Much of the  
burning wheat had been cut down  
or beaten by the gummy sack the  
fire gave way but the men con-  
tinued the assault still more vig-  
orously though a humbled and flustered  
of them had increased more or  
less serious burns and scorchings.

None yet suffered head over-  
coming.

The others ought to have been  
long before this Reuben said to  
me "if they had followed your  
instructions I only hope no fire had  
attacked them too but as we do not  
see any extra flame that can  
hardly be so."

I hope they will be here soon."  
Rich and Carter said "The fire is  
waiting for some opportunity to  
make a desperate rush, if it does  
it will be all up with the fields  
and us too."

The flames will find it a most  
tough job even then Reuben said "I  
hope the men don't become ex-  
hausted. That's what the fire  
wants. That the other must be  
here long before that. I told  
them to keep within a quarter of  
a mile of us, they must  
had time to come double that

time for the other part of 2891

distance since we made the 2893  
smoke for them, and they should  
have seen the glare and smoke of  
this fire and also -"

"Hurray" Kaliko exclaimed "can hear  
the trampling of horses hoofs and the  
cues of the men. The moment they  
arrive and make a junction with us  
gather into a long tough front and  
charge."

"I'm afraid the horses are killed by  
the heat even where they are." Dick  
said nervously.

"I'm that case" I myself said "the  
horses must fight on foot too  
and fight the fire like sixty. In  
fact I never seen the men fight the  
fire so savagely before. See them  
go it might and might main. Look  
at it, he's winning to give way."

A loud cheer was heard and the  
fire companies of men, the hundred and  
fifty despite their burns still remaining, in  
the fight with an unswerving short rank  
long rank formation the other column  
joined them as quickly as possible  
and like a wedge of foot ball players  
pressed in on the still stubborn fire.  
Yet there was exclamations of the  
smoke and grief when the rear of the  
attacking line discovered the heat  
killed riding horses.

On one of the wagons were Doolittle  
and Angeline cheering the men to  
fight their best, and their presence  
inspired every one to do their utmost.  
Reuben aided by Kaliko leaped  
into the saddle first as John Manley  
and Bailey and Ben Logan came  
up with their men.

"Keep close close to gether" I  
exclaimed as I dashed forward "We  
may find it tricky."

But the assistance of the rifle  
was in vain. The fire overwhelming

at the time it was already two hours since the fierce squall began.

"No one for it to continue Reuben said. We were wiped out and it had no even chance to form a smoulder thank God. Yet we were lucky to get here before it started. Had we been five minutes later there would have been no chance to stop in headway and there is no saying in which direction it would have spread. We may as well get at the best in both flames and rain of the conquered. Fire to prevent a repeat. Maybe next time there will be no such good luck. We just got here ahead of its start. We were fighting for three quarters of an hour before you came up. Normally only three quarters of an hour has been burned in search."

"I am very sorry" Manley said "some how or other we went wrong all together. There is nothing to guide one in this thick field of wheat and the tractor who was leading the way said he was positively certain he was going as you ordered him, just then hearing strange yelling sounds we halted and looked in the direction in which we expected to see your signal fire and smoke, but instead a whole distant field of grain was strangely lighted up."

The tractor "exclaimed" "but no signal fire is the real thing. Come on fire and he rolled fast. Leading us on swiftly we got there in time and he was the first to rush into the fight. My did he go at it. I knew something had been wrong and the tractor leading

time for the other part of 2890

moderately we galloped towards your fighters as first as the horses could lay their feet to the ground and the companies of men to run. When we were half way we saw the strip and you jumping and I am sure you that we didn't lose a moment on the way after that. Have you had any losses?

Two of my officers were embraced by the sudden fire and killed. My self answered and we have all got some more or less ugly burns, ringing in our ears. My left arm is useless for a time I am afraid. "Flames scorched it badly I fear a hundred and fifty have worst burns, scorched and singed but they refuse to leave the fight."

"The good my tractor did his best" said Manley "the tractor who was leading the way and who saw he was certain he was going as you ordered him. Looked towards the sounds - your men were making making and did the lead us well made to your assistance."

"What had the corner of Reuben's party?" Manley asked.

By something Reuben said "I told you I suspected the smoulder was up to some thing treacherous and I have no doubt something happened to you in order to give the fire an opportunity of cutting us off before you could draw to our assistance. I suppose the other companies are in trouble also. It is fortunate indeed that you made up your mind to ride to our help when you did. Yet we were making good headway nevertheless."

"Yes it has been a close thing indeed" Manley said "I was wrong after what you told me to trust that smoulder so entirely but I am it never entered

just being  
numbered

2895 my mind that the armouler  
was leading us away.

By this time three score pikes  
were striking fearfully among long  
street stretches of without not yet  
caught fire from the front reaching  
armouler heat cutting and walling.  
"How are you all Ose Scamlon asked  
nobody badly burned? hope"  
Nothing replied very cheerfully. "We have  
had all our skin blistered, scorched  
or seared up a bit but nothing very  
deep. I had a vomition you put us  
into saved us and helped us win.  
General of the men were knocked  
over by heat and smoke which  
would have done its business if  
it had not for us carrying them to  
the rear where they recovered. But how  
did the heat reach so far as to  
kill the horses?"

"I don't know" answered, "but if  
it could start that fire it could  
kill them too. They would not go  
where the wagon horses were nothing  
would have saved our horses from  
being killed by the heat. How  
are your horses?"

"Safe & continually rode him Pile  
on the bushes" continued to one of  
the constables "make as big a blaze as  
you can in this clearing I will  
act as a beacon to Scamlon and  
his companions." Half an hour later the sound  
of trampling of horses hoofs was  
heard and a few minutes later  
a lone horse man rode up. He was  
a top sergeant.

"I'm sorry sir" the sergeant said.  
Somehow or other we got assailed  
by a hell of a fire along the  
edge of a field started by the  
heat. We are trying to whip it  
sir but though it is so far cannot  
cannot get the best of it. It cannot

time for the other part of 2896

get the best of us either. We  
are afraid something is wrong and  
do not know what to do so  
we are giving it a fight like  
we never did before but it is  
quite an extent and cutting us  
off from the direction we came  
on Scamlon sent me to get  
you help.  
"Have you got your tracker with  
you sergeant?"

"No sir he's seriously burned"  
So your men are being attacked?  
We'll go forth immediately. We  
too have been attacked and Simpson  
Brown and George Gross are killed.  
An exclamation of rage broke  
from the sergeant.

"I expect" said Scamlon as we were  
now hurrying forward that some  
of the constables was acting  
very suspicious before we turned  
back from the trail and concluded  
that we all had some suspicion  
that newly formed armoulers were  
in league with the main one and  
so when the party separated it  
from its head started this blaze  
we fought and wiped out."  
"I expect that" the sergeant  
agreed. And now the first thing is  
to help Scamlon yet what do you  
mean to do. We've given up all hope  
of any one having a chance to  
overcome this armouler. So don't let  
it influence you but just do as  
you think best. Here we are  
at the fire. The men are very  
strong in force that is evident  
but yet it is being a very

2897 serious business fighting  
I without sleep  
"I'm even if possible going to fight  
some part of the armouder until  
I subdue it" I said "that is to  
say as long as I have these  
curious with me I don't as you  
gentlemen to go at that for I know  
it is a serious risk but it is  
my duty to fight this confounded  
armouder to a finish and I mean  
to do it well never have softly  
any where until this damn armouder  
is overcome"

Yes no heart of us it is something  
every body out of their cities and  
towns go I think you are right  
the sergeant said "and as long as  
you go on against the armouder  
I go with you for in what ever  
comes of it I am at the men  
fight. The fire is getting way  
now"

"Yes but it is a serious one and  
hard to fight" I said "I will tell  
you what my idea is some of  
Swallow men are already worn  
out and they must have water  
and they all be half mad with thirst  
I propose that we also take two  
water water with us  
walk us and that is immediate  
push forward sending two of the  
constables back to the rest stations  
with the thirsty fatigued men  
I propose that we should push  
forward immediately  
my expect this fierce attack is  
a severe one we will fall upon  
it right away to relieve Barclay  
and wife it out like we did to  
the fire that we fought what  
do you think of the plan?"

"I think it is a good one"  
said Deuben warmly a capital

time for the other part of 2891

plan the best plan certainly 2898  
for no you say a good conversation  
with me all agreed this fire  
and half an hour later the  
whole troop assembled in a long  
front like an army going into battle  
moved in for the fight. The fire  
was holding its own but it  
sure showed that assistance was  
in vain.

But this fire was bigger more  
extensive than the other we fought  
This time scarce a word was spoken  
on the companies fought along the fire  
front in lines of soldiers on a battle  
field it was possible although very  
improbable that the fire on slightly  
retiring before the attack of our  
Swallow men and now our companies  
might have left some of its  
scattered bonfires to start up.

A new blaze arose.  
Deuben would however certainly antic-  
ipate on us pushing forward  
voluntarily this night. The fire had  
tried to pile up high and it attempt-  
ed to keep on burning fiercely no  
matter how desperately we contested  
it. In an hour too Deuben and  
his companies fought steadily forward  
and then the most tried of the  
fighters were glad to throw themselves  
down on the unburned wheat for well-  
needed rest while fresh men re-  
lieved them. In some places were  
placed for strict orders to keep  
bright. Lookout through the field  
to watch if there is any spread  
but on no account to raise their  
heads above their level and  
arrangements having been made for

2898 their relief every two hours.  
The rest of the companies were  
now more fiercely engaged.  
except to relieve the sentries  
there. There was no other motive among  
them then there was a more general  
movement against the flames  
and soon all were fighting more  
valiantly and the fire gradually  
giving way.

It was overwhelming odds were against  
us. There was no harm in a flanking  
movement. I suppose I suppose  
Dick Custer said solemnly.

"No, I think we can risk that."  
I replied. "The heat of this  
fire is wonderfully intense but it  
could be a great deal hotter  
than I can give it credit  
for. We were the first to gain and  
spread on us and we could tell  
by it, if we were to notice  
the smoke of a fire smaller  
fires curling up among the wheat and  
grain. I suppose Reuben concluded  
as the fray went desperately on  
with more fighting adding "you  
have heard of a good many  
bad businesses with the front  
of two fires like this."

No, this is the worst  
I ever saw.  
Though this blaze was certainly  
growing way slowly before us we  
were having a hard time of it  
with the left flank which was  
of course burning stronger and fiercer  
than the other section and after  
it did retreat a little it threatened  
to flare up all over because  
of the excessiveness of the smoulders  
for smoking radars.  
Of course our men were be-  
coming more and more numerous  
than before.

time. On the other part of 2890.  
the line the middle

2899  
I do not know as if they were  
as desperate before as they are now  
but their fighting was not as  
progressive as desired on the flames not  
likely or so ready as to take life  
without our being in sole guard.  
at this spot there was a much larger  
run of fields open to this fire  
and many men who had escaped  
from the boat and took to the fighting  
front were content to overcome the fire  
some way or other.

Some took their rifles and scythes  
and other equipment so that for a time  
the fire along their front did not trouble  
them beyond perhaps coming along the  
edge of an acre and burning a quarter of  
the wheat in so when not so severely  
assailed along that front. I saw at a distance  
cattle running about. They were scared  
because of the fire.

"We will divide into four big companies"  
I said. Sergeant Bonner with four others  
shall work up from the other end of the  
burning field. Five others shall make  
detour and get right on the other side  
of this fire and I with the other three  
and Kaliko will come down on the fire  
from this side. Kaliko will place off  
all of the companies taking them by  
turns on each side. I think he thinks is  
safe and then will return to me.  
Only as we shall attack it from  
four sides let everyone be careful  
about low level recklessness otherwise  
we shall be big casualties all will  
remain quiet until I give the  
order then an inflaming assault  
must be made at once.  
The plan was carried out as  
arranged and within half an hour  
harm.

Modifying  
the  
line  
the  
middle



2900 The four companies were concentrating in the positions allotted to them within fairly good range of the mill but slowly burning without this time the flames attempted no resistance but began to quickly yield. It was soon over and yet was left still as a thundering smoulder. No one this time was scorching.

and so to their great disappointment it turned out a smoulder. Here we all were greatly vexed at the lack of success of the fight for all had hoped that they at last were totally conquering the fire.

Reuben and I were especially disgusted yet fiercely we went at this threatening smoulder before it could get a big start.

We attacked this smoulder at full swing. Another minute they had reached the scene and joined the other company who had made straight for the smoulder before it got too progressed and had begun to swim forward. I shouted and break through this smoulder.

With a shout the men rushed at the smoulder like madmen.

Sergeant O'Connor Reuben said do you with your men keep up an assault on its rear. Don't let a flame flare up there. We shall have the right flank upon us in no time.

So saying he ran forward and joined those who were attacking the rear. The smoulder here speedily gave way. There was a rush forward. There was a sharp short fight but in five minutes it was over.

as the fight was it had.

time for the other part of 2901 the fire to rally 2901

From a valley of buckets of water Reuben shouted "then charge it." The order was obeyed and in a minute the fire on the river were dancing higher and higher among the wheat cutting down every thing before them and dealing tremendous blows among the burning wheat with their implements.

The charge was irresistible and in another five minutes the main body of the fire were receding.

The companies were advancing in their machine order.

"Make your way forward and steadily and carefully. Let each man watch his neighbor to the right and left and keep in line as much as you can."

I shouted. The fight now progressed in earnest but the fighters gradually made their way forward. Not only had they the advantage in equipment but they the way that they were able to use them gave them an immense advantage over the fire. Several times emboldened by their superior numbers the men made a desperate rush at last the resistance of the fire became better feeble.

and soon was overcome smoulder and all. This time no one had received burns or scorching among the men but Al Reuben and Thomas George Thorne got it badly.

While fighting desperately Reuben had felt a sharp pain on his hat iron had been forced across his cheek.

Thorne uttered a shout of exultation as he saw the fire give way. He again raised his long pipe to strike. In an instant a tongue of fire scathed him fiercely, and the fire fire fighters weapon dropped from his

1900) hand as he let out a yell for  
the flame had wrapped  
himself around his chest and belly.  
Johnny some hands before him  
hurling to the ground. Johnny drew  
long broadsword with his left  
hand and Reuben and his weapon  
slashed simultaneously together.

Reuben was slightly the quicker  
quickest and this saved his life.  
Lines of cloth.

He cut down the flaming wheat  
whose tongue of fire had reached down  
Johnny. Yet still it had wrapped  
around his body though miraculously  
it was somewhat diverted from  
its aim by Reuben who from its  
horns received a badly scorched  
cheek and left shoulder arm  
and all his skin was singed off.

Seeing by the change in  
Johnny's face and by his collapsing  
falling figure that he was  
badly burned he leaped from  
his horse. Johnny still had a  
broadsword. Johnny tried to  
raise it but in vain.

Then he reeled in his saddle  
the broadsword dropped from his  
hand and he fell heavily  
over on to the ground. Once leaped  
Reuben had at once leaped  
to the ground from his horse  
and ran to save him who now  
lay motionless as he had been  
fallen. He found he was in-  
vulnerable.

Reuben turned he raised  
his head to his shoulder and a  
minute later he galloped up.

"You both badly burned"  
captain? asked as he leaped  
off my horse for Reuben's face  
was red in a labile and his  
left arm hung useless.  
Nothing to speak of re-  
sue to Johnny first. There

290?  
is some water in my flask in  
the holster just bring it here and  
sprinkle his face. He got the same  
kind of fire treatment that Daniel  
Jones received. I got scorched trying  
to save him. I hope he is not  
too seriously burned but that seemed  
of a flaming tongue wrapped com-  
pletely around him that I'm afraid  
he is badly burned.

"To be done for captain I asked  
glancing at the firestruck figure of  
the man, as I proceeded to obey  
Reuben's instruction, he said if you  
and I were about it, it would be of  
no use trying to save him."

There is no fear of that re-  
sue. He is burned but I hope he  
is not dead for I would rather that  
he survive.

It was some time before I saw  
Johnny. His eyes just as Daniel  
and little Angelina ran up. For a  
moment he looked vaguely around  
then as his eyes wandered down  
and Angelina saw Reuben's face and  
they uttered a little cry.

Johnny tried to raise himself  
hunched in a sitting posture.

"What is it captain? Are you and  
Johnny badly burned?"

"Do not look so alarmed" said  
Reuben. "Thank God Johnny has recovered.  
I can assure you I am not much  
burned, only a scorch on my  
face and a scorched shoulder."

"And at that risk you have  
risen from Johnny? I saw you fight  
the fire trying to kill him."

"Yes thank God and his blessed  
Mother, I have had that your fortune  
Reuben said quietly "and this time  
for good for this brief fine and  
never smallest us again."

"But can I do something, your  
face is burned dreadfully. Reuben

2904 But one laid it up and  
opening a narrow path she  
proceeded to handage Reuben. face  
look of the long long and with  
faint stranger scarf which I wore  
around my neck.

"I think Dorothy this would  
make a ally for his arm and whom  
that in done the captain will be  
quietly right. Do you think you  
can ride back on it? I asked  
whom I had fastened my scarf  
on will you wait till I go to  
bring one of those wagons and also  
fetch horses."

"I think I can ride back well  
enough Reuben said to me trying  
to rise to his feet but I  
saw that he found himself  
unable to do so. The fire after  
ceasing his shoulder had  
burned downward also reaching  
the leg and calf of his left  
leg all around and the burn  
was a much more serious  
one than he had imagined.  
"No I don't think I can ride back  
on my horse in danger."

"Then is a light buggy  
at my farm and the farmer  
whose wheat we sowed I let want  
a man to fetch it. I sent  
I think it will do the best  
way" I agreed and the farmer  
mounted his horse and rode  
off.

"I was about a half an hour  
or maybe less before he arrived  
bringing the cart but before he  
arrived Beardon and Canby thinking  
had ridden up on horse back  
"I'm glad to say we succeeded  
and have wiped this fine altogether  
over the mountains that threatened  
to frown."

At this moment a horse back  
was heard approaching and  
Kaleho galloped up.

2905 He had left his horse  
against the night front of the  
fire being unable to obtain any  
information as to what had taken  
place during Reuben's front battle.  
His men were at a stand  
still and so was the fire along  
his front. Six of his men were  
killed Colonel Burden had just before  
he rode ridden off to get help  
but the unknown men the road  
and the men forced to give way  
showed him which had taken  
place and Kaleho at once started  
for some seeking help.

His horse was a very inferior one  
to that ridden by Reuben and until  
he met Carter returning with two  
more companions he had been obliged  
to follow the track of the horses  
at the front so he did not arrived  
at the scene of our fight till  
half an hour after its conclusion.  
I hastily sent three quarters  
of my force to the assistance of  
his men.

Kaleho uttered exclamations of dis-  
may at seeing Reuben's face for  
he had been gradually growing  
faint and now scarcely support  
himself on his horse. Kaleho  
had however taken the pre-  
caution to carry with him a  
bottle of spirits, having an  
eye to his own comforts as  
well as to the possibility of its  
being required.

He now knocked off the neck  
and poured some into the cup  
of Reuben's flask and put  
it to his lips.

"I thank you Kaleho that is  
just what I wanted  
You must be down quiet."

2906 Kaliko said "no good now to sit up" and cutting a large bunch of wheat he placed it under Reuben's head and Reuben lay just in a half drowsing state until Mr. Barker rode up.

The interruption was caused by a low groan from Thorne. "I wish I could shoot these air imprisoned criminals dead. Kaliko who was supporting Reuben's head exclaimed "I wish they had gotten into the hands of my men."

"No one can do that now since they're back at being a King. Mr. Barker said moving towards Thorne. "He is the most thorough record breaking record or all record, a record breaking record and a country wide devastation."

They're in prison now since no other city would allow them taking to their prisons. One cannot wish they could wish escape the mobs mean long being even for their own sake for there is enough to against them to hang them. Ten times over. How even we must do what we can for poor Thorne. He does not deserve this."

So saying he mixed some brandy with a little water in the cup and poured it between Mr. Thorne's lips.

"Is the driver mortal?" Thorne asked.

"I don't think so" he said fancy his front body was scarily scathed though at last came the cart. Kaliko put a quarter of

of straw in the bottom of the light cart and Carthen and Jim Scanlon raised Reuben and laid him in it. "We must take poor Thorne too" Kaliko said. "We must save him if he can."

"You two little girls had better get up in front with the driver" Kaliko said when the two wounded men had been placed in the cart. On look here. Karler will take my horse and I will drive and then I can look after you two and any one of you girls can use me as a proof if you feel weak. But before we start I must insist on you two taking a sip of brandy and water. It is no use of your saying no because we are hals and supposed to."

he persisted on the little girls shook their heads. "We shall have you of wanting before we get to the Uschen Castle if you don't."

Finally the two little girls did as they were advised. Kaliko then helped them up to their seat as Angels. herself got up. Her eyes fell upon Reuben's face.

"Oh Mr. Kaliko" she said "he looks as if he were dead. You are not trying to deceive us are you?"

Bless me and the fire fighting leader said cheerfully "I believe he is what is called dead asleep. The severity of the blows the sudden reaction after the long exertment and the excitement of his own fighting have caused him to fall into a deep sleep. My opinion is that he is sound asleep."

2908 Carter do you beat Seubens  
 have while the sergeant takes the  
 other and then you take better  
 ride on and keep xalpo and  
 Donald. Aunard fight the fire still  
 burning along their front and  
 or commanded. We will head for  
 the western hill battle which is only  
 half a mile away. It is now  
 medical center where its rooms can  
 be used as one. They all get up a  
 bed at once for Captain Whitney  
 and the other from officers who in  
 worst turned. So saying I touched the  
 horse with the whip and the  
 cant moved slowly on with Scan-  
 lon riding beside it. He would  
 have gone on ahead to the castle  
 to have assisted in the prepara-  
 tion but he expected at any  
 moment to see Angelina or  
 Dorothy faint and thought it better  
 to remain with them in case  
 their assistance was required.  
 The journey occupied some  
 time for Mr Scanlon picked the  
 way carefully so as not to get  
 jolted the cart.  
 Mr Scanlon endeavored to keep  
 the attention of the little girls fixed  
 by asking them questions as to  
 what they had heard the desperate  
 fight wondering when the flames  
 would be overcome and whether  
 the fighters were burned.  
 I think Angelina and you too  
 Donald that you are looking a  
 little better now I said so  
 bad you witness this terrible process  
 I fortunately the medical center on  
 the best of part of the castle  
 will be able to make some beef  
 tea or even beef noodle soup  
 soup. They will get it made  
 hot and will have bowls  
 of strong beef soup for you  
 too. I but will do wonders with it.

one of tell what actually you 2909  
 saw that at you two little girls  
 so upset.

I heard from Dorothy what had  
 I did or we did as you told us  
 Colonel Dwyer and did not go near the  
 fighting lines. We never saw the men  
 fight the fire so desperately and bravely  
 as they did there two. We saw men  
 leap a sharp look out for any danger  
 spread and one of them was always  
 on guard by the main fighting front  
 so there did not seem any possibility  
 of danger.

We were so excited at the sight  
 of the battle were not hungry  
 for any midnight meal which came to  
 us from the nearest chuck wagon.  
 As they were warming and carrying  
 all before them I saw Tom whom  
 overwhelmed by the lust of the flame  
 which caught him around his  
 body and head.  
 Seubens with his long scythe rode  
 swiftly forward to save him cut  
 down that flaming wheat but got  
 scorched himself.

We shrieked and looked at the  
 sight yet he struggled on but the  
 flame had got the better of both.  
 I heard Angelina scream and when  
 I must have feared for the  
 the next thing I knew was seeing  
 her poor Seubens reel from his  
 horse and fall to the ground.  
 I was so muffled up in my wraps  
 and the fire raged so close  
 and held ground so tight that  
 I felt it was no use for the rest  
 of the men to struggle on. I made  
 up my mind to sit quite still  
 till they put somewhat forward  
 and then I think I intended to try to  
 to soak my clothes with water so  
 get hold of a scythe if I could not  
 fight the fire too if it killed me.

2910

~~Sketch of the battle~~ - ~~Sketch of the battle~~ at

"imply to gun" ?

"There did not at that time seemed the least hope of success the fire burned so hotly Mr Stanley and his men were away to the center fighting the fire like against an enemy army entering their defense against him on a battle field and it seemed would not win for hours... I supposed the two companies under Mr Parker were whipped and all the men around were driven away by the heat and from the distance you said you were young I did not think you could whip this fire for days."

Presently I saw Reuben stop near his house and then dismount to aid Mr Parker. When I heard him speak freely I knew the fire had not killed him and that Reuben was trying to assist him. When you announced him I could not be sure what you said because I could not hear plainly through the din of the shouting fighting men.

Then the fire was conquered and beaten out and I suddenly with Angeline ran over to Reuben."

Soon came the immediate news that Kaliko had wiped out the fire along his front altogether without scorcher and Parker were meeting fierce resistance. One of the fighters is scorched but all the rest of Kaliko's men have killed his fire and were hastily going to the aid of the other. This distance was not quite so near the head wave of the smoke as we thought it was.

2911

It yet is a record breaking fighting front the men are attacking like an army of savage wild cats. But it is only the second fire to day in it not at least it seems to me."

"It is the second fire yet" I answered "When we found it was trying to gain the lead on us and I learned from the scout that the fire had started on a backward spread I was naturally very anxious about the outcome knowing as I did what desperate actions the fire was capable of."

So we started towards that direction at once and after a very sharp fight with the inferno got over to that spread and finally whipped it to death. Of course in his fighting Kaliko then had not progressed much further along his front and Reuben and I came to his assistance and in the terrific fracas both got burned, and then men defeated."

I pushed on to their heap and made some success after the urgent maddening fight we even had been in but so many men were done up with exhaustion that they had to be withdrawn to replace them. It was then that Reuben and I had got so badly scorched and stand scorched. Kaliko and Parker are still still stubbornly resisted."

The tears were standing in the eyes of the little girls and Dorothy laid her hand on mine and said quietly:

"Thank you for saving poor Parker and I did this because you were uneasy about what the fire

2912

might do?"

"I had to see if it was a good reason to be uneasy girls. If it had become another big conflagration none of us will make no attempt to stop it. We had enough of the other big fires and want no more. Two of our best fighting leaders are burned and I won't stand for no more under any other conditions. If another big one got started I'd shoot the first man who'd try to fight it. My word is law."

When the cart arrived to the water castle hill they stopped at a relief station. A nurse came out and as the two little girls descended from the cart the nurse clasped them in turn in a long embrace.

"Come straight in here," my dear," the nurse said. "I've got a cup of cold water and hot beef noodle soup and the two together will do marvels. We will attend to your two wounded heroes."

Reuben remained perfectly quiet and inert as he was lifted out and carried into the station where a bed had been made up for him in a room on the ground floor.

Just lay him down, I know a blanket over him and let him be perfectly quiet."

"Do you think he is really asleep?" I asked as I looked at the quiet face.

"He really is asleep," the nurse said, replied. "But your ear close to his mouth. He is breathing as quiet as a child and he added placing his finger on Reuben's wrist. This

2913

2913

pulse is a little fast but regular and a little fast just twenty-four hours of sleep will set him up again unless I am greatly mistaken. I don't think his lungs will turn out anything very serious. Let me think was it not that Doctor said well was here just now?"

"Yes," he said in right now said another nurse.

"That is lucky. He will be surprised at finding two new patients on his hands now. I will go and have a look at poor Mr. Thorne. I brought in also, give me a cup full of strong brandy. I will pour it between his lips. You had better go and look after Dorothy and Angelene. You will not be needed here at present. I Reuben under Henry. Let us know directly."

I had seated myself by Reuben's bed.

I was very anxious to know what was taking place along Kalika fight line front and whether many of our fellows had been killed fighting the stubborn fire. If as Dorothy had said she heard captain Scanlon tell Carter that all the fire now had been killed, it has indeed been a most successful night and no other I can hardly be sufficiently

sufficiently grateful to Reuben for having rid us of this new fire. What with that and the throwing of the tanks new snipers will be well won when the main remainder is gone.

exposed  
of him

concluded

2.2.14 Dorothy came out of the room with Angelina and the nurse, a minute later the Beef noodle soup and the tea had had the effect the nurse predicted a little later had returned into their cheeks and they looked altogether more like themselves.  
"How is he?" Angelina asked.  
"In my opinion he's doing very well," said Dorothy, "his pulse is quite strong and he's breathing as quietly as a child, and I believe he is simply in a state of exhaustion from which he is not likely to wake till tomorrow morning, and I predict that in a few days he will be up and about. I'm sure if those burns don't make him otherwise, I see no reason why he shouldn't be up to-morrow."

"That is indeed a relief to us both," Dorothy said while Angelina could only clasp her hands in silent thankfulness.

and now what is Sergeant Donald's news? I hope he is none the wiser for all this excitement!

"He was terribly agitated at first," Dorothy said, "and it was as much as I could do to get him to lie down for he burned as he is. He wanted to mount and renew his fire fighting although of course he was as weak as a child and with the help of the nurse he could scarcely get into bed again. Fortunately the nurse was in before she started on her back to fetch you to

say that my danger was keeping Reuben tight 29/15 the third fire and that quieted him. Then I think he was occupied in trying to cheer us for as soon as he was in bed we broke down and cried until a messenger came to say that the fire was whipped but that Reuben and Thorne were severely burned."

He brought to the relief of all took a look at Reuben having been told all the circumstances of the case and he inferred the nurses report of opinion that he was really in a deep sleep.

"I would not dare wake him on any account," he said, "it is a most great effort of nature and he will be so hope awake quite himself of course. I can't say anything about the burns till he does but that's a nasty one on his cheek. Now for his burned companion."

Thorne was still unconscious though occasionally broken wails came from his lips. The sergeant then examined his burns.

"He is badly burned around chest back and belly and arms too," he said "and will be suffering badly. I don't think there is a shadow of the Reuben being so extremely serious but he will take a long time to recover. He is much burned than Reuben. Reuben I thought was a great deal to do this to himself and ruin the third patient and his burns."

It was sometimes in Donald's room and when he came out



2916 proceed at once to nurse him  
of something draught from the case  
of medicines he had in the re-  
servation.  
We must get him off to sleep  
if we can. He said or we shall  
have him in a high state of  
fever before morning. I mean  
with his burns nearly as bad  
as Thomas and in his state could  
go through such excitement as he  
has done without paying the  
penalty. And now I suppose I have  
done he said with a smile as  
the nurse left the room with  
the medicine.

"Yes I think so" one of the other  
nurses said. "yet we would have  
liked to put these little  
girls under your charge but I  
think that the assurance of Mr  
Donald that Captain Whitney was  
doing well has been a better  
medicine than you could give  
them."

"No wonder they are shaken poor  
little girls" the surgeon remarked.  
Mr. Dwyer tells me you had quite  
a shock seeing how Deuben and  
Thomas got so burned."

"Yes" Angelina replied. "we  
were stunned for a time  
but beyond so terrified and  
so full of anxiety we are none  
the wiser for it."  
"How were you good nurse little  
girls" the doctor said after feeling  
their pulses. "I suppose you want  
to be about to morning when  
our brave army of fire fighters  
returns. Now there is nothing  
you up can do here. We  
have nurses to take the  
care of these three burned"

ones. They too will take. 2917  
of the relief station and  
"say therefore seriously I would not  
you two little girls to take this  
draught. I am about to mix for  
both of you and to go up  
stairs and go to bed and sleep  
until to morning afternoon."  
"I can not sleep I'm too excited  
Angelina said."

"Very well then you both lie  
down just just without sleeping  
and if in that early morning you  
find you are not less still you can  
come down for an hour or two  
but I really must insist on  
you lying down for a bit now  
Miss Jennings (to the nurse) will  
you take this medicine up and  
put the little girls to bed?"

"I hope they will get off to sleep."  
I myself said.

"I have no doubt of it" the  
doctor replied. "I have given them  
a very strong sleeping draught  
far stronger than I should think  
of giving at any other time.  
But after the tension the poor  
little girls must have gone  
through it would need a strong  
dose to take effect. I think you  
will hear nothing more of  
the little girls till the  
morning."

"Oh Doctor" the nurse coming  
in cried. "Poor Thomas has recovered  
consciousness. A nurse  
is sitting up with him. He  
asked for water then lay for  
some time quiet when he said  
"am I drowning or was it Deuben  
who saved my life?"

2918 "yes it was Captain Reuben  
 Whitney our fighting leader" the  
 nurse replied. "a time Doctor  
 he lay quiet again and then said  
 "I want to see him" he badly  
 burned? Oh? hope not? know the  
 fire got him too when he rushed  
 forward to save me"  
 "Not too badly? hope?" answered  
 "you got it much worse when  
 he was tell him to come to  
 me the man said. I know?  
 a dept of gratitude. I know?  
 am seriously burned and he  
 too in saving me but?  
 want to see him? if he can't  
 come let some body else come  
 then"

and the Doctor went to see him.  
 The doctor said he really well  
 one just then some messenger  
 came to me saying Kaliko was  
 in trouble. He told me what  
 a woman had said, a few words  
 passed between me and the  
 messenger. The doctor at once  
 began to ask me questions about  
 what the messenger said.

Kaliko is still making a  
 most desperate effort against the  
 fire along his front Doctor.  
 Of course the fire is not able to  
 advance against him and he  
 is not able to force on either.

It is a very old story to  
 have this happen and in which  
 I am concerned but it will be  
 a great gratification for me to  
 have this cleared up as soon  
 as possible. I am already sent  
 him from well myself just now  
 to assist him and will bring  
 all mine and Stanley too.  
 Further has already gone with his

men. Four men were imprisoned for  
 for they were starting the affair  
 real and sentenced to long  
 for life. Their imputation will rest  
 on them all their lives? at the  
 beginning thought the fire was  
 incendiary though at that time I could  
 not prove it? shall right now send  
 Banks and the Scandals well with  
 half of my men and come with  
 the rest. It is curious? I went on  
 that the far reaching radiance of  
 the fire would not set this going  
 in two places, while so far as  
 I could see every thing that has  
 happened seems to threaten much  
 more.

2919  
 I am terribly sorry for poor Reuben  
 Reuben I looked at him as I went out  
 and except that nasty bandage over his  
 face he looks quite himself. The  
 doctor says his scorched shoulder is  
 a mere nothing and now as we  
 know what sort of a burn it is  
 there is no occasion for the slightest  
 anxiety. Here come some more  
 messengers. Here Stanley and you  
 two. I can't go quick to Kaliko.  
 and I have already sent Carter  
 and Reddy and Skulley and  
 I will follow quickly. But do  
 remember me to our dear neckties.  
 It does not pay?

It is necessary to say we did not  
 actually go personally to Kaliko's assistance  
 along his front. We desperately savagely  
 closed in on the inferno. I cannot  
 describe to save my life how  
 the iron worked at night. I never  
 saw anything like it. In the first  
 resistance was it vain? It was  
 being beaten and slashed out with  
 out many more.

2920 at three o'clock in the morning it was all out. At four in the morning we returned from the fire fighting exhausted, hot and sleepy. The complete destruction of these two new fires and the energy in which they had been fought and into the very heart of the territory is making a vast sensation everywhere. The next morning Reuben was awake.

"Now Captain Whitney you must come into my room and let me bandage up your shoulder properly. I hadn't had half the time to do it before. The doctor said as I visited Reuben, 'I do not however there is any necessity for to lie in bed though providing always that you will keep yourself very quiet. I shall bandage your arm as soon as your chest is there. I can see no movement of the burned shoulder and when that is done I think you will be all right.'"

Indeed it was not until the time came when the sun was supposed to be well up that I not for the dawning sun that Dorothy said she could hardly believe that she had slept all night. But she realized she had done so. She still felt upset and shaken all over but was otherwise herself again. She dressed hastily and went down stairs. That's right my dear the nurse said she was busy in the medical department. You look funny like you self. "Where's

When still asleep, I didn't want to awaken her. How is Captain Whitney and Thorne?

Captain Whitney has gone to see how poor Thorne is. I don't think Donald Aunand is awake yet. Thorne will survive but will be in the hospital long. He going to the one in Chester Brown. The doctor is sitting up with him till the ambulance comes to take him. The doctor said Thorne may be in the hospital too four months or so. Reuben will not need to go."

Reuben was on the way. I had a funny feeling, a feeling that made me late my wrist. I could just have had my mistake there. Four seconds I would have well never mind. And now another day of reckoning.

Another long description - but conclusion. Caused by four fire ships just for revenge on a certain flame. Two great conflagrations and now their two terrific armoulters combined in one final onslaught upon humanity wrecking a flaming vengeance which in unparalleled in the history of this country and communities of the world. A united country had not yet recovered from the shock it experienced on receiving the news of the two awful conflagrations and destruction of so many farms and towns and surroundings. Towns and villages by fire. I had been through great storms of rain and for days there had been no

2922 the slightest rain and the days were very unseasonal hot and calm. Then the four firestorms and the conflagration, four hundred acres were lost fighting the second and a great worst one.

Then more than 100 miles six hours after the conflagration had ended but eighty miles of farm land wheat and grain came the second change and great mysterious smoulders which refused to burn out and covered hundreds of miles of northwestern, northeastern corn-munities with dense fogs of smothering smoke and spouting fire reaching heights.

This is to make it a memorandum. In this year, records not even of my descriptions cannot depict the horror of it all, nor can record conceive of the loss. I myself can state that of my fighting men upwards of 200 lost their lives fighting the second stage conflagration an incident of this devastating calamity.

The heat acts of the smoke down the population the inconvenience of it all the suffering from the record breaking hot weather caused by the smoulders the hardship the suffering and the Northern State under damage are almost beyond comprehension. It is billions the monetary loss in the affected territory is something like \$500,000,000. But these are empty figures. What estimate of value can be put upon "the sense" of those forced to flee their town or cities because of the smoke. Country wide or calculate the curtailed earning capacity of those driven from their activities.

because of untold wheat and smothering smog. Who can tell what the whole world has lost in the "wild" destruction of grain and other high crop and the cessation of grain elevator business.

Unfathomable losses, losses with persistent and recurrent reports of additional additional frightful calamities in the way of the spreading of the smudges the breaking out of heat producing the diseases the destitution of thousands were pictured for homeless armies of people within a short time after the conflagration turned into the vast smoulders.

I have to say that the exact extent of the appalling smoulders in Northern Illinois is not correctly estimated or unknown. Every hour since they began impresses us with the uncertainty of the actual situation. The smoulders have assumed such unknown extent and heat that it will be hardly less than a miracle if all villages and towns near it are not wiped out of existence in the southern northern southwestern and eastern parts of Illinois by the tremendous far reaching heat.

In Chicago and other big cities every hour is being filled with an usual accumulation of most dramatic circumstances.

This Northern Illinois situation is absolutely without parallel. So is all the nation against the four fire bugs. Still going strong.



2427

reaching there during the night. The station was crowded with refugees coming south from their homes because of the smoke. I got off the train here so that I could talk to them there as everywhere families were separated.

Again we returned to Bell Bloomington this time reaching the station at sundown and staying until eight o'clock in the morning. Every one was on the watch and you can imagine that the strain was tremendous since scarcely a person slept during the entire trip.

As everywhere else of soldiers as far as their numbers could stretch or reach it was barring the way to hordes of curious visitors from other cities.

Trains coming from the five main roads in every direction carried refugees from the smoldering cities and towns who told interesting stories described pictures - gave names and gave words of the damage wrought. Many of these were from New York and Philadelphia and other big cities. The freight and passenger trains which were without delay for hours in two days. While most of the time told by them were of the

to give graphic description of the horrors of the death of millions of people from the fact that the railroads were able to get their trains from the smoldering districts through Dayton and Columbus from Chicago and other places was the cause of a great influx of refugees into the East who for the first time were able to leave the stricken areas. It was among those who told these stories of the horrors of the ever increasing smolders were three persons Charles Mc Durnan, William Schloeder and Henry Dangersen. The reports from these persons agreed on the fact that among the fighters of the Union while fighting the war was great that a number of the best leaders were badly wounded had not been exaggerated. The property damage of wheat and to men by fire especially. When they said was beyond estimation.

For more than two hundred miles. In fact a mile east of our train we were practically out of sight of land and saw a mile away nothing but a vast cloud as if all that smoke was in a vast sea. "It was as if the refugees," said one of the refugees,

2929 "I wish it would rain in  
moments though I wonder if that  
would do any good. I believe  
the reports of the fire fighters  
killed is exaggerated, but I  
believe there is millions of dollars  
worth of farm property damaged  
however and no figure in this  
direction would be in excess of  
the actual loss. I do not know  
if I could pay high tribute to  
the people besieging the King  
King prison or not  
The people rallied to the camp  
magnificently. He continued, I saw  
it all from the slowly passing  
train near it. There was anger  
fury malice and here heroism  
displayed by strong young men  
women and children  
like in every age.  
It was an exhibition of courage  
unimpaired. Yet the prisoners  
is strongly built the walls  
and gates are undeniably firm  
and King King is strong  
and well defended  
Some of the besiegers have  
been shot and wounded men and  
even women. The camp about  
King is surrounded and all armed  
with weapons of all descriptions.  
If they ever force the prison  
and get hold of those four men  
it'll be too bad for them.  
More than three hundred re-  
fugees from Maudslayi reached  
any Indians on the second day  
of the smokeless train from  
obtained local trains from  
at the edge of the  
town and where some obtained  
a freight train for Rochester.

2930  
and a great crowd of thankful  
refugees gathered around the  
train before it left the city covered  
with soot and smelling of smoke.  
They stood waiting to get on  
countless thousands of acres of wheat  
land is burning by the thousands.  
Countless thousands of acres  
has in this part of Northern Ill which  
has been swept by one of the worst  
calamities in the history of the country.  
There are three most enormous farmer  
territories which catching from the  
"fire bug" fire caused all the trouble.  
They are named the McAdams  
the Macaerland train route and  
the Kankakee territories. They formed  
the largest continuous wheat field dis-  
tricts in the world.  
In fact they covered more than  
one quarter of the state. The main  
trouble arose from the direction of  
the prevailing wind.  
Now it is a tremendous smokeless  
country miles long and fifty wide.  
All the northern cities and towns are  
located north of the town and are  
within the smoke zone.  
The character of the smoke is  
asked in this chapter because it is  
almost an interlocking. It has no  
place in the original complaint but  
the conditions which developed at  
Galesburg justify the presentation  
of that city smoke calamities  
in its true relation to the entire  
calamity.  
This is the appeal the will of  
millions of the many smoke refugees.

771 that is the wall of sorrow  
that came from this city more  
than two days after the last  
large conflagration had subsided into  
the two big conflagrations that went  
burning out but grows worse. It is  
not a story filled with thrilling  
rescue nor deeds of heroism  
but the portrayal of dire conditions  
of which the country cannot  
little because the smoke coming  
practically shut it off from  
the world.

This is the appeal the like of  
which has been made in the  
interest of few communities.

"Galesburg needs help. It is not  
suffering for food nor for  
anything on the line of goods.  
It is almost depopulated because  
of so much suffocation of smoke.  
Even all prisoners of the Galesburg  
State Prison had to be  
underground taken to the prisons  
in Chicago or elsewhere. All  
manufacturing interests is frustrated  
by the going away of the workers  
managers and owners.

In the great swirl of disaster  
which is overwhelping the  
North Central Illinois so many  
northern cities and towns are  
no smoke choked that is being  
hard to differentiate.

Chicago too by the smoke  
smog and unbearable and spread-  
ing heat is suffering woefully,  
but proportionately Galesburg is  
suffering five times as much.  
This war is not being

presented to the world because 3932  
of the conditions which precluded the  
proper dissemination of the news.  
But Galesburg has no false pride.  
She wants it known. She is figur-  
atively upon her knees supplicating  
or supplicating.

Her factories, the eastern steel  
steel mills and numerous business  
houses are shut down because the workers  
joined the refugees.

The Governor assured all committees  
that he would do every thing possible  
to afford relief to the stricken people  
who fled the city. With no desire to  
make comparisons that would in any  
way minimize the seriousness of the  
situation in Chicago, the statement is  
justified after visiting Chicago and all  
other places north of the remainder  
that no city suffered in any degree  
comparable to Galesburg.

Galesburg lies in the near center of  
Northern Ill. and in the center of  
one of the richest farming districts  
of all in Ill. It has a good  
number of railroads running through  
here especially the Ill. Central and the  
Alton. It manufactures, contains  
one of great importance and reputation.  
The financial institutions have stood  
at the head most to Chicago. It  
has large steel mills and an  
immense prison.

Galesburg distress is infinitely worse  
than any other town as it is getting  
the worst of all the smoke.  
Galesburg needs help and needs it  
at once. It is in tears and appeal-  
ing.



2933 The general opinion at first that the city would be saved in a few weeks when the smoke was gone was completely shattered after the committee had time to make a tour of the Sarnouthern edge south of her and see for themselves what amount of smoke there was.

The plea to the newspaper men not to paint the picture of the smoke situation "so black" was changed to a frank appeal to place the exact situation before the world.

I read this from the Relief Committee in a letter to the Governor.

Our own telephone or telegraph message from you was the most encouraging message that has yet come to the people who had to face this smoke stricken city. Our community of 37000 people out of the whole population is frustrated in illness because of the smoke where they took such an agency to where many fled as Chicago also is too smoky.

Derultory reports indicate to us that other cities have suffered greatly but we can conceive no conditions worse than those that confront us. In the judgement of Colonel Howe head of our provisional military Government and others who have visited all of the smoke stricken cities the suffering in Joliet is far greater in amount than any of the smoke plagues cities put together. This judgement is confirmed by all newspaper men who over the smoulders got all the

stuff to make such a row of smoke. Our great industries will be paralyzed for months because all industrial workers are compelled to flee the cities, their owners and managers too and will incur tremendous losses because of lack of trade.

There is no loss of life among the refugees. Eventually we will recover when the smoke plagues quits but you will realize that our resources are at their limit even taxed. Joliet needs help and the only way is to put out an end to the smoulders. No false pride can resist this appeal. We want you to know. We want the world to know. Most respectfully,  
yours,

Joliet Relief Committee  
Hurray Clinton

Chairman

Director of public safety  
Every body in Joliet had left all their belongings behind so hasty was their flight thousands and many thousands whose very all had been left behind in their haste to escape smoke and over strong and over bearing heat.

Some farmers say the position of the planets has something to do with the savage fury and spreading of the uncontrollable smoulders.

Joe forgot his name but the director of the St. Observatory of the University of Cincinnati says the position of the planets has nothing to do with the nature of the smouldering fires. Yet some "science" he says is at a loss

2934 to determine the cause of the  
smoulders beyond the field of ob-  
servations.

So far says the professor the  
position of the planets has not  
been found to have anything to do  
with the smoulders, even the Sun  
spots have nothing to do with  
the smoulders although many good  
experiments have been made along  
this line.

It seems plausible but so  
far science has been unable to  
trace any such connection unless  
the tremendous storm like thickness  
of the lower regions of the wheat  
fields and ground being of relatively  
burning dry heat is the cause of  
the gaining of the smoulders.

The great conflagration came  
at a time when severe heat  
and dry weather since the awful  
tornado came on. However it is a  
bad time of the year and dry  
spells or even draughts are

usually expected;

Science can offer no reason  
for this situation. One point  
that strikes me most peculiar  
that the conditions of those worst  
smouldering fires are such that  
the smoulders can produce such  
intense heat as to reach the  
and cover the whole northern side  
and other states with so much  
hot weather and smouldering.

far reaching smoke smog,  
It looks as if something is  
wrong with the awful  
smoulders and what are they really  
burning. And could a long be  
burning have put an end to them.  
I doubt it. It might only make  
the smoke much worse.  
believe all that country side

and all the rest of the 2836  
burn what fields are  
doomed no one can fight these  
smoulders. It would be suicide  
It is wrong that no money wheat  
fields and nothing else should be  
allowed to be planted and sub-  
jected to such dangers of fire.

I understand that the greatest  
suffering in Joliet and Chicago  
is due to all this smoke so  
bad this could not not be  
preventable. I am sorry should have  
more low eyes and not so  
much wheat. This is all done  
done to the carelessness of so  
many farmers rather than  
the selfishness of

as selfishness of nations  
not in the history of all  
communities outside of war time  
has there been a smoke smelter  
to that which maintained a  
mouth of the smoke stricken  
city of Chicago when the  
Federal State and local authorities  
established a war "rental city"

for the smoke no fugues.  
The city of Kansas was established  
northwest of Chicago where countless  
thousands of homeless people  
were temporarily sheltered. They  
could not be sheltered in the  
city because of the smoke  
smog there driving many away.  
from there also.

Families had been separated  
some lost and men, women  
and children were frantic.  
The rental city is growing

2934 to determine

2937 from time to time as emergency demanded and ample provision was provided for the stay of all while in camp. Each tent accommodated usually five persons but because of the crowded conditions it is necessary in many instances to put more than this number in a tent until others arrived.

To augment the care of those whom the smoke drove from their cities towns and villages and whom the smoke left homeless with a prospect of being indefinitely without shelter, additional refugee stations were established out side of various Chicago sections. The tents for the shelter of the smoke driven refugees were sent by the war departments and from the headquarters of the Illinois National Guard.

All these are being supplied with ration.

A distressing feature to be noticed in the districts adjacent to Garyville is what was once Garyville was the scene of hundreds of miles of farm lands. The south and northwesterly winds seemed to have done their worst there.

Farm houses, silos, barns and out houses were included in the wide spread spectacle of fiery destruction the worst witnessed by far distant accidents. So much has been said of this vast fire field destruction in connection

with the two big conflagration 2938 and the two fences farmhouses fires, that the following comment is given from an article in the Chicago city newspapers.

The latter sections of the wheat fields when thrashed probably have never been cut away and fresh wheat or grain would renew among them. Far from lacking cohesiveness qualities and thickness the roots left over stem are made to increase internally and become thicker with each renewed growth.

This typical was of continual rooting in being increased every year by only the highest stems being thrashed.

From never a beam cut how enough the broom like mass under and being increased all the time.

This is a frightful economic loss because the north central part of Illinois is also losing its precious soil so rapidly that

the far fire also cannot be stopped. All that wheat stems not cut away all these years is burning so much from their intermixture thickness that

there is vastly too much of it to burn out. I don't believe a torrential rain of long duration would put it half way out, and only increase

the smoke a hundred fold and smoke out all the northern part of the country to a finish.

and also a tremendous amount of fire volume under what the rain seems to put out. The state the eighty eight counties and the cities and towns and all northern farm farms are face to face with a most discouraging problem of the smoke situation in which the one ray of hope

deleted  
at 7/12

law  
held null  
& void

2939 hope is the traditional capacity of the American to surmount all obstacles. Sympathy for those driven from cities and towns by all that smoke has made the whole world turn.

The will and the resolution to help even when it ~~costs~~ involves the most greatest sacrifice is general. And in all cases it means probably deprivation to the giver who is among those doing good by stealth.

Into the offices of Relief committees have filed the anonymous wage earners with their contributions; there in many cases were a part of their ~~own~~ means of support that could ill be spared. Sold and worn hats and silk dresses laid down with unspoken sympathy by men, women and children who wanted nothing said about it and turned and went out to face the struggle for existence once more.

These people did not think twice about whether they should help those in greater necessity than their own. They were always helping one another all their lives and it seemed not so much a duty as a natural thing to do to respond to the call from even the smoke-infested west where people had to flee their homes.

The spirit of helpfulness is so much abroad and so alive and unselfish among people of all conditions that the other hand of

2940  
man ceases to be a mere phrase of the idealists. It is a good thing for every body. Sympathy is a great good teacher. The man of position and wealth sees the working folk ~~anonymously~~ giving to the relief fund and deepening themselves of all necessities in the giving and there can be no envy in the heart of a poor man when he sees how liberal are the gifts of those whom he has not always been disposed to credit with sympathy for their fellows in distress and he begins to think that the man of means may also deny himself something when he gives alms to help in the common cause.

The stress of the situation is taxing the generosity of the cities to the limit. Social divisions lines are forgotten as all classes have thrown their homes to receive the sufferers.

Responding to appeals the contributions of money and possessions have been excessively generous. As for those who cannot be taken out of the smoke-stricken districts at once there are return trains with boxes of bread, smoke masks and so on. Many are there who refuse to leave their homes smoke or not preferring to stay or have another in not.

Still more to say it again it requires some such condition as prevailing in all nations and other states across the lake to make manifest the wonderful resources of this great country and from the un-

Probably  
out of  
the same  
page  
the

2946 bounded generosity of its citizens. No story ever would be complete that fails to tell of the heroic efforts the self sacrifice and the broad sympathy shown on every side by everyone whose real tribulation overtakes or makes naught of the glorious work performed by even the Government the national charitable and benevolent organizations the great financial corporations churches and any number of institutions and bodies around by a sense of duty.

Throughout all the country the length and breadth of the land men women and children gave unstintingly of their stores. Blackboards filled transported provisions medicines for those made ill by the smoke.

Traight in conceivable distress worst deprivation on all record by the worst conflagrations on record and most exterminious afflictions countless thousands of people in many cities and villages northeast of Illinois by intolerable smoke and unaccountable out of reason heat waves property loss in wheat and grain alone amounting to great many millions of dollars - all that the imagination can conjure from these words and more has hung over the American public like a persistent night mare filled with unwarmed horrors and has stirred the whole world with fits of our sorrow and sympathy for the smothered victims.

2947 And among our people our own people that sympathy has taken form in substance and substantial assistance for the smothered refugees by the gift of money provisions (clothing they need not) and government mental supervision.

The United States president set in motion every agency of the Federal Government for relief tents ration soldiers and medical supplies for smothered ill nations while many states and cities were quick to respond.

thrust

Following closely the disastrous major conflagrations the first of a far worse conflagration on all record the smoke from two major smoulders following swept across north and north eastern Illinois Indiana across the Southern part of the lake and parts of Wisconsin and Michigan.

The city of Galiet was the worst sufferer.

The smoke came thickest there. Owing to the swift mass of so much spreading smoke coming northeast through all the territory it is impossible to get adequate relief to the thousands of people who had fled to and taken refuge in all other places.

With each dispatch from so many distressed districts north of the smoulders it is becoming known that the first impressions of the smoke have been shocking as it is fall for beneath

2749

The dread reality. Hundreds of thousands overwhelmed by some famous count less stores of thousands spared from death by freezing the smoke honor only to suffer hunger and thirst and hardship and the pangs of the fire cities engulfed in some countless miles of populous wheat land destroyed by fire and over all the grim shadow of starvation and disease this awful catastrophe defies picture and parallel to express its awful devastating horror.

In the face of such a fearful disaster there are all persons who will say but there are some who will think that the four firebugs deserved this visitation to get even with that cotton farmer.

Such a concept is not revolting to sober judgment and to the instincts of the people.

It implies that vast multitudes of the innocent should suffer and die cruelly because of a revenge on a single farmer where all the inhabitants had nothing to do with the farmer winning in marriage the woman one of the four wanted. One of this was no vengeance deserved for human chattel slavery. It was a wicked revenge upon one man by four men who are inexorable.

On the farmer they took a terrible revenge and had not the slightest pity. They selected him as a victim and set out

2948

turn out to save those not responsible for his success in his marriage. They were incredibly cruel and wasteful. What they did resulted at fearful cost at the great trial they said they did not intend the fire to go that far nor knew it would.

Yet that no excuse. They ought to know what would happen. Men will ask themselves what lesson are taught by this overwhelming horror which remains unconquerable.

We do not doubt that there countless numbers who will be stunned by the shock of this dreadful disaster to a deeper and more sympathetic understanding with the conditions that surround us on all sides.

Many claim that by this fire disaster (the tornado before it) mankind is humbled by the great power of the almighty as all northern or middle northern ill with all its fertile fields still less devastated by the most extensive summer fire ever recorded especially by four firebugs.

At the start of this incandescence there grew a conflagration of most unparalleled destruction which swept with a second lung one started by its smolder all the way from what was once known to the Kanabos Kanabos river to and all mankind and claim as tens of hundreds of lives among the brave fire fighters besides untold millions of dollar worth of farm properties and towns in villages.

2945 And even now to day still  
the anger of the fire elements is  
not abated for the two big white  
hot emoulders taking up the war  
against humanity threatens to  
burst its bounds to renew more  
big wheat field fires despite the  
exceedingly desperate efforts of the  
fighters to prevent it and is winning  
everlasting recognition and fame and  
of overwhelming power by the  
threatened destruction of added millions  
of farming wheat land.

Like a great thousands of  
mule of black vultures the smoke is  
covering all northeastern country  
neighboring towns are still being  
deploded by the smoke swirling  
within a day or two and a great  
excess unusual heat were spread  
ing northward warm of recent  
do dangerous emoulders and threatening  
general wheat fire conditions.

The hundreds of miles size of  
the ominous cloud clouds that arose  
to an unexampled height into the  
sky and spread so far darkness  
over the country is causing the  
most greatest uneasiness to the  
good people of Chicago Gary Indiana  
and other northern cities.

Countless thousands of men  
women and children swept out  
of their cities towns and villages  
by awful smoke smogs.  
Scenes of suffering and desolation  
that beggar description miserably  
increasing. Hence efforts are being  
uncompulsed to keep increasing  
numbers of refugees to get away  
from this smoke terror. Countless  
millions of dollars of wheat

threatened by the slow spread of  
the emoulders, the whole nation 2946  
in all churches of any religion, the  
Jehova Witnesses, the armistice like Salo  
Salvation Army even the 3rd Mason  
Second Day Adventist the Quakers and  
Jews all praying for rain to quench  
this unspeakable horror.

The world is shocked by this  
appalling news. There have been many  
terrible calamities by forest fires  
city fires and other blazes in modern  
times but none to equal those two  
big conflagrations, when overcome became  
the most greatest and astonishing emould-  
ering fires on record.

All the people were not aware of  
this impending horror to be started  
by four revengeful men. The news  
of this overwhelming disaster caused by  
these four devilish men came as a  
stunning blow to people everywhere.  
They shudder why don't they  
let the people have them. They  
ought to be crucified burned while  
hanging on crosses.

All this section of Illinois was  
overstruck as this before. Again to  
say the stretch of Ill covered by the  
conflagrations and now there was great  
overriding inferno reaches from the western  
north and southern limits beyond the  
big debris windrows. It did not start from  
there.

The conflagrations especially the  
second and larger one swept all the  
section of middle northern Ill for its  
entire length across following along the  
southern side territory of the Mynas  
river banks and railroads. Had  
extending along the entire length of  
the railroad from 3 corners.

1941 The first main conflagration was put out of commission by counter firing. The second one could not be counter fired as the direction was always southwest, a northeast direction was needed to do that.

The extreme southern and northern section of the State was out of the path of the fire, the last big one hatched near Kankakee by the river of the same name. Kankakee city is still in danger from smoke, poisoning heat and the smoulders.

was the greater part of the damage done from west to southeast then to southwest to northeast extending the entire length from what was ~~formerly~~ to Kankakee.

By this day even city town or village or even hemlets northwest of the smoulders was filled with unfortunates fleeing from the awful smoke. All hospitals and institutions in all big cities were filled to capacity with these made miserable by smoke and heat, and in many of them the halls and corridors were crowded with cold with smoke sick patients and those with heat prostration.

Emergency hospitals are being established at various points and all available available physicians and nurses are pressed into full services for the relief of the smoke sickened refugees and the response is coming in scores.

The heart aches cannot match with the refugeeing of the fleeing smoke victims. Hardship and indescribable tribulation is following in the wake of fire devastation. All types smoke refugees must be sheltered and food and

water must be supplied to 2948  
those forced to flee their homes through the won whirl of smoke smog. Who would not have sympathy now for this farmer who was the one the farm not fire to his fields. His name I don't remember though he was called Farmer Jones.

He bought this farm nearly twenty years ago. Ever since he had been working and saving with all his might to improve his farm house and build a beautiful barn for the time he was to be married. He had paid all but two hundred and fifty dollars of the price of the new barn.

A month ago he won the girl of his marriage. Her wheat field fire completely burned his barn down and partially destroyed his magnificent farm house. He lost four cows in the barn and two of his best horses. He had no insurance neither tobacco or fire. His arm and leg were injured when jumping out of a window to escape the flames and the doctor told him he would not be able to work for months. His wife was badly burned and burned, who could hate those four firebugs. And still even to day mobs are trying to break into the prison to get them, and the mob is fiercer and more savage than ever. So far they have desperately stormed stormed the prison four times but with no success.



1949 of the many unusual situations few approached that presented by the mauling of a Bee River-yslavian limited train for three days near Aurora, Ill. will with nearly three hundred passengers bound for St. Louis. The situation is graphically described by the conductor of the train.

Our train on a wrong line because of so much smoke eastward of reach Aurora at 4:50 Tuesday afternoon. The conductor said the whole sky south and south east of us was as dark as night with smoke. We were flogged by Henry Foster a former living near Aurora by the tracks who said he had been left by the railroad officials "to stop the train."

He said we could go no further. No one had gone to bed the night before as the train crawled along through the smog.

We had to return east.

The news continued: "On occasions like those presented in the smoulder district always brings forth the best that is in men and with every similar disaster a new hero is made. Among those who are being hailed as saviors by their fellow men is Thomas Joseph Murphy vice chief for the Bell Telephone Company of Kankakee Ill. People without number owe their lives to his regard of the wire whom the Governor of Ill. (I do not remember his name).

declared was one of the most 2930 wonderful men with whom he had ever come in contact. "He saved thousands upon thousands where Jack Dennis saved one" said an admirer.

It happened that Mrs. Murphy's mother was sick at her home in the northwestern of Kankakee. Tuesday, Mr. Murphy was up attending her. She got ill from the heat and smoke from the conflagration heading for the city. He had noted the high wall of fire and towering clouds of smoke sweeping on it seemed towards the city all night and naturally he foresaw the damage it would do the wires.

He hurried to the office at 4 A.M. Soon afterwards he received a message from the wire chief at Mendota that the town was smoked out and hundreds would perish from suffocation and parching heat unless aid came at once.

Murphy knew it was a case where the State should step in. He called the Governor at his residence that was the first news the Governor received of the fire threatening Kankakee. In a few minutes Murphy had the Governor and General Thompson Thomas Miller in communication with the district of the big fire. A special train more than one was soon off for Mendota. They saved them all when repeated the great work at Mendota. From the minute Murphy heard the appeal from Morris he late that Tuesday night he stayed constantly at the switch board snatching only two

2956 hours of sleep each night.

Thomas Murphy weighing scarcely 136 pounds, 6 feet 8" boy

in appearance did a feat of endurance unsurpassed during the conflagration and the removals that followed.

He never got a glimpse of the fire. However, yet he says "I saw it all perfectly."

It was through Murphy that the Governor directed all the operations of rescuers.

It was through Murphy that the Governor was able to find out conditions from hour to hour in the inferno territory.

It was Murphy who put the Governor in communication hour after hour with Chief Dennis at St. Gall's the one man in the city who could communicate with the outside world from Tuesday until late Thursday.

Not did Murphy work without an ache in his heart. His wife's mother was critically ill at home. Countless lives depended on his work at the exchange he had to choose between love for his mother and his duty to his fellow men.

A light flashed on his mind, Murphy flagged in. It was a personal message from his home.

The trained nurse was taking Mrs. Murphy had to be taken to the hospital to undergo a gall bladder operation. The surgeon was at the house waiting.

Murphy snatched the head rescuer from his head. His one thought to follow his mother to the hospital.

He started from the board. 2952

then stopped. The nurse was calling.

"Hello Hello"

"Your mother wants you to stay at the switchboard," was her message.

She says to your duty, she says the safety of scores of thousands depend upon you.

So Murphy stayed. Wednesday afternoon the Governor got word that the fire was heading for Kankakee.

If it should go before the fire it would mean the complete destruction of the handsome city and the people rendered homeless.

Murphy got the Governor into communication with Mr. Wager, the chief fighting leader. His large gangs of men were rushed to aid the city and the fire fighting men.

After the most desperate fire fighting ever seen the city was saved.

The same work was repeated in effect at St. Mary's country orphan home.

But Murphy's work was not over. He kept track of the slow advance of the smoulders. He notified exchange hour ahead of the smouldering fires and they warned whole cities and townships in the smother path.

Murphy had success in notifying the people of these cities towns and villages from near Ottawa and northeastward with the result that as written before they fled - well from the danger zone.

"The most cool collected and also comprehensive man I have ever known."

Murphy wrote opinion

see Hail pl

2953 said the Governor and he had not seen Murphy in person. The many perilous escapes of many of the survivors of the smoke and fire reaching heat disaster are almost unbelievable. We were the stories of those who fled before the smoke and heat submitted to even the most sensational story novels and all type of magazines and serious comic books they would be respected as being too wildly improbable.

It is pointed out that the swirling currents of smoldering fires in the suffering, unaided, smoulders would hold so much burning, stuff, heavy and belief in and beneath the weight of tons of smoldering debris of hay stems, roofs and heat ground.

A blinding storm of heat from the two smoulders which appeared to be sweeping the entire northern part of the State was sending heat torture and terror to the sufferers as far as Elgin.

Two thousand people in the towns of as far as the towns of Aurora and Elgin made ill by this heat and smoke stars for permission to go to Waukegan and it was granted. Others prayed for shelter and relief from the blinding heat.

All through that awful hot night from everywhere could be heard the wails of the people in the streets of the smoke and heat stricken cities and as the moans and shrieks of the sufferers floated across the heated streets walls from all other places from those

also in the streets joined. Fortunately there was no pestilence among any one despite the awfulness of the situation. Yet for precautions a quarantine was established.

No story of the awful catastrophe would be complete that failed to note the work in behalf of suffering humanity on the part of the great newspapers, the semi-public institutions through which the people speak and hear their fellow man.

The far reaching effects of the awful conflagrations and their following smoulders can be in no way be more clearly illustrated than in the reports of the Identification Bureau through its correspondents in all cities and towns. It says:

We are handling inquiries for countless people and are trying to find persons in every nook and corner of the fire disaster area of Illinois. The inquiries come from uncoupled in numbers most of them Chicago.

New York residents, some residents of other cities and other states. The people for whom the Chicago Tribune American and the Daily News are searching live in fifty cities including towns and villages of the whole country. The task is most tremendous.

Nearly all the big industries closed down because of the exodus of the employees, and populations. The Republic Iron and Steel work is what even they're called at yet were the suggest plants to suffer are unknown numbers were away from their employment at these places because of

Hick!  
top

has been  
later redfigi  
not less  
but 115.

2955 of the dense smoke. In all unknown numbers of workmen were forced to leave their employment places and the city in general because of the smoke while the loss to the industries because of this by being compelled to shut down (not up) is enormous.

What was bad as it was reported a graphic story of the wreck of a circus & forgot its name in the smoke district was told by the chief clown who said

"With the first coming of the dense smog spreading over the camp the elephants of which there two dozen became panic stricken and pulled their stakes from the ground."

They ran through the quarters uprooting trees and ~~knocking~~ <sup>knocking</sup> over frame sheds. It was said eight soon died of smoke inhalation and others who tried to get away fell exhausted as a result of the efforts and died of the smoke as they lay on the ground.

The others unaccounted for are supposed to be roaming about the country but just where no one knows.

Most of the monkeys were killed by the smoke, a huge python thirty four feet long was found coiled about a tree but also dead from the smoke. <sup>Swamp</sup> and tigers and circus horses also.

The smoke wiped the

circus out. One of the most 2956 unusual and interesting stories of the smoke conditions is that related by a famous church choir leader of St Patrick's Church, Chicago. When on his return he reached Chicago after three days in the conflagration district. In his fiery adventures he missed an engagement in Bloomington and barely made his Religious choir concert with St Patrick's church Chicago.

On the train which reached Chicago from Bloomington after detouring over the Illinois Central, and the Chicago Alton with his traveling altar boys all were sick from intense smoke fumes and heat, and exhausted.

He said, "we gave a Sunday night Religious Concert in Lincoln Illinois. St Peter's School there and went to bed well pleased, said the choir leader a priest still holding his head. "When we were to start for Bloomington on the following morning we were told that there was a big wide spread conflagration in many miles of wheat fields northeast of us."

Heat don't talk about it we found we might possibly get a train by going to Bloomington thirteen miles from Atlanta. We got together six carriages loaded our trunks and bags aboard and prepared to start. The singing school children at the St Peter's Catholic School at Lincoln 111 burst into great

2957

applause and one of the team, bolted down the road and smashed the rig, we loaded up again in the strange heat and reached Alamo. Then the horse broke upon us, for north of us we saw far away to the north a great smoke cloud going up very high, the yellow swirling flame piercing it.

We watched spell bound. When back we went to Lincoln the horses exhausted and one of the carriages broken.

We arrived at nine o'clock at night after an all day sweating from strange heat radiating from the north and nothing accomplished.

We set out for Peoria by a local train of a different road. North east of us the sky was horribly dark, I got scared. The others were nervous and in Peoria we were no better off for the trains could not go through either one way or the other. Then we got back to Peoria Bloomington I don't know except except the train ran north west to Rock Island. When we crawled along to Chicago through the thickest smoke fog ever seen. We got in but late, and at the smoke there.

The greatest sorrow and the keenest joy human beings are capable of are being mingled in the hearts of many beyond the smoke and swift terror over Prayer and Holy Masses are being offered as they

2958

those who escaped the smoke and heat horrors, and there others many others who are in the utmost depths of sorrow and can suffer no more, one old man had seen his family of seven overcome by smoke and heat prostration and die one by one.

Other refugees raced over seemingly impassable smoke covered country to find that their families had been spared by some of the wild whims of the smoke and heat.

The sympathy and pity they extend to their neighbors from whom the smog has exacted its price is all the warmer and more human because they have been spared the loss. All the aid given to most of the smoke sufferers did not come only from relief funds and public organizations, countless numbers of men and women carried food clothes bedding cooking stoves and every sort of supplies to those who left homes and all behind to escape the smothering smoke and heat.

Women of the leisure class used their wagons and even first automobiles to bring provisions to the sufferers and those who have no machines utilized wheelbarrows hand carts carriages wagons and even baby carriages. One of the big problems which the authorities had to face everywhere was the method of feeding the vast army of people who fled the smoke and smoldering heat.

In the quiet hell of horror and the immediate surroundings territory a picture of the awful situation is furnished in Gary Indiana

2959 correspondent who was near the center of the smoke swept district thousands of families in the northern places who fled the smoke district spent last night in Gary hungry cornered by the smoke even coming there and in nearly all instances penniless because they left all behind in their flight.

Not in the history of this whole United States has a fire and smoulder brought such disaster.

and because of far as call fire bugs, countless hundreds of acres are big smouldering fire and from the most inaccessible domains come cries for help from families on far farms, unrecognized by the terrible smoulder.

During relief crews are at work in all parts of Illinois particularly the east northeast and southeast where the catastrophe is greatest but their work is progressing slowly and there is no assurance when they will be able to answer all the calls for assistance.

Schools, fire stations, refugee homes and many other places are being opened to the victims and every effort is being made to provide succor as rapidly as possible. Trains are working in all the stricken neighborhoods food is being supplied and volunteer workers are thronging to the assistance of the police and the National Guard which are doing their utmost.

One of the most serious phases 2960 of the smoke smoulder is the prospect of trying to get people out of there out of the northern smoke zone that have taken refuge in lower stories of their homes and refuse to leave.

Nearly 3000 persons took refuge in a school near Chenoa town southwest of Joliet along the Alton route and plans were made to try to get them to go to some less smoke plagued place.

When one is considering the vast expanse of territory affected by the smoke in the few days following the beginning of the smoulder it seems that the very hellish regions has changed places with this part of Illinois.

In the beginning the horrors of Joliet situation and the conditions at Chicago, Gary Indiana Aurora Elgin Mendota Rock Falls Rockford and even Waukegan and other places and even across the river so attracted the attention of the world that they almost lost sight of the disastrous results that followed the coming of the

state capital

here. These horrors smog in other sections and this is one of the saddest things I believe on all record.

A horrible catastrophe occurred at the county orphan home at Joliet this was discovered by Capt. Captain William Schloeder of the Government Life Saving Station at or near west Chicago near the Des Plaines River, some where on its west side.

Tragedy at the orphanage was followed by unspeakable grief and also extra fury towards the prisoners in Sing Sing - a short time before volunteer life savers attempted to go and rescue the occupants of the

2961 of the orphan Asylum had to no avail. No one at first could approach there because of the dense smoke. So for two days no further attempts to remove the Sisters nurses and children were made until the arrival of the Government life savers. It added in one large room on the top floor of the building of which the first floor was so entirely submerged in smoke you couldn't hardly see three inches. The life savers found sixty-nine children, six nurses, and five turns - the only survivors of fifteen hundred which were in the building.

The heavy smoke took the lives of the rest. The employees were among them. This still more bitterly aroused the resentment against the fair for in the first place they set the fire which turned into this howl smoky smoulders.

Even the judges who sentenced them to hang long was blamed for not sentencing them to the benches.

The cities of Chicago, Gary Indiana and all other northern cities and towns and other points were burned also into smoke houses.

Telegraph and telephone communication was interfered with railroad traffic in hindered by smoke and all the atmosphere as far as Green Bay now filled with smoky smog.

Residents of the smoke section passed night of smoke misery and also from unaccountable unbearable heat. Even down in the basements it was uncomfortable and inside the houses it was very hot but worst on the streets. The police were being besieged

with demands for cooler places or cooler equipment and yet no one could satisfy their demands. And it was not from hot weather of a very unusually record breaking hot August. All this damn heat came up so far from the smoulders.

2962 Many villages in the West Plains River Region between Chicago and Rockford were cut off, and all trains from St Louis and Bismarck and even the Illinois Central were cut off from all railroad and wire communication because of the smoke, and deadly heat.

In even Chicago power plants are closing street car traffic practically suspended and schools and factories and even churches closed. The huge iron and steel smelter plants in Eastern Galesburg were closed because of the people and employees leaving because of all the heat and smoke.

The wild spread of the 'dreadful' smoulders, its enormous sea of smoke which was threatening to exceed anything known in all history of fires anywhere in the world made it necessary for the authorities to adopt extreme methods along the fire front at many points but at safe distance from the fearful killing heat.

At Pontiac Ill the ground half a mile from the ~~sm~~ smoulders was ordered cut and dynamited with the purpose to form a big breach to slack the spread of the smoulder inferno but no one could approach within a mile and a half the heat was so exceedingly severe.

Heat conditions along the Illinois River were declared by the United

2693 oldest citizens to be the most desperate in their time. The city sent its women old men and children out on every train to the south. The situation in Pontiac was becoming very precarious as all rail road communication from the south southwest and east was cut off because of the driving smoke. Even the Big Four Railroad went out of Commission, then the Illinois central and others were shut off. No engines of any train was going to risk driving this train through all that awful smoke and blinding heat.

A food famine threatened as a result, about half the population left the city at the first alarm. So great was the alarm and the situation that there was no need to compel negroes and others to work. Though the state troops were sent out in squads or companies each accompanied by police men to visit the smoulders of men it was found there were not one unwilling or refused to work. Because of the situation it was great pleasure to do so.

Nearly every home north or south eastward was deserted and wagon loads of furniture trunks and household effects of every description were taken to the railroad station for all train bound south or southwest or east east.

As soon as authority was given to the Colonel he detained squads of soldiers to go along the edge of the smoulder at a very safe distance from the heat as far as it was safe from the deadly heat and compel everyone who is able to work and not

2268 already engaged to keep check the spread of the smoulders. It was of avail as it was found soon every one even among all able bodied women and teen agers were in the ranks of my fine fighting men and working eagerly to fight the smoulders spread. Even I had many engineers who made out descriptions of the weak points that special attention might be given them. The praise of the Colonel was high for these people.

① Washish  
② assist if  
widow he  
not shown  
here.

One of the purposes of closing all places of business which handle goods or not was to give opportunity to get out the strongest working force possible. Unemployed of closed concerns responded willingly for duty and were used to an immense extent the work along the smoulder front.

It is said that in nearly every great calamity there men with hearts of stone human vultures or vandals and parasites who prey upon their fellow men and women or rob their homes but this unflagging honor and the smoulder and smoke honor was completely with out this quota and the tornado torn cities also.

For if there ever were such vile monsters there was too much exceedingly great danger for them to even think of doing any villainism. They knew it was suicide to think of trying it.

Official H. J. Higgerbottom who lives in So. Galena says he predicted the disaster that has come upon all this part of Illinois. I have been repeatedly to the board of the Farmers to the city farmers. Beauvoir and the other city farmers.



2965 city officials "he said" and told them we would have some awful wheat field fire some day if the farmers don't stop raising wheat and grain only and not other crops. These foolish farmers on all their farms were raising nothing else and gradually extending the wheat everywhere there was acres of ground. All any one has to do is to see what a fire we now have.

Of course these devilish firebugs started all this, but it also could start from spontaneous combustion or by the hot sun also.

The official said if all this growing wheat and if nothing else is not stopped and other and smaller crops grown besides no number of volunteer fire fighters could be strong enough in numbers to prevent a field fire.

He declared the people had all been uneasy every spring when the farmers renewed all their fields of wheat. The authorities declared they have no say over the farmers and therefore cannot stop them. Now see what we have here."

Even though the final reports of the government which has taken up the smolder and smoke question for the purpose of taking adopting remedial measures it will probably never be known just how many perished because of all the horrible

thick smoke plague. 2966  
That many went to their death by smoke suffocation in scores of towns and even cities nearest the smoulders is known to everybody but there is no central source from which data can be secured to determine how many met death in the small towns, villages, hamlets and cities before they could escape the smog and also along the Illinois and a dozen other streams.

Even in Gales, Moline, Ottawa and Pontiac cities with every facility for ascertaining the true facts the exact number will never be known. The local authorities found that many bodies had been buried without a report being made and who knows how many strangers within the gates went to their deaths in the smoke honor and heat prostration and will be known only as missing from their homes.

But to give some concrete of the loss suffered in Gales itself these facts and figures published in the daily news papers concerning conditions in that city are quoted from a full statement issued by a representative of the Illinois State Governor.

"Dead by smoke and heat prostration accurate estimate impossible. 135,000 persons driven from the city by the smoke five thousand smoke refugees provided for in rescue stations five hundred farm houses killed by smoke and heat 1,000 ships destroyed."

2967 Late this afternoon I went by train on the Rock Island to St. Louis. Over everything I was depressed and angry. The violence of the rioters instead of slackening had increased from day to day. This was its first third day.

Every thing had been done by all my men to check its course but it burned on of the most sweeping description and burning on as no other kind of fire would have done.

The whole nation is shocked at the headlong course of the fire events and every able bodied fighting person whether man, woman or elder children has thrown themselves heart and soul in the desperate fight, the most desperate fighting ever seen since the commencement of the storm of fire now shrank back in utter hesitation and dismay at the strange fury of the two most terrible moulders ever seen.

I said to the Mayor whom I went to see:

"It seems to me that a general madness has seized all Chicago, Gary and all other cities because of this smoke scourge, but at present nothing can be done to arrest it. To overcome this moulder is impossible. The leaders in Moline are resolved to do nothing that is to let events take their course and what that is heaven only knows. The Mayor of Moline says

wait until rain comes, but it, 2968 does not come and there is no sign of it in the immediate future. The city assembly has taken all power into its hand, but can do nothing, the leaders of my fighters say the moulders is beyond bounds."

"Well at any rate there is nothing to be done at present but wait" said the Mayor. I know our city is quite a distance from that mouldering fire but yet at night the distant glow in the sky has us almost lit up like day.

Already numbers of the deputies greatly terrified at the aspects of affairs have left St. Louis and I am surprised to say many others have gone out with large numbers of men to reinforce your army of fire fighters. This I believe is folly as the moulders are very treacherous, yet we cannot help any one if they will not be helped but it is our duty to rally round you in danger when you need to call us to your side.

I am glad the Assembly has passed a law confiscating the property belonging to those four men who set this horror. When ever I see you think it is right to go and take my place by your side I will go. We must do our duty. I am much alarmed by the news brought by you and I do not think of questioning your decision. It seems possible to many here that there could not be danger and that this could not reach us so far away, but I am so scared

on our confident I feel the word would turn out again we might be in for it."

2969 I'm afraid now the smoulders  
cannot be stopped or conquered now  
either by fighting it or by even  
rain." I said,

"Maybe so" declared the Mayor.  
"But there is one point between  
the two cases. In So. Gall  
here the people believe they will  
soon have great power against the  
running northern state. The State  
authorities believe they already have  
a check upon the smoulders and it  
is because the Governor is trying  
to <sup>oversee</sup> <sup>the</sup> <sup>situation</sup>  
that the trouble of fighting the  
fire in overwhelming numbers  
arise about."

Here our fire fighting leaders  
on at least their minister they  
appointed. I have already ~~promised~~  
~~promised~~ probably ~~unwisely~~ ~~to~~ ~~claim~~  
admit but it is likely not that  
they can do any better than the  
other fighters under you? That is  
the question. At present they seem  
lost in showing their incapacity  
to overcome this smoulder.

This is a matter of very  
experienced ministers or leaders.  
It is their business to find  
a remedy for this strange and  
dangerous situation.

As to their Nation State Assembly  
which represents only the middle  
class of people I regard their  
ideas with contempt. No one can  
stop this inferno now. Only God  
can and never not to do so.

"Why it is from the best men?"  
he continued that the oppressive  
fighters are drawn. Even at Moline  
Rock Island, Gen. Quincy

Davenport, Burlington and Des Moines 2970  
that fire fighters are being mob-  
bilized with all equipment possible.  
Even farmers, general collectors  
and officials of all kinds that are  
mobilizing hoping to ground down the  
smoulders and enrich themselves with  
glorious success.

All power is to be placed in the  
hands of their leaders the chosen of  
the best experienced of them in the  
towns the best mould pieces of the  
experienced men. By all means let the  
middle class fighters have a share in  
the fighting but it is not a share  
they desire.

The clergy have plenty of voice.  
The nobility of these cities have all  
voice. The Governor wants to lead men  
in the fight against the smoulder.

It is not only order that these  
gentry are organizing it is concentra-  
tion.

But the Mayor of every town or  
city have entered as much as they  
could into the conversation of the smoke  
refugees. They find that the distress  
which prevail every where is terrible.  
The refugees scarcely can keep life  
together and a great number have died  
of smoke inhalation and heat pro-  
stration.

They find a feeling of despair  
every where and a great hatred and  
fury against the few who started this  
holocaust. Their motives in endeavoring  
to find out what were the feelings  
of the smoke and heat refugees were  
not those of mere curiosity. They are  
much attached to all the poor sufferers

2971 and other was begotten people  
and the reports which came from  
all the places refugees fled to together  
with the talk among the spectators  
fire fighters medical workers and  
relief stations convinced them that  
the state of affairs was much more  
serious than all the newspapers and  
magazines were inclined to  
admit.

The raging fury of the smouldering  
inferno whose glare light an city  
at night like daylight as far as it  
is the ominous smoke every  
where ominous and dangerous to the  
populations filling not only the  
streets of all cities but those  
of other great towns proved  
unbearable so that all able  
bodied people once obtained the  
upper hand they would be ready  
to go all lengths to try to dislodge  
the smoulders while the great  
number of men among the  
refugees who had fled to the  
cities and towns showed that among  
them there existed genuine apprehension  
as to the future, and also  
were volunteers to join in the  
fight against the inferno.

They were all bitterly against  
the four and hoped the mobs  
which are still besieging Leningrad  
would get the four men yet.  
I continued the mayor had read  
a lengthy book in the library  
an account of the excesses of all  
types of fires in the forests of  
the west or elsewhere and the  
results in fighting them. This  
dreadful fire has them all put  
together beat and so wants to  
be foolish enough and insane

2972  
enough to undertake the suicidal task  
against this vast sea of fire  
where heat kills you more than a  
mile away. I myself would not think  
of it. It does not wear anything fire  
or heat proof. The fighters have  
no armed retainers, fire extinguishers  
shot from guns have no effect  
and the largest number of fighters  
cannot with safety face that dreadful fan  
reaching heat.

The National armies had already  
shown its sympathy with the popular  
movement against the smoulders  
and could very much be relied  
upon. His honor took place because of  
the revenge of those four men  
upon the poor farmer and his wife.  
The people then were off their  
guard. Can we imagine it possible  
that at this day conflagrations would  
be capable of such excesses?

I thought it over seriously and said  
The smoulders have increased immensely  
mayor since the day it began but  
all efforts to contain it at a safe  
distance has improved but little.  
even now the right methods are  
scarce extinct. The smoulders are  
regarded as nothing less of hell than  
inferno and the increase of them  
which all speak of and from  
which they have received no hope  
of their slackening makes the people  
hate even more bitterly than of old  
those that started this earthly  
perdition. I am a good fighting leader  
I desire to see sweeping changes  
I want a good wife and honest  
scheme how to whip this holocaust  
and I desire these things because  
I fear that if they do not come in  
a right way we won't win and there

2973 would come a tempest of fire  
fire lay and comprehension. what if a  
what if a tough wind would spring  
up what then? "I would not allow  
no one to fight the new big fire  
then" answered the Mayor.

"No, would?" "I answered.  
"Well all those who decide to  
fight this inferno will be getting all  
the fight they are looking for. And  
the Mayor fearfully they are  
passing every law however  
absurd that comes into their heads.  
No one is opposing them. They  
have got the reins in their hands.  
What on earth can they want  
more. There might have been  
an excuse for fighting the  
fire three days ago. There can be  
none now. What you say, Jane?"

"We must allow for human  
nature, Jane," she answered. "Men  
are turned with the chances of being  
real heroes. They will be drunk  
with their own success if they  
conquer these rascals, and who  
can say where they will stop.  
In the smoulders there is not  
only what is left of grain and  
wheat that is burning, something  
is mysterious."

"I have who set the first of the  
fire to get even with the farmer.  
I thought to gain everything they found  
they have got nothing except a  
life term at hard labor at Sing  
Sing and by force and witch  
thorn. It is surprising of a woman of  
my kind to say this but I do  
hope they get them. The mob  
will cry for more and

2974  
chance to get them their fury  
will run higher and higher with  
each disappointment and who can what  
lengths they will go. The four brought  
it all on themselves, themselves. Look  
at this. The world has never seen  
such a conflagration as this. Who  
can say to what lengths it will  
go. As Mr. Dager said. What will  
happen if a strong wind starts to blow.  
I dread to think of it?"

"I had no idea you were such a  
calamity Jane, my dear," the Mayor  
said with an uneasy laugh while  
feelings of gloom and anxiety fell over  
me and the others who heard his  
wise words.

"God forbid I should be a prophet of  
evil tidings," his wife said gravely.  
"I hope and trust that I am mistaken  
and that he has not reserved this terrible  
punishment for Illinois. But you asked me my  
opinion and I gave it to you."

"Things come and go," said the  
Mayor. "Mr. Dager here says all is in the  
same strain. Things are going worse and  
worse. The fury and growing of the  
smoulders are even on the increase. The  
violence of the mobs of fighters even on  
the increase against its progress is of  
no avail they can't become the masters  
of the situation. The greater part of  
the population of even Kanabos has  
fled because of intense heat and  
smoke and any who dared stay behind  
are in danger of suffocation and  
heat prostration."

The feelings in the Northern Counties  
is keeping pace with that in Kanabos.  
Committees have been formed and  
are being formed in every town

2795 and village and absolutely  
and initially superseded the consti-  
tuted authorities.  
Numbers of farm houses were burned  
a half mile away & by the far  
reaching heat. All people who are  
fleeing are doing so because they  
are finding the situation most  
intolerable and ~~hoping~~ hoping that a  
most large ~~number~~ of fire fighters  
are to be raised and set in  
motion to put down and out of  
commission the vast remainder which  
is ~~constituting~~ constituting a danger to  
all Villars and the northern  
states and cities and towns every-  
where in this north.

But ~~what~~ yet is there anything to  
fear of terrible events which may  
yet take place or to indicate by  
windy weather that a movement  
would end in a third conflagration  
that would rival those four put  
together and destroy all Villars and  
Southern Wisconsin?

"I hope not" said the Mayor.  
"yet everybody is becoming more  
and more anxious, the situation they  
say is becoming more precarious, most  
of the troops have been sent to  
the frontier and those left behind  
are organized and ready to  
join the fire fighters."

Two or three National Guard  
battalions at Moline had been sent  
to the east and but one remained  
at Rock Island.

of the main National Guard  
they would certainly join the  
fighters. A large number of the  
National Guard from Springfield  
has arrived here and the  
battalion from St. Louis had  
immediately that it arrived here

came into collision with a part of  
the remainder. These soldiers wholly  
organized fought hard all day yesterday  
there had been summer rumors circul-  
ating but the Mayor of Moline had  
sent privately to his officials that the  
danger was more imminent than repa-  
repaired that he had need of them.  
He said the glare very bright could be  
seen even from the west side of Moline.

Just now to my surprise and  
apprehension a uniformed man came in.  
Half his clothes was burned off of  
him, his head red as a lobster was  
bound up and his left arm disabled and  
scorched pink.

"To all over Mr Mayor" he said. "We  
have done our best but we can do  
nothing. We cannot say we have  
lost the fight exactly for we have  
never tried to win it, but it would  
be the same thing in the very long  
run? the remainder is impossible to face."

We had a good deal of difficulty  
in getting into the roads running  
through it for the National Guard  
tried to prevent our passing for our own  
good. However we most of us got  
through and we found that there was  
one thousand and a hundred assembled  
all men completely equipped.

George L. Mully led us into  
the main road. "Sir" he said to  
their leader "here are your reinforcements  
eager to prevent this remainder from  
starting a new conflagration. The

National guard came to reinforce us  
and we formed in the roads  
and the leader with his sylthe in  
his hand walked down our ranks.

2977 and those of the National Guard. He had not the slightest fear he spoke to us about not to do any dare devil recklessness and did everything to encourage us. Several of our party in trying to make their way down the road too close to the dangerous distance suffered severe heat stroke and some of the soldiers carried them to the rear to be revived and treated.

Roederer came up to our main leader and pressed him to give it up and leave the dangerous territory. "The distance is too severe here," he said. "There are not five minutes to lose. There is no safety for you or your command but six hundred yards away but our leader lieutenant insisted upon Roederer saying it was a real killing heat this men on leader and we then moved on followed by the lieutenant and other officials. I saw an enormous crowd of equipped men, even with cannon were coming but there had been delay and I didn't believe they would be able to accomplish anything.

The crowd close and menacing lined the road and our procession made their way with difficulty to other assembled ranks further from the heat.

We remained in concentration and every moment the theory of other fighting men became more and more numerous. The cannon they brought were turned against the armoured. The nearest part of the armoured was moulder was burst open, but that did not stop the flames, the armed populace panned on and mixed with us and the soldiers. Some one fired a chemical rifle. Whether it was

one of the soldiers or one of the 2978 mob of fire fighters. I know not but the fight began. The National Guard in good order marched down the road cut down immense droves of grain seized the cannon the men brought and turning them upon the distant armoured opened fire. The chemicals had no effect, and the men closest to the heat recoiled before it, and I foolishly believed that one battalion would have conquered all that part of the armoured had not our leader at the sound of the first shot sent word to the soldiers to cease firing saying the exploding chemicals might hurt burning embers upon the men by grain.

They obeyed and although the mob kept taking the grain here and there the great part of them marched calm and without doing any cutting to assemble further from the heat where at the order of the leader they got furiously busy. But I got burned by the distant heat.

A portion of the National Guard had remained on guard in the road when the main body marched to the fray. The instant their number increased the mob assaulted this endangered wheat a whole acre was slashed down as well as a long stretch of it along the roads. The mob actually backed it down so it could not catch fire from the heat.

But the heat was unbearable even at that distance and when the fighting began to slowly retreat, my companions had one by one made our way to the safer distance but most of us recognizing the danger of retreating

2974 rallied and a whole field was  
cut down and another cut to pieces.  
I rushed into farm house when assaulted  
by the killing heat and slamming  
the door behind me made my way  
out by the back and so escaped the  
heat getting off with only these two  
serious burns then I hurried to the  
house of a farmer whom I had seen  
helping in fighting the flames  
and from there I went on, and you  
see here I am."

The Mayor's wife upon the Captain  
taking refreshment and having his  
burns bound up and attended to.  
When he had finished the Captain  
said:

"I believe they are out there still fight-  
ing." But what has happened with the  
Assembly men and where is their main  
leader? The Mayor's wife asked after  
the first exclamation of horror at  
the news they had heard.

"He and his men are still fight-  
ing desperately on the field," the  
Captain said. "It seems the  
smouldering heat has triumphed over  
the Assembly of fighting men but  
still they won't yield, and yet it  
does seem the far reaching heat  
is the supreme power."

The leaders men are extended  
in fiercely fighting stances but as  
he has not defeated the remoulders  
that will make little difference,  
a new column of men has  
been formed yet their leaders  
Danton Gorm and Saturn Gorm, are  
also scorched."

"We must be prepared my  
sons. I've to face the worse."

2980  
said the Mayor, escape from a new  
fire disaster is impossible and indeed  
as long as they might be able to  
prevent a new general conflagration  
there is hope. I cannot believe that  
although just at present the population  
of fire fighters are too much excited  
to hurry in fighting the danger to be  
come reckless although they do intend to  
wreak vengeance on the inferno."

"I hope you are right Mayor," I  
said "but I fear that is not so all  
that is being done has in no way  
won them anything ever though they  
gladly follow the leaders, and the  
fugitive people are mad so far all  
that is being done for them is no  
way mitigating their suffering, and  
they gladly follow the preachings of  
their leaders and will keep fighting this  
remoulder as soon as possible. Yet I fear  
that before this is over we'll have  
a most awful calamity if it don't  
rain soon?"

I am glad and congratulated myself  
that I was observing and being an actor  
in the astonishing fire drama which is  
occupying the attention of the whole  
world. I and the Mayor with the  
Captain went out to the scene  
of the fighting and saw a vast crowd  
gathered among the wheat field back  
hooping, alas-hurrying and culling and other  
carrying it away at various points men  
harnessed the mob to better efforts  
while from time to time the word  
of fighters opened and made way for  
the leaders who were cheered.

At another section the crowd cut  
and slashed through the wheat with  
a tremendous rush as while working



2981 they howled and yelled.

As he watched proceedings the mayor said: "The papers this morning say that in the consequence of so many right news orders have been sent that the street security is to be exercised on all roads and railroads and other transportation over all strangers who may pass through."

All who cannot give a perfectly satisfactory account of themselves and produce their papers are to be arrested and sent to Rock Island and St. Alb.

The men folk of the arrested spectators are to be forced to volunteer in the fighting forces or go to jail. Therefore their chance of getting through would be small indeed.

"Such a good thing," exclaimed "Every thing must be done to keep the curiosity seekers away."

"The already read," said the mayor "that a numerous band made a sudden attack upon the prison at Sing Sing to get the four men but failed. The prison is so strongly guarded that neither any force nor stratagem seems available. An attack the prison is dangerous in the extreme."

"I have read a lot about that," I answered. "There is the paper say, a vast crowd gathered around the prison night and day. The news of the whole is all number at the siege which has been increased during last night has filled the paper with hope and joy of coming success and the air is full of shouts of 'Down with the

2982  
Incendarios, kill with the firebugs 2982  
Synch, crush them, burn them at the stake, gut their bodies alive."

Hawthorne are selling in the crowd newspapers and broad sheets claim the statements about the foulest attack of the four men against the defenseless farmer and his wife couched in the most horrible language upon the four and the prison for shielding and defending them.

At various points men and women, even elder boys and girls mounted upon steps of near by houses, pedestal of statues clinging to telephone poles, or branches of trees have harangued the besieging mob while from time to time the crowd opened and made way for the city or town council, who cheered or booed according to their supposed sentiments for or against the cause of the besieging people.

It is said that on some occasions a tremendous rush has been made against the prison gates and attempts to climb the walls or other other parts. Several times to get keep some of the prison guards had passed through the crowd without being recognized.

The crowd close and menacing lined even the streets of Sing Sing and the little procession made their way with difficulty out of the town.

Others remain in the prison although every moment the crowd around is becoming more and more numerous.

Every some brought cannon and turned it against the prison gates.

But the cannon shots is not bursting the gates open. The army came and drove back the mob.

2893 seized the cannon they had brought and turning them upon the assailants against the prison opened fire. The foremost of the mob fled in terror but the rest crowded charged and retook the guns.

The Mayor of Ling Ling managed to force his way in the prison and from the top of the wall debated with the mob but the debate was continually or constantly interrupted by the crowds of people in the streets who hooted with frenzy the speeches of the Mayor who ventured to advocate moderation or reconciliation saying lynching is against the law.

They were proven guilty at their trial were they not? the crowd shouted. So why is it against the law?

The prison at Ling Ling is so strongly built, the gates so firm, the walls so high and toughly built and so strongly guarded that no force or any kind of stratagem could be at all available. The gailers and the prison guards who are numerous greet are not from the town but being a national prison men, and even any attempt to bribe them is dangerous in the extreme. Then I said:

How for are the worst born rascals ever known. Here nothing at all straight forward about them.

No doubt they were jealous of the farmers success in not winning the girl and were ambitious in their revenge. They turned out terrible enemies of the farmer and did not certainly stick at nothing.

2894 They are ruthless and pitiless and double faced. This was proven at their trial. They were or are more dangerous than all criminals on record actually they are execrable exploitable men of all times.

I suppose as I observed at the trial that the one who lost out on the girl is the worst of the four anyhow. He himself set the farmers wheat ablaze though the others supplied the inflammable material. His hatred of the poor farmer is real, more than the other three as he was the loser in the love affair. He is a most terrible enemy to the farmer and will certainly stick at nothing. He was more ruthless and pitiless and more execrable than his three companions.

They are awfully rascals too but I think they were really acting on according to their principals such as they were.

They were pitiless too but would set fires on principle. They called them "the incorruptible". They may have been more dangerous than he was for they have no vices. I do not think we should make much of those three if the mob got them in their power. The main fire bug is worst than the most dangerous wild beast in a snare. He is a different creature altogether.

He is simply venomous. He said at the trial he hated the world for allowing the farmer to be born in it and absolutely rejoiced over what he did no matter what the cost.

So loathsome is he in appearance that even all the other prisoners shrink from him and his fellow prisoners. He is a most venomous reptile whom it would be a pleasure to slay as it would be to put one's heel upon the head of

2895 upon a rattle snake. Whether he or his three companions are coward or not I do not know. But I should think so. Men of this type are seldom brave. I think of the crowd besieging the prison at Ling ling had them in their hands they may frighten them to death.

It's too bad the Mayor said that you Mr. Wanger and me could not be there to recut a special band among the suffragans of Ling ling and make a sudden attack upon the prison.

"It would require a more larger band than is besieging it now," I hinted, "and that among so many men one would sure to turn traitor before the time came. I'm ready to run all all risks, Mayor (sigh) but I see no chance of success in it. The prison is too strong and well guarded. And I heard the Government is calling the militia to despel the besiegers. My first duty is despel this fire. I gave my promise to the Governor and you and although it is not probable that I can do anything there yet I must at any rate be at hand should occasion arise." I have read in the papers that there twenty four persons of whom three were priests came upon the crowd who shouted.

Desperre you fools. It's against the law of the whole country to besiege this prison, and its walls. But the people looked on silently in sullen upathy.

"You are foolish" the officials

cried. "No no" some one in the crowd cried out in answer. "The four prisoners are in there. We want them and will get them. We are about to march around to the rear of the prison. They set this horrible fire.

Please quit this 'siege' and go home," cried the priests.

Still the crowd did not move. The great mass of the people were closing in more. The officials and the priests were now in danger.

"Then I said:

I have found out the better case of people had not followed the idea about fighting the two armoulters. They are really hard struck at the spread and heat and feel that this is the beginning of the fulfillment of the warnings of the first few days. The increase of the infernos is indeed a signal for every man of thought or feeling and of heart to draw back from fighting, because of the unbearable heat.

Thousands of earnest men who had at first thought that the armoulters could be easily overcome commenced with the boldest and most savage fighting and who had gone heart and soul into that body in its earliest struggle to overcome the infernos had long since shrunk back, appalled at the new upsurge of parching heat which had sprung into existence and overcome or prostrated into hospitals so many of the combaters.

Each fresh act of usurpation of power and heat of the fires had alienated a section.

The very leaders and planners and the clergy many of whom had set

1897 first gone heartily with the early fighters had shrunk back appalled when they saw that every one of them was menaced by the appalling far reaching heat. The men who had made the first fight against the scoundrels were already to a man against resisting and facing its heat. The volunteers of the spectators the leaders also of the best fighters had fallen back and over their heads the fury of the scoundrels are already hanging.

The four men who had caused all this appalling horror has no longer a friend in this country, not even among the lowest the basest and most ignorant.

And now because of this the four prisoners at Sing Sing are standing forth in the eyes of all the wretched States and even Europe as four fiery monsters the enemies not of that poor farmer only but of humanity in general, I will read on!

"Thus the crowd besieging the prison is not only composed of the town of Sing Sing but from towns outside people who claim the prisoners had long been at war with God and society, who hated that poor unfortunate farmer hated the forests hated all above them, hated all rivals men who had suffered so much from supreme jealousy that wild beasts are tame compared to them. who were the products of that evil system of that Society who know not God or man.

The greater proportion of the mob were from other towns and

2898  
in the pay of communities for two days before all the unemployed had been enrolled as the army of the besiegers of the prison. The shouts of the besiegers were taken up and re-echoed by the mob.

Garage cries curses and shouts for full vengeance fills the air many are armed and knives and bludgeons swords rifles and pikes were brandished or shaken so much fire and smoke had been endured and all the savage instincts were on fire.

"This is horrible Mayor," exclaimed handing over the paper to him. "I feel as if I were in a terrible nightmare not that any night more could compare in terror to this. See the pictures of the prison siege. Look at those hideous faces faces of men in utmost fury, because the prisoners for what they did appear to them degraded below the level of brutes exulting in the thought of what the fire did lasting in the revenge on that poor farmer and to think that these four men were born in this country of America Great Heaven what can come of it in the future. What will take place in Illinois now"

Organized conflagration I fear Mr. Dungen what seems most incredible impossible will take place. There will be terrible consequences if a strong wind was to blow up now."

"I had read also" I said that first the wheat nearest the awful heat were relased then the men fell.

2899 upon the grain and hewed it down. The barley and aflafar were among the beaten or cut down yet the workers did not desert until half a mile length nearest the smoulders had been hacked to pieces and sowed with water. Ramparts and no redoubts had been raised to ward off the deadly heat and spread of the smoulders and long lines of wagons were waiting to convey the chopped down grain showing how carefully the preparations for the massacre of wheat had been made all along the battle front.

Then the fighters moved to the west along the front and with a crowd of equipped men a time of speculation entered that section of the wheat country. Here the leaders one a bailiff organized a sort of field tribunal of men taken at random from the crowd into all were workmen terrified of fighting the honor for fear of its spread or small traders who had merely from curiosity joined the mob. Even officers and soldiers who were with the force were first brought out ordered to march forward through the road where the men were awaiting them and start digging breastworks on the road. A young man with his erect was first to pass down the road. He fell in a moment over come by the fan reaching heat and was carried to safety at the rear.

2900 The next would have followed 2900 him with the same result would have shared his fate. They were ordered to get away from there quickly and they obeyed. Some of the mob of desperate workers had crowded in the roads which ran through the fields nearest the smoulders but because of the dangerous heat were ordered out.

In one body of the fields a space had been cut clear by the armed speculator and a pathway to the roadbed of the railway from the interior of the fields to that opening towards the river.

The men withdrawing from the heated roads swarmed into there. One after the other new speculators were brought out of the tents. They were asked their names, and occupation, a few questions followed and then given the equipment and follow the workers. One after another they were conducted out of the tent to join the men.

And the Mayor and some of my officers were still out watching the fire squall near us. We stood back from the front but between the heads of those waiting fighters before us so we could see what was going on in front.

The Mayor stood immovable his face as pale as death. His hair had fallen off his hair was dark with perspiration because of heat his eyes had a look of concentrated horror his body shook with a spasmodic shuddering.

2901 In vain I when he saw at  
once what was going to take  
place urged him in a whisper  
to leave. He did not appear to  
hear and even when I pulled  
him by the sleeve he seemed  
equally unconscious. I was greatly  
alarmed.

Even where we stood the heat  
was like on a desert I feared that  
at any moment there would be a  
terrible outburst of some kind.  
I saw a fire fighting leader fall  
like a log before the nearest of the  
heat. I ran over and dragged  
the man back out of that road,  
and while trying to lift him  
shouted an order to the fighters  
to clear out of reach of the heat.

"I will lend you a hand,"  
the Mayor said who had by  
this time recovered himself  
and lifting the heat prostrated  
man on to his shoulder made  
his way through the fields  
proceeding him and opening a  
way through the crowd. In another  
minute we were in a clearing.

"Thank you greatly," said I do  
not know how I should have  
managed without your aid. If you  
put him down here I will try  
to bring him around."  
"Set get him back to St. Salle,"  
said the Mayor. "I will take him  
to one of my mansion rooms.  
You need not be afraid," he  
added as I hesitated. "I have  
got my eyes open. You can  
trust me and my wife."  
So saying he made  
his way through the slowly

2902  
retreating crowd of fighters  
gathering into rising columns. He  
was frequently asked who he was  
carrying for the crowd feared the  
loss of any of their leaders or men  
but the Mayor's reply given with  
a sad note in his voice - "It's  
one of Mr. Dargers' leaders who is  
heat prostrated, and I tell you it is  
pretty hot there satisfied them."

Soon reaching the city and  
then passing through two blocks of  
streets the Mayor reached his  
own residence and carried the heat  
prostrate man to a large room  
and laid him on a bed then  
he carefully closed the door and  
struck a light.

"The awful heat got him hard,  
very bad my friend," he said  
as he examined the man. "My  
heavens I should not have  
liked such a heat prostration  
myself. I had my eye on him  
and felt sure he would do  
something rash as go too near  
the word of the heat zone. How came  
he to be so so foolish as  
to go so far yonder?"

"There are persons who are too  
daredevil reckless and wont listen to  
advice," explained. "He is one of them  
unfortunately."

It was rash of him Mr. Dargers. I'm  
heartily sorry it happened but yet he  
got what he deserved. For his  
recklessness he had it coming to  
him. A baby bed right as well  
try to save his mother from the  
tiger who has laid its paw  
upon her for him to try to face  
that scowling heat too close.

2903 Mon dieu, to think that  
in the this case he was foolish  
enough to go too close to that killing  
heat but I bet when he comes - for  
he will see his mistake, and now  
what are you going to do? My wife  
is out but she will be back very  
soon. We will attend to this young  
fellow.

She is a good nurse and I tell  
you I think she will need all we can  
do for him.

If you don't he is in a serious  
condition. I asked in a time of real  
dismay.

No, no don't make yourself so  
uneasy. The shock of facing the heat  
has overcome him and that's all.  
He will soon get over that. We  
soon mean get worse heat prostration  
than this and be at work the  
next morning. But it is very different  
here. I saw his face and he was  
terribly near mad from the heat  
before he collapsed. I doubt whether  
he will be in his right senses  
when he comes around and never fear  
we will look after him well.

You can stay if you like but if  
you want to go you can trust  
him to us. I see you can keep your head  
and will not be reckless enough to run  
into danger as he did.

"I do want to go terribly," I said  
and I feel that I can trust you  
completely. You have saved his life.

Now you will not be hurt at  
what I am going to say. I  
have fifty dollars of money. Here is  
two hundred and fifty dollars.  
Please do not spare them. If  
you think he needs a doctor call  
him in and get everything  
necessary for him. I have hold

While you are nursing him  
I'm afraid you cannot go out to

work. I do not talk of reward. 2904  
one cannot reward kindness like yours  
but while you are looking after him  
you and your wife must live.

"I agreed," the Mayor said shaking me  
by the hand. "You speak like a man  
of heart. I will look after him. His  
clothes smell as if they had been  
smoking, but you need be under no  
uneasiness. I could army of my officers come.  
In I shall say, 'This is a young  
wheat field fighter who came too close  
to the deadly heat and whom having  
nothing better to do, I have brought  
him in here'."

"If he should recover his senses  
before he come back," I said, "do not let  
him know what really happened to  
him. He will be right. Right heart  
brothers that his men were scolded  
by the awful heat set him think  
that he was knocked down  
accidentally by some one in the crowd  
of fighters."

"All right that is easily managed,"  
the Mayor said. Mayor Clancy is no  
fool. Now you had best be off then  
for I see you are on thorns and leave  
me to bathe his head and chest  
in cool water. If you should not  
come back you can depend upon it  
I will look after him till he is  
able to go about again."

On leaving the hot prostrated  
officer in the care of the Mayor I hurried  
down the street I hurried by swift horse  
back to the scene where the squabble  
was still going on against the armorer  
than I stopped to think should I return  
to where his men had been driven  
back by the heat or make my way  
to my own fighting line which I left  
under the command of Kalika. I  
could not tell whether my officials

2905 had like the head stricken man  
been forced to retreat before the far  
reaching intolerable heat. I wanted even  
one to be extremely careful. If they  
have been driven back, it was clearly  
impossible for my reserves to aid them  
in any way.

They might already have fallen  
back. The crowd of fighters under  
Scanlon was too great for me to regain  
my men down this road and even  
there I could only witness without power  
to avert their own defeat by the heat.

Were they still fighting along the  
road I might do something. Perhaps  
the edge of the smoulder had not  
yet arrived there. It was now nine o-  
clock in the morning, second day of  
the smoulder. I learned all the inhabitants  
in Su Ball were remaining within  
their houses trembling at the reported  
horors of the smouldering horors of which  
reports had circulated during the earliest  
hour of the morning.

All Catholics crowded the church at early  
morning masses praying for rain. I was  
at every mass and received Holy Holy  
Communion at the last. I said the Rosary  
at every mass for rain.  
It first there had been hopes  
that Kallio would take steps to put a  
stop to the spread of the inferno  
but because of the killing far  
reaching he and his men could  
do nothing. Danton and his men too  
had fallen back a few numbers burned  
scorched or heat stricken.

The cannon roar had sounded  
perfectly during the night but the  
chemical extinguishers seemed to have  
no effect on the smoulders.

There was no secret as to what  
was going on. I am so tired  
and distressed that I was terribly  
disappointed that the mob could  
not break into the King's  
Parson, and break open the doors

of the parson and which the four who<sup>2906</sup>  
had caused caused this immense calamity.  
Stannley and his men were facing  
hellish torments and I sent a deput-  
ation to try to persuade this fighter to  
desist before the heat got all of them.  
But it was some time before they accomplished  
their mission as their voices were drowned  
in the tumultuous cries.

The leaders of the fighters called the  
wheat field fighters. Commonly directed  
the massacre of the fire antelope wheat in  
the face of the smoulders dangerous far-  
reaching radiance. The leaders went back-  
wards and forward to repeat the ex-  
ecutions of their orders and promised the  
executions increased pay in wages and  
rewards.

The receipt for the payment  
of this money still exists. On arriving  
on the scene I found all was in good  
progress there, the workers carrying all  
before them, and with a faint feeling of  
hope that the new hatches and more  
flaming smoulder would not extend  
beyond there, I again turned my steps  
in that direction.

The desperate massacre of the wheat  
wheat was still going on with more  
vigor than could be perceived and I  
wandered nearer to again assume full  
command and observe any general  
movement of the crowd of fighters  
along this road a big fired body of  
men with all the necessary equip-  
ment moved down the road.

They are going to the So Foxe  
wheat fields I said following them.  
I hope they'll make it good.  
I did not enter the So Foxe fields  
where the scenes that were taking place  
at the abbey fields for in spite of  
the speed with which the massacre of  
wheat were hurried through there



1901 these masses of wheat and grain, yet these masses were not finished there so thick was their growth and the toughness of their stalks. Force much barley grew mingled with black wheat and Oye grain among them. They had to ~~share~~ share the same fate of the others, being hewn down or to pieces by scythes and sickles.

I remained at a little distance from the Force, keeping restlessly up and down instructing the workers but huff and with rage and honor and at my powerlessness to help with the forcible workings of the fighters who were carrying on the desperate work as the heat from the armourer was steadily driving us back. At last at about nine thirty a man on horse back galloped by.

"They have finished with them in the abbey fields," he said. "They are going from there to the Bistre fields."

I turned away to reach those fields before the swarm from the abbey arrived there. Unfortunately I came down a side road upon them on first retreat from the armourer far reaching heat when they were within four hundred yards of the Bistre fields.

My great hope was that I might succeed in rallying them and in penetrating with them and also aiding them in making their way through the fields.

At sight of me they did take courage and rally and with that as at the other field there was a new method in the desperate and dangerous work. They worked like well beaten hearts gone mad. The agent of the five fighting communes took possession of the roads and permitted none except the fighting

men and workers to pass further 2905. into the fields the workers cutting the wheat down in large batches. Yet at this point the energies were from the armourers wounds us and the sweltering heat was terrific. I <sup>in vain</sup> tried with the men to penetrate into the inner part of the fields.

We were roughly repulsed by the unbearable heat and at last finding that nothing could be done we forced our way out again and hurrying to the roads fiercely and savagely stood our ground against the heat there working as we never did before.

I saw the Mayor come up to me. He said "I see you are having an awful time here. As to your friend at my house he was in a state of delirium acting over and over again the scene in the abbey cursing the armourer and the four vicars and crying out as would fight the very Hell if he had to die doing it."

"What does the doctor think of his condition?" I asked.

"He did not say much," the Mayor replied. He shook his head and said there had been a terrible mental shock from facing that awful heat and that he could not answer either for his life or reason. There is nothing to do but to be patient to keep his head bandaged with cold wet cloths and give him water from time to time. Do not be afraid Henry, we will watch over him carefully."

"I would stay here if I could," I said. "But I have other things to see about if I don't want to see the start of another big conflagration I have to cut out with this armourer some how."

Don showing poor showing the

2809. Mayo said - shaking his head "It is terrible. My wife was telling me what he saw and one of my high officials came in early this morning and said it was the same thing at the other fields. All the farmers are helping the men. A priest too our priest at the little church where I go to every morning. To Mass on my way to work he was carried away two hours ago to the Carmelite (Relief station and now his life is despaired of. The heat too struck him down. How is it that God allows such things to be?"

"We cannot tell," I said sadly. As for myself I can hardly believe it though I saw it and still see it. Look at that awful extensive smoke cloud. They say there are over five thousand fighters in the fields and they are all incapable of facing that awful heat. Such a thing was never heard of. I can hardly believe that I am not in a dream now. Hey Victor Get your officers over there and tell them to withdraw before the heat gets them." Victor went off with his officers to obey.

I went forward to another point of the battle field and waited on a road until the tough fighters had progressed forward but found on asking questions from some of the leaders that the fear reaching heat had increased with more

2910  
killing fury and that all the men under Barton are falling back before it but those under Marcet are still holding out.

"My heavens" the officer I was speaking to said "but my men have courage. Men and women are alike there is not one of them who faced that terrific heat bravely and went to their dangerous duty as calmly as if to dinner. There is a man and his mother. They volunteered together from a crowd of spectators. They were asked whether they had experience in fighting these fires. The man laughed aloud. "Experience!" he said "Do you think I have never fought fires before? Come my love."

Then they went forth as if they were going to walk a minute together and they went between the line of waiting men with her head erect and a smile of scorn on his face. She did not smile but her step never faltered. I watched her closely. She was not even pale and she did not look proud but she walked as calmly and steadily as her husband till they reached the fighting line and went into the fray with more energy than all the others. They were the core of the fighters to win along their front. They are brave these women braver than the men and they know how to fight a fire these people. We'll have the remainder licked yet."

I went back to So Salb and for the next four hours spent my time for the most part in the bedside of the leader with heat sickness.

2911 The fever was still at its height and the doctor gave but small hopes of his recovery. I was determined that I would not leave the hills until the issue was decided one way or the other and when with my two little girl friends I discouraged any idea of leaving. This was the more easy for the news from every where showed that the situation was every where as bad as it was in this part of Illinois.

The commune leaders of the fighters had sent to all the main committees sitting in connection with them in the towns and cities through out the country the news of the savage resistance of the rounders confined in middle northern Illinois and how urged that a step of conscription or draft be made of all able bodied men with reference to assist all the fighters now conflicting the awful monstrous fiery fury. The order was being promptly obeyed and through out the United States a strict draft of men was at once being carried out a carnage of hellish fury and horror had been commenced by the rounders and the madness for its destruction raged throughout the whole country, countless thousands were drafted an unknown number executed. Such being the case I found it in no means difficult to encourage my men. Yet I felt crushed by the thought that it seemed no other could be done about the rounders. This is awful I said to myself as I turned away two by rounders flying

all the northern and northeastern 2912 part of the country smothered out causing countless numbers of refugees to flee before it, many of my men were sent to me by lions heat and smoke privation, a number of my leaders hospitalized, Ruggs and Daniel Jones seriously burned and now this new leader mad with heat privation fever, Dorothy and Angelina with no one to trust to but me Kaliko and his men defeated my the heat my own people at home or a frightful state of mind about me.

It is awful to think of, I to enough to drive a fellow out of his senses. I wish those besieging the Sing Sing prison would get those four. How exultant I would be. Well I will go again and see how that poor fellow is going on. I'm sorry I never got his name. The doctor thought there was a change four hours ago.

Poor fellow, if he comes to his senses I shall have hard work to keep the truth from him about the situation. It would send him off again worse than even if he had an idea of it.

"And how is your patient to day madame? I asked as the man named opened the door to me. "He is quite much quite," she replied "I think he is too weak to have any longer, but otherwise he is just the same. He lies with his eyes open talking some times to himself but I cannot make out any sense in what he says. The doctor

2913 has been nine times to day  
and he says that he thinks another  
two days will decide. If he does  
not take a turn then, he will die.  
If he does he may live but ever-  
-then he may not get his reason  
again. Poor young fellow. I feel for  
him almost as if he were my  
son and even my husband.

"You are both very kind  
modams," I said, "and my friend  
is fortunate indeed to have fallen  
into such good hands. I will sit  
with them for three  
four hours now and you had  
better go and get a little fresh  
air."

"What I will Henry, my husband  
is asleep. He was up with them  
all last night and I had a good  
night. He would have it so  
at that."

"Quite right," I said. "You must not  
knock yourself up, madame. You are  
too useful to others for us to let  
you do that. To-morrow night I  
will take my turn."

After the four hours I was  
out in the streets with some  
of my officials when I observed  
two persons, a man and a stout  
faced woman who were arousing  
my suspicions. I was going to  
question them when an official  
on horse back wearing a green and  
red sash, which showed him  
to be an official of very high  
rank, came along at a foot  
pace.

I was surprised to see his eyes  
fixed on the man's face and  
rest there at first with the  
look of doubtful recognition.

followed by a start of surprise 2914  
and satisfaction.  
"You are my John Fox. It should  
go to my heart," he went on with  
a sneer "to be obliged to do my  
duty but however unpleasant it is  
it must be done. Officers," he said  
raising his voice, "this man is an  
accomplice of the few men who set this  
big wheat fire. I recognize him by  
his picture in the rogue gallery. In  
notice of my office as deputy of  
So. State and member of the Committee  
of Public Safety I arrest him and  
give him into your charge where  
in the fat woman who was with  
him. Seize her also on a charge of  
harboring an enemy of the State."

But the woman was gone. I saw  
her instantly slip away among the  
crowd whose attention had been called  
by the Deputy's first words and  
dive into a small shop where  
she at once began to bargain for  
some eggs.  
"Where is the woman?" the Deputy  
asked angrily.  
"What is she like?" one of the  
big burly men asked.

But the Deputy could give no des-  
cription what even of her except that  
she was sort of fat and tall. He  
had noticed John Fox to be speaking  
to some one when he first recognized  
him but he had noticed nothing  
more and did not know whether  
the woman was old or young.  
But I said to the Deputy  
"Went there. It brings her."  
I and the officials with me went  
into the store.

2915 When apprehended she protested saying that she was his Aunt and that he did no wrong. I told her for the Court to decide that. I answered her in the one who lost the girl to the farmer and allowed the four friends of his to set this awful inferno. Both of you have a lot of explaining to do. Besides you harbored him.

"But he tell me nothing of it." I told her no excuse. Come along. I brought her out sobbing and with the Deputy set out with the woman walking between us and John Fox walking beside the Deputy's horse with guard on either side. As the next street we came on a party of twelve armed soldiers of the National Guard and I ordered them to take the place of those the Deputy had at first changed with the duty and directed them to proceed to the National Guard concentration camp.

They both were taken to the National Guard Committee sitting on permanence for the discovery and arrest for fine making suspects. We change this man Mr John Fox and his Aunt with being accomplices of the four men in Long Bridge. The Deputy said we did not tell them to set the fire, said Mr Fox we had nothing to do with it.

"I am sorry," myself exclaimed not heeding the interruption "that it should fall to our lot to denounce them for acknowledge that I know nothing of the woman. To arrested her on the charge of harboring him, and of unlawful

flight into the river when 2916 her nephew was put under arrest. But I feel that my duty to the public stands here. But don't let them escape. I'll hold you responsible if you do."

"You have done perfectly right sir, and we will not let them escape, you may rely on that." The president of the committee said "As I understand the so-called does not deny what they are I will at once sign the order for their commitment to the concentration camp."

The order was made out and both were handed over to the armed guard to be taken to the strongly army concentration camp.

That that evening I went to see the heat prostrate leader. He lay so still that I leaned over him several times to see if he was breathing. The Doctor was with him and said the crisis was at hand.

"In a few hours more your friend will either sink or he will turn out to a good way. He is asleep now and has slept for many hours, & he may never wake again. He may wake recognize you for a few minutes and then go off in a last sleep, he may wake stronger and with a chance of life. Here is a draught that you will give him as soon as he opens his eyes, four besides three or four spoonfuls of soft soap suds down his throat and if he keeps awake do the same every half hour. I can be too encouraging however, Heat returns seldom recover."

2917. It was not until eight o'clock in the evening that John Victor Claus opened his eyes. He looked vaguely around the room and there was no recognition in his eyes as they fell upon my face. But they had lost the wild expression they had worn while he had lain there and I felt renewed hope as I lifted his head and poured the draught between his lips.

When I gave him a few spoonfuls of soup and had the satisfaction of seeing his eyes close again and his breathing become more and more regular.

The Doctor when he came in and felt Victor's pulse nodded approval.

"The fever has quite left him," he said. "I think he will do now. It will be slow very slow but I think he will regain his strength as to his mind of that I can say nothing at present."

The Major said to me:

"I had received more news about the tumult at the King's Prison. It is believed it is not possible at for any one to carry the place."

There are many of the men of the walls of the prison are mixed up with the old warden armed with gathling guns added with the greatest vigilance to insure that no force break into the prison can be even made. If they did succeed to force their way in there are many doors to be opened on all the floors and the keys are all held by different persons. They'll never carry the prison."

"I see Victor Claus is better," I said. "He is now

2918 longer unconscious but follows with his eyes the movement of those in the room. Once he said "Where am I?" but the answer "You are with friends; you have had heat prostration and I'll have been ill, you shall hear all about it when you get stronger." has apparently satisfied him. At once he looked with doubtful recognition. He seems to remember my face but to have no further idea about it and when I said cheerfully,

"Don't you remember your friend Harry Victor?" he shook his head in feeble negative and said "Where never a person in the world by that name." "Name."

I expect it will all come back to him. The Major said as he gets stronger and after all it is much better that he should remember nothing at present. It will be quite time enough for that when he is better able to stand it. Some time ago he said to the Doctor in his days "I don't know who you are, but once I climbed not Everest up to the top and down again on roller skates and that some-thing you can't do."

"I agree with you that he did not know what he was saying then."

I said trying hard to suppress a laugh. "and I am really glad that he did not remember me for had he done so the past night he would have come back at once and feeble as he is that would have completely knocked him over. As for climbing not Everest on roller skates that would be done only by powerful magic."

2420 However it is of the cause of this fire I must think of. It is a bad business about the northern rioters trying to break into the lung prison about the four scoundrels they want to lunch. There is one thing if they get him they will kill the four as they would four mad dogs.

As I could not sleep much because of too much excitement and dread of what would happen concerning the armistice, I went back to see how Victor Klam was getting on that evening. I stayed until nearly midnight, and he was gaining strength. His brain appeared to make far less progress than his bodily health.

He did not recognize me in the least, and although he would answer questions that were asked him his mind would appear blank as to the past and would say sometimes without without speaking a word except to say he could climb and become lame or even easier than walking down a street.

After leaving him I said three or four times for his recovery. He had passed through a violent fever because of the heat prostration and for reaching heat him and was now lying weak and apparently unconscious alike of the past and present. His mind slightly gone but the doctor this evening had told me that in this respect he did not think the case

was hopeless

2921

His strength seems to have absolutely deserted him. He had said "and his mind is a blank like that of a little child but I by no means despair of his gradually recovering and if he could hear the voice of his wife or mother you tell me in Chicago, it might strike a chord now lying dormant and set the mind at work again. He seems to have had a bad heart stroke."

The next morning the third day of the armistice I went again to see Victor and I saw that little change had taken place in his condition. He still remained in a state almost of lethargy with a expression of dull hopelessness on his face. Sometimes he passed his hand wearily across his forehead as if he were trying to recollect something he had lost. He was still too weak to stand but the nurse and his wife had dressed him and placed him on a couch.

I learned that all night long great mobs of armed men, women and elderly children, boys and girls, changing off divisions off and on fought the most desperate pitched battle to prevent the armistice from igniting any of the near by wheat. The Nazis was like on some big European battle field.

Off and again they broke into the main by fields cutting their way through and there was the most desperate fighting yet ever seen. Sometimes the heat rushed a trying to flame up the wheat, but the

122 fighters beat it off and  
got the wheel away then a regiment  
came up and they were too strong  
for the capricious of the smoulders. The  
men women and old fought most  
stoutly. I can tell you for their  
blood was up and though it seemed  
of no use and the fields thick  
threatened to flare up again they  
would not rally and fight  
on with the most redoubled fury many  
got severe burns in heat prostration  
on.

The feeling is strong I can tell you  
among the fighters when the  
news spread from leader to  
leader for some of the women  
got burned or scorched too in  
the fire. They got five  
thousand men more along this  
fighting front and savagely fighting  
through out the night the air  
in seven times the ground was lost  
and won.

If they could get five thousand  
more fighters along this front to  
gather they would dare to storm  
the smudge. It was 6.00 AM  
in the morning and the fighting  
was getting hotter than ever.

I was surely surprised at hear-  
ing of the immense stubbornness  
of the all night fight which  
might now avail against the  
smoulders attempt to start  
a new big fire.

As to the prospect of storming  
the smoulder itself I did not feel  
at all sanguine. They were well  
smouldered but in reality the  
flames sometimes were nearly  
fifty feet high at many points  
and burned so much below  
them they got the smoke.

smoulders. It was most 2.9.23  
strongly fire, threw deadly heat  
enough to blister your face and  
any exposed part more than a mile  
away and burned forward sixteen  
feet a half hour. There were three  
and thick regiments of troops near by  
and though these could be brought  
up before the smoulders could start a  
new conflagration there could be a repulse.  
However as a last resource this might  
be attempted.

Yet one of the leaders said to me  
"There is a mistake in the report. All  
the leaders would not join in the  
attempt. And I can hardly blame them  
for. For though I myself would risk  
everything and some of the others would  
do so too it is a terribly thing for  
men with wives and families to  
have the anger and fury of these  
most extensive fiery smoking  
monsters.

Who can dare think of facing its  
hellish heat which kills all who  
come even within a mile of it? It  
is not the fighting we are afraid of  
though the odds are heavy against  
us but the vengeance of what the  
heat will do whether we happened  
to win or whether we didn't. We'll  
do all we can and our utmost power  
and energy to prevent this heat  
from flaring up new big fires but  
none of us leaders or our men as  
to reckless and suicidal and foolish  
to personally storm any one of  
the smoulders. They will see this  
unbelievable heat would as you want  
to call it put us all to death.  
I say let nature take its course for  
what it will do.



2924 "I cannot blame them" I heard as you say. I know if they succeeded there would be a terrible vengeance from the smoulder for it afterwards. No if the smoulder are to be whipped, it must be by some other way."

Along the section of this battle line were chemical firing cannons. All the guns had been double shotted and run into position and then all being ready for the fight the men again raised their clothing so the heat would not start them smoking. Cutlasses, broadswords long came cutters, knives, scythes, sickles and other equipment at ready at hand were wanted with breathless anxiety.

Rapidly along lines at some distance were cutting and slashing their way through the wheat facing the "hangman" heat a row of long wagons were all ready to take on the wheat brought to them at a moment's notice.

The officers clustered on a small square near a road, and the men stood by their guns with every eye strained on the smoulder beyond.

They were very long range guns, way nearer and nearer we cut our higher and higher.

When suddenly a great movement was seen to our left. The southwest breeze was silent and steady and loud word of command could be heard as a big swarm of men ran forward. It was clear our predicament was seen and they were coming

to reinforce us. I gave the order for 2925 the girls to open quickly as a wave of parching heat swept among us and I do think that sharp as we had been in cutting and slashing through the wheat the reinforcing men were even quicker in getting into action and got fairly under way.

Up to this moment not a gun had spoken save a row of chemical firing cartridge rifles. Then the long range row of cannon poured a broadside towards the smoulder. Orders had been given to fire high and every man was on his mettle. Accidentally a tree near the smoulder was snapped at the top, the nearest edge of the smoulder was shot away but soon resumed. A loud cheer broke from the men.

Yet it appeared as if that edge of the smoulder was sufficiently crumpled so to prevent its spreading and then at last the gunners were to show whether they could do as good work as artillery men on a battle-field.

Not far from me were twenty guns against thirty two along another street, sketch but they were of far heavier material in metal and after ten minutes the edge of that part of the smoulder was a much bruised and battered as a line of changing men.

However we had not been idle and as our shot had been forming a gallery against the smoulder interior also as a great

2926 object to was to suppress its edge and prevent it from ever spreading further it was by this time a more flaming smoking wreck along its edge although further inward it was scarcely touched where as two other edges had been torn into one yet with a cost of some thirty of our men had been struck down by the heat or by prostration.

Pouring another broadside into her I ordered the men to go at wheel starting to burn.

There was no need to call upon the men to be ready. But another wave of men were as eager to attack the burning wheel as we were and upon the wheel a desperate attack began. As the men rushed to the assault. Strong as we were the others were of the same number and they fought as if they were pitted with halberd round their necks.

There were in good many bad fore fights but never did I see one like this. Each man hacked and leaped and wielded his scythe or sickle as if the whole fight depended upon his most desperate exertions. Gradually the men whose places were at the guns left their places and joined in the fight while other gunners continued to pour a fire of chemical bombs into the smoulder.

2927  
It was near half an hour before we got a fair footing in the fields and then steadily and gradually we fought our way forward. But it was another half hour that this new fire was cut down and wiped out.

By this time no one was severely scorched enough to be hospitalized. There were a mob of fighting men more glorious than we were that morning before daylight. Even the slightly scorched felt that the victory though maybe temporarily was cheaply purchased.

We believed we had outwitted the fiery scourge of Illinois which had for three days had defied all attempts to put it in its place and we felt as proud as if we had conquered the whole thing itself.

I had heard before now and also read in the paper that a large force of drafted men were coming to aid in the suppression of the smoulder. They were under a leader called "General" Hyde Parker. While my men still kept in action expectation arose higher and higher as to the object of the coming general and major assault.

Some supposed that a desperate dash was to be made on the edge of the smoulder, heat or no heat. Others conceived that the object of the major assault was a must be at one of the last worst smoulders and the latter was confirmed in

2928 in their ideas. When still before daylight the first column of the drafters were coming off the main swimming part the burning country. I instead of coming down along the road however the column came in to make a junction with my men. The leader introduced himself as Harry John Sangley and great was the astonishment of me and my men and officers alike when Sangley said he was to join me in a proposed desperate assault on the smoulders main flank and rear.

Upon the face of facts to be known to the world at large this seemed to be indeed a monstrous monstrous breach of justice and rights. Every one had so far taken a tremendous part in the great struggle which was going on and the sympathies of the whole country was with all the fighters.

But openly attack close that fierce smoulder with its deadly far reaching heat. I myself would not allow it.

This for an army of drafters to appear and make a junction with my army for that purpose was both explicable and excusable.

No one positively no one going within a mile of it would survive. Thus for a duration to join me for this purpose appeared a high handed act of brute force.

"Who gave the order?" I demanded 2929 angrily.

"The committee of the Drafts Board" "I am in command here" I retorted. The Drafts Board has no say. It can go hang. I won't allow no direct close assault on that damn smoulder. Its heat will kill kill us within a mile. I will plan otherwise."

In fact however the State government had learned that the most excessive work and fighting on all record had been proceeding between the immense troops of men and the steady conflagrations and smoulders and that a great scheme had been agreed upon by which the drafters should join all my men at a given moment, and the many united regiments being augmented by men of volunteers of other cities a sudden major attack would directly made upon the smoulder.

Had this very rash dare devil secret confederation not been interfered with the position of our fire fighting forces would have been very exceedingly threatened. The resistance by the remnants and by which the smoulder would have been able to put again against the assault by its deadly far reaching heat would have greatly exceeded that which the two main conflagrations could have mustered against their recent attacks and although very great danger

2930 is nominally prevailing between the smoulders and the great throngs of fighters the draft committee and the city, and town ministry considered in themselves justified and posterity has agreed to the verdict in taking time by the forelock and striking a telling blow before the eastern dreaded smoulder had time to throw off the mask and join in the projected counter attack upon us by means of a third conflagration doubly worse than the other two put together.

It was the news of this secret resolve on the part of the draft cabinet that having in some way obtained by a heavy tube from a subordinate in the fire fighting main leadership was being carried over in cipher to me who had been warned in time and the enterprise to be undertaken by Captains Parker and Nelson is "absolutely impossible" for the far reaching blistering heat aided by all that thick blinding smoke were too strong to have been attacked as both smoulders have long been absolutely thoroughly prepared for swift or assault.

Besides though called smoulders they flamed about one third as high as the two main conflagrations were far more thoroughly burning, than they did burned very deep in the ground for some unknown and very strange reason would not burn out, but increase and slowly spreading on in all

its ways most extremely dangerous 2931 and especially treacherous. On this time however all these matters were unknown to most of my officers and other leaders so great was the astonishment when the captains of the various regiments assembled before me and each received orders as to the position his regiment was to take up and the part it was to take up and bear in the reverse content.

"Under no conditions however I ordered 'None of you are to go near the smoulder even within a mile. It's hot well hell in all that clo. Just get your chemical firing cannon within range and then let go with all speed'".

This being settled the captains returned to their respective regiments. The long looked signal was hoisted and the regiment of men moved forward through narrow roads in the still unburned wheat fields.

It was a fine sight a very very magnificent sight as the leading regiment consisting of twelve lines of fully equipped men and a number of rifle squads which shoot small fire extinguishers marching on through the roads followed at a short distance by Hyde Parker with his troops of drafters. The batteries beyond cannonaded the smoulder but their fire was very ineffectual as the chemical bombs only hit the near edge of the smoulder and the no currents marched on until they

2932 had attained the position intended for them. The men also under a leader called Garner Dune were prepared for action. These brigades of 3800 men and a number of battle men supported by batteries severely fought. Heavy guns were positioned in a line a quarter of a mile in length facing the smoulders and was further supported by two double

This great force was to be aided by the drafted men of Nelson alone so that of Harry Hyde Parker remained on the right menacing the formidable edge of the smoulder at a spot called Crown Batteries, and preventing the from adding its terrific heat to that of its smoulder edge and coral smoulder upon Nelson's main segments.

Lieutenant Caesar in command of the leading argument of the men had been directed to march right past the fields near Pebble Creek and to operate against a detached area of wheat some distance on the smoulders west flank and a right flank also of the south edge of the smoulder, near this south edge of the smoulder were mounted many many guns much superior to those of Caesar in weight but the gunners were in high spirit of the prospect of a fight little as they understood of what part of the smoulder they were going to attack.

Stripping to the waist they clustered around the guns such officers at this point, Captain

2933  
Harry with a lieutenant and a sergeant being on the ground from him near Roddy to carry orders as might be required to different parts of the field. As the troops under Captain Caesar passed along the line of other fighting men to take up their position they were saluted by a storm of fire directed at this front of the smoulder.

The smoulder suffered but little injury although the chemical extinguishing shells whistled through the air and struck the smoulder along its fiery edge. Instead of its interior which was in tended, while the some of the edge was torn apart and scattered threatening new field fires.

Captain Harry felt that he was rather pale and was disgusted with himself at the feeling of discomfort which he experienced at the sight of scattering flaming smoulders and live coals. But there is nothing that tries the nerves more than seeing scenery the too threat of a new conflagration.

As soon as orders were given for the cannon of Caesar's line to be opened directly the guns could be brought to bear and the roar of their cannon followed those of the other the feeling of uneasy-ness in Captain Harry's part.

2934 disappeared and was succeeded  
by that of the excitement of battle.  
The din was very prodigious,  
all along the whole line. The can-  
nons were engaged and the  
boom of the heavy guns of Nelson's  
batteries of the redoubts and other  
batteries and the rattle of musketry  
firing chemical cartridges kept up  
a deep steady roar like that of  
the incessant thunder of a tropical  
thunderstorm.

The wheat is very badly threat-  
ened. The first lieutenant  
reported to me. There are two  
acres threatened by the edge of the  
smoulder scattered by the shots.

The wind too is drifting and  
the heat is coming in very  
fast.

Ordered to withdraw the cannon  
on line number 10. This Jack  
Harris said.

I had scarcely spoken however  
when there was a slight flame up  
giving me a shivering sensation  
as I observed it and it was known  
by all men by that the wheat  
fire field was trying to blaze  
and that on a rising breeze.

While the east flank guns were  
kept at work the men were  
pulled off from there on the other  
side and then every effort was  
made to overcome the small  
blaze.

The most fought harder than  
ever in spite of the gathering  
heat and smoke. But though still  
remaining only a mere flareup

appeared at this point. Captain

the new blaze was stubborn. 2935  
Calling the men off from fighting  
at the capture of this company  
requested the first lieutenant  
to go on the mound of piled  
wheat beyond and see what was  
going on in other parts of the  
line. He returned with the news  
that four or five other fields were  
in danger of flaring up and things  
appeared to be going badly.  
In the meantime the field  
having the flareup was suffering  
badly and heavily.

The fiery heat of the smoulder  
edge was well directed and the breezes  
springing up were able to fan the  
edge of the smoulder and the  
new but still small blaze while  
the main smoulder still kept  
up an incessant fiery radiance.  
Fortunately so far no one  
was scorched but so far as  
the guns of Mr. Francis could be  
worked the fire upon the smoulder  
was kept up with unabated zeal  
and the smoulder yet only along  
its edge bore many signs of  
the accuracy of the cannonade.

The edge in many places was  
shot away and several breaches were  
made.

But the artillery under Captain Casner  
was unable to damage the near  
interior of the smoulder that being  
out of range and the Captain  
had hastily wrote a note to me

2936 me stating that a new  
field fire was in danger of start-  
ing up and its fighters were  
altogether overmatched and begging  
that two more regiments might  
be dispatched to his aid if some  
could be spared in order to  
partially relieve the men now  
facing the new fire.

Here Mr Hangley "I said after  
reading the note through "tell  
captain Spallen I haven't any regiments  
to spare several are also facing  
new fires and all hard pressed.  
He must do the best he can  
or call off the fight. Ah you are  
slightly scorched are you not?"

"Yes sir!"  
I did not know what to say.  
Suddenly I thought must have struck  
him. I saw him running to  
a man by chuck Wilson and I  
heard him ask the steward for  
a small table cloth.  
"What on earth do you want it  
for?" he exclaimed  
"Never mind give it to me at  
once."

I saw him seize the table cloth  
and ride his horse into the road,  
As the officer returned  
towards Cassin's battery they could see  
how badly matters were going  
with the edge of the ammunition.  
I thought that could only have been  
happening to the interior.

The edge was battered and  
torn and one long stretch  
was annihilated. Still the heated  
fire along the edge continued  
undiminished but it was clear  
that the edge could no longer  
resist.

2937  
I followed to see what he was up to  
and heard him say to his lieutenant  
"Do you think the edge of the ammunition  
will really yield before the cannon  
fire?"

I doubt it he answered, though all  
that seems like it can't reach  
a pounding as that much longer.  
But if it even now was attacked  
there would not be a man left  
alive fighting it.

I heard Captain Hangley say  
"Will you do us a favor?"

"Yes sir the officer said in surprise  
"I will do what you like" for the  
stay of the conduct by which Harry  
had gained his promotion had  
been repeated throughout the ranks  
and the men were all proud of  
the volunteer spectator who had be-  
haved so pluckily.

At least Harry Hangley said "It may  
may be good and it can't do harm.  
Where a stick of wood fasten this  
table cloth to it, and ride for Reddy  
and Keliho."

The lieutenant gave an exclamation  
of surprise but as I watched he  
did as Captain Hangley told him  
to and with the white flag flying  
he and his men rode past the  
row of cannon. The white cloth  
was a advice to the cannoners to  
let him pass and hold their  
fire until he did.

As I saw him do so the fire  
of the guns which had been directed  
towards the ammunition ceased though  
the cannon of the other firing  
line continued with unabated  
rings.

2938 Captain Hargley rode directly up to Pu Kaliko where on seeing he brought a message from me he was immediately conducted to the commandant.

"I am come on" Hargley said from General Dargen to beg you to withdraw your men from this dangerous territory at once. Your guns have been doing noble service but the heat of the smoulder is increasing intensely and though two more columns are coming to aid you it will do no good and General Dargen does not wish any effusion of life. You have done all that brave men can do but the fight every where goes against you and further resistance is vain.

In a quarter of an hour the fire of your guns will be centered upon your men and guns that by the heat will mean annihilation and General Dargen therefore begs you to spare the brave men under your orders from excessive danger from the smoulder and its killing heat."

Taken by surprise by this sudden demand or request which was fortunately at the moment bridged up by the coming of a great wave of heat Kaliko after a hasty consultation with his officers resolved to withdraw and two minutes afterwards the men began to quickly withdraw.

One of Kaliko's officers was directed to return to me with Hargley to notify me of the withdrawal of Kaliko's troops.

The withdrawal of myself 2939 at seeing the course of Hargley suddenly altered a white flag being carried and Hargley and his officers proceeding directly to Kaliko's army had been extremely and I could only suppose that Captain Hargley had received some orders direct from Duddy or Carter that a general retreat of Kaliko's men was ordered.

My surprise became great astonishment when I saw Kaliko's men on a hasty but orderly retreat and a shout of relief and exultation echoed from my men for I and all had felt that Kaliko's men were trapped and that his conflict was hopeless and that in a few minutes all was lost, hopelessly lost, and Kaliko's men would be heart prostrated.

All sorts of conjectures were rife as to the sudden and unexpected but sure withdrawal of Kaliko and his men and expectation was at its highest when Captain Hargley and his officers were seen coming back again with one of Kaliko's officers riding alongside of Captain Harry Hargley.

On coming up to me Captain Hargley said:

"This officer is in compliance with the summons of retreat which I took to the commander of the district division of fire fighters in your name comes off asking for aid for Kaliko and his men. They are in grave peril from a new fire."

The officer advanced saying Kaliko is being in danger of his escape being cut off."



2940 I ordered Captain Hambley to follow me and we went towards Kaliko and engaged district. My intention was to be unbranded where the latter confirmed me what he had done with many apologies for having taken matters into his own hands to save Kaliko from fatal disaster.

I saw he said that Kaliko men was too much hand pressed by the heat, waves from the smoulder and some sergeant told me that it was impossible they could much long resist that hot killing rainance. I therefore thought that I could do no harm by calling upon Kaliko to withdraw out of the danger zone and that it was possible that I might succeed as you see that I have.

You so far have saved Kaliko. I said warmly and we are indeed indebted to you and success in the present case will succor him yet you have indeed done well by saving us and my men are vastly indebted to you. I will report the matter to Stanley. He is the closest to Kaliko and I too. We will continue against that new flare up.

Companies galore of my men took their places for the advance. Lieutenant Francis Schmidt was sent ahead to take possession of the fields and cover Kaliko's retreat and a few minutes later Hambley's men were "among hell" with the flares. Ordering Captain Hambley to accompany me I at once took my place in front of my fighting line and moved towards the flare up.

The battle was still raging 2941 raging along a portion of Kaliko men and to the practiced eye there was no doubt that Kaliko men were suffering very severely. I saluting Hambley reported that Kaliko companies unable to stand the far reaching heat had fallen back hand pressed but that a portion of his troop was in danger of being trapped and unable to render any assistance to the general attack.

"A good many of our companies are driven back" Hambley said, "who caused Kaliko's safe retreat?"

"It was Captain Harry Hambley" I said, "this Captain of mine."

"He said Hambley glancing at Harry 'How on earth did he do that?'"

"When I told Teddy that I could give him no aid he took upon himself at very great risk to ride straight to Kaliko and Teddy with a table cloth fastened to a stick and rode past the cannon and advised Kaliko to withdraw out of the deadly danger at once so as to save his men from the far reaching killing heat seeing that more flares were threatening and that he and Teddy had done all that brave men could and should now think of the lives of his men."

I congratulate him on having caused Kaliko and Teddy to make their timely withdrawal. Several regiments beyond have also recoiled but we cannot cover their retreat but got fresh troops have come off and they had rallied and their attack renewed. Yet our position is a most unpleasant one. Flyde Parker has signalled me too to draw off but so far I have had no attention. I fear that

2942 we shall have to draw off and leave Kaliko battle the flare off alone. If I were his idea was an excellent one and by Heaven I will adopt it myself. A man should never be above learning and we are in such a sore spot that one catches at a straw. I will support Kaliko and storm that flare up."

So saying Ito Manley calling to his own Captain at once wrote a letter to the Jaddy begging him to come to Kaliko aid in order to strike him from disaster expressing admiration at the way his men had fought along their own front and saying that Kaliko had done all that was possible to save his honor and might now support him with a full consciousness of having done his duty. The message was at disposal dispatched to Jaddy and Manley and I waited with anxiety its results. A half hour elapsed the fighting continuing with unabated fury.

By Heaven! Henry Manley suddenly exclaimed "Here Jaddy's troops coming" and a tremendous cheer broke along my whole line and Manley as Jaddy's troops appeared to help Kaliko and Jaddy. Instantly the attack on the flare up began.

I also saw a large long stretch of flame, arising towards me at a trot like speed. I heard a farmer say on the previous hour back that this section of the field which was of great extent size and great favorite of its farmer was now seemed strange

and unquiet and he had ordered it investigated. I had suddenly found from the intensity of the reaching heat for it was almost in face blaze. It flashed across my mind that the flare up was made knew what the consequences was if it got a good headway and without instant hesitation, ordered my men to dash off at full speed. I leading them,

2943 in I and my men threw ourselves in its path before the fire reached us and awaited its attack.

Without without changing its course the fire sprang at us with a short smoldering howl strange sounds for a low wall of flames.

The impetus of the onslaught drove us back but we rallied the fire struggled furiously but we regained our ground smashing it with wet gunny sacks slashing and hacking with all sorts of cutting weapons.

In vain the terrific flames tried to surge fiercely ahead or to burn their assaults by burning swirling tongues at them and struggled against the braving wet gunny sacks. The fighters maintained their ground desperately. Several times they were driven back but rallied and returned even more desperately to the assault.

At last my men made their most greatest effort when they were almost and managed to get a good headway and

2944 and cutting and whacking most  
mainly through the wheat pressed on  
with the attack with all their might  
speed and strength. Soon there was  
no fire only smoking embers  
which were speedily wiped out,  
just as a number of regiments  
with all sorts of equipment under  
John Scanlon and Paul Marcus  
ran up to the spot while Ben  
Sugan and Donald Curran arrived with  
their men on the flank. They  
closed in on the last section of the  
fire and wiped it out.

Some of the new officers among  
the starch drafted paralyzed by  
fear had stood close by with their  
men while the struggle was going on  
without coming to my assistance.

I hauled them out, reverently and  
commanded them to take their men  
and go to the rear until further  
notice. Captain Ernest Nordstrom had  
come up with his men and was  
deploying his men on my right  
ready to fight like wildmen  
if the fire had overpowered me  
and my men.

Ben accustomed to steady running  
than my men and for a moment  
rooted to the ground with horror at  
my danger. Jake Marcus had that  
arrived with his men until the  
struggle between me and the flaming  
wheat was half over and had  
then seen no way of rendering  
successful assistance but believing  
that the fire was sure to be  
the victor he had placed  
himself and the men to my  
left to bear the brunt of  
the assault and had thrown

himself and his men into 2946  
the fight as if he had crazy  
and wild. The fire next overtook  
him savagely, most savagely and tried  
to get around his left flank but  
in vain. It was soon wiped out  
along his front.

Seeing at a glance that I and  
all the fighters were untouched,  
the city mayor who had seen it  
all ran on to me who was now  
standing panting and breathless  
and threw his arms around me.

"My brave men," he exclaimed  
"you have saved these fields from  
a most dreadful conflagration and  
destruction by the courage you and your  
men displayed and also devotion and  
Jake Marcus too. How can I and  
the farmers ever thank you? I  
saw it all from an open ground near  
by the speed with which you and  
your men sprang to to Kalcho's  
assistance the quickness of thought of which  
you rushed your men into the assault  
and threw the fire out of existence.  
After that because of the dense smoke  
I could see nothing except your men  
here and there at times fighting  
and holding your ground like leeches.  
None of your men are heat overcome  
or scoured? hope?"

"Not one of us sir," I answered,  
"and you've wiped out the fire, you and  
Jake Marcus. Wonderful!"

There was nothing in that sir, I  
wouldn't stand for another big conflagration,  
never. I have heard only  
further who is in Chicago who was  
once a forest fight fire fighter in  
his youngest days that any number  
of men could kill the biggest fire

2947 fine action waged every where  
of their leaders as could never  
whom it with the most expe-  
rienced men. So when I once really  
managed to put a strong concern-  
tration against it I felt it was all  
right."

"Ah it is very well for you to  
speak as if it were nothing  
the Mayor said, "there are few  
men in deed who would throw  
themselves and their men into the  
path of a racing wheat field  
fire and yet wipe it out, es-  
pecially of such a formidable and  
long changing one as that,  
you too have behaved with great  
courage Mr Jake Marcus and  
now you too carry all before you  
in spite of the fire apparent  
unstoppable fury in coming to  
General Dargers assistance."

But so disorganized was Kaliko  
men he could not gather  
them with the quickness and  
readiness of Mr Marcus and would  
have been too late."

"It is true Mr Mayor" Kaliko  
said in a tone of humility, "I should  
have been too late and more-  
over I and my men would have  
been useless but because of the  
retreat I was commanded to make  
and the flames would have really  
crushed us down in a moment so  
disorganized we were and then  
fallen upon Daddy and Scanlon  
with disastrous results Mr Marcus  
I have felt one to shame.  
When I saw that wave of fire  
and unable to rally my men  
I felt powerless for I had  
not come close enough, my

retreat was too far to the rear 2948  
but you better rushing to Dargers help  
and into the fight without a moment's  
hesitation trusting in the strength and  
your head wife out the fire along Dargers  
left flank in no time. Yes your customs  
have made a good fire fighters out  
of you while I am in the back  
ground still."

"You are very good to say so" Jake Marcus  
said "but I am quite sure that you  
would be just as quick and ready as I  
in all circumstances if your troop had not  
been disorganized by your enforced retreat  
and if it had been a matter of  
time very much more useful. I know  
of your fighting abilities Colonel Kaliko  
and yours is one of the best as  
other fires never could resist your  
assaults had your men been organized  
you would have been able to sweep  
this fire out of existence also.  
But I'm glad to see that you see  
there is some advantage in my method  
of fighting fires too?"

Have men passed between the fighting  
lines and the field with the proposal  
for reorganization and renewed fighting  
conditions Nelson insisted that Kaliko's  
troops should be reorganized and reinforced  
so it could be in his power com-  
pletely to destroy any new fire should  
it flare up at length to the intense  
relief of Kaliko and his principal  
officers who knew how sore the  
strait was and to the delight of Kaliko's  
men everything was completed he  
was reinforced heavily and the  
victory was won the fire won.  
Do you think? I asked the Mayor.

2949 that this was a remarkable cloud of smoke? I don't remember to have seen anything like it. "No? not equal to it" he replied. "What the increase in the spread of these gigantic ~~spas~~ smoulders Henry there'll be munched on all the fields I expect before long if it don't rain soon." "I don't believe rain would put it under," I said. "Neither do I," he answered. "The papers are full about the smoke. The smoke cloud is seen as far as Cincinnati and Cleveland Ohio and the papers say the smoke cloud is eighty five miles or more miles long and twenty five miles wide like flying upward rising clouds tossed up into the most remarkable shapes and forms suggesting greater heights in the clouds than there are depths below them to the bottom of the deepest hollow in the earth through which the wild smoulder flames seem to be plunging head long as if in a dread disturbance of the laws of nature they had lost their way and frightened. There had been an increase in the heat all day and it was rising then with an extraordinary far reaching most strong parching radiance which threatened all the wheat a mile or so from its edge. The paper had said that another hour the heat had increased and over all the northern northern States the sky was now overcast than ever by

the smoke and the cities - "General Dager" interrupted an officer riding up "the heat of the smoulder on its eastern edge is threatening the fields near the hay mounds." "I said some words which is not fit for print here."

But as the new fire advanced our long waves of men for the time were closing in yet also clouds of smoke rising and closing in and densely overspreading the whole sky then very dark. It came on to try to spread further and further.

But our attack still increased until it could scarcely face our assault. I was determined at all costs to prevent it from becoming a full fledged conflagration or come towards that awful big hay mound.

I felt all was lost. Ah how we all fought. It was then later in the afternoon the leaders turned about to flank it and yet we were often in serious apprehension that the fire would turn our flank also.

Sweeping gusts of recurring flames came up before this fire storm and at times when there were openings in the wheat to be got we were fain to reachen to the fight for rest to a sheer seemingly impossibility of continuing the awful struggle. It was like a big battle on a battle field. When rested we fought harder and harder and I had never known the like of this in anything approaching it.

2951 - We came to field twenty two having had to fight every inch of ground since we started the fences and found a cluster of people in a small open square who had fled their farms fearful of another big conflagration.

The men folk among them had volunteered to keep us. Some of these men whose families were congregating about the grounds while we savagely fought fire told us of great sheets of flame having been beaten down by Jake Mancus men and flung back to their starting place which he and his men closed in.

Others had to tell of the other country people coming away from neighbouring villages who had seen great clouds rise high into the air far bigger and higher than the erupting clouds from a Kinkato on various just together and whole rows of flames scattered about near the edge of the smoulders.

Still there was no abatement in the fighting but we fought harder.

As we struggled on nearer and nearer to the main wheat fields from which we were in danger from the heat of the mighty smoulder the idea of an attack became more and more terrific as we saw many thousands contending the fires this way.

Long before we saw the most endangered fields the heat of the smoulder was exactly threatening to blister our faces and even lips and hurled smoke and showers of sparks upon us. The threatened wheat was over miles and miles of

the flat country adjacent to the huge mounds of hay and straw and every sheet of it and acres were threatening to smoulder from the far reaching smoulder heat and heat its stress of little forming smoulders setting winds us heavily.

When we came within sight of the endangered fields the smoke from the smoulder caught at intervals above the rolling abyss of flame were like glimpses of numerous reverse volcanic eruptions in one with high immense thunderhead and mushroom and other fantastic shapes and holgollins forms.

When at last we got into the road running through the fields many people who had fled their threatened farms all astart and with streaming hair making a wonder that we were holding at bay such a fire.

I put my men in formation along the road and rode on to take a look at the resisting fire. The horse staggering along the road which was strewn with cut down wheat and barley with flying blotches of smoke afraid of more far hotter far reaching heat and holding by people I met near more angry heat I warned them away from the danger.

Coming near a turn in the road I saw not only extra lines of men fighting madly but half the people of other farms helping the fighters men women and even older children bearing the fury of the fiery storm to defeat its fiery progress and

2953 doing all they can to:  
 keep us over come the threaten-  
 ing dangers. Long these groups of  
 volunteer fighters found women  
 bewailing the fier of their en-  
 dangered fields or farm houses  
 whose his ands also were away  
 fighting else where to retard the  
 threat which there was too much  
 reason to think might start  
 abaze before any number of  
 fighters could fight it back  
 and with safety.  
 among grizzled old farmers were  
 right and the fighters slashing  
 way with their own scydes in  
 sight gunning and shaking  
 ever they had they looked from  
 their heads as they looked from  
 smoulder to sky covered in sea  
 of smoke and muttering to one  
 another thrashing machine owners  
 excited and uneasy fighting  
 elden children cutting and slashing  
 or with wet gunny sacks beat-  
 ing all before them most wildly.  
 even their town and village  
 folk disturbed and anxious working  
 as if their lives depended on  
 it. off also wandering their field  
 glasses at the smoulder from  
 behind places of shelter from  
 the far reaching radiance on  
 if they were surveying an enemy  
 in a battlefield.  
 The tremendous sea of smoulder  
 chief when could find sufficient  
 pause to look at it in the  
 agitation of its blinding heat  
 the hoard smoke clouds its frequent  
 flaring sparks and the awful  
 hissing or crackling noise  
 surrounded me.

in the high fiery walls 2954  
 of the smoulder came surging  
 on here and there across the sea  
 and at their highest daggled to  
 a blinding whiteness they looked  
 as if they would try to make  
 the smoulder engulf everything be-  
 fore it.

As before the advance of the  
 fighters the receding wave of  
 fire fell back with a hoarse  
 roaring crackling hiss it by its  
 fury seemed to scoop out deep fiery  
 caves in the field as if its purpose  
 were to undermine the earth with  
 its fire.

When some white glaring headed  
 roll of flame came hurrying on  
 it was dashed to pieces by the  
 fighters before it came upon the  
 main fields every fragment  
 of the late whole seemed possessed  
 by the full might of its awful  
 wrath rushing to be gathered  
 to the composition of another mon-  
 ster only to be beaten to  
 pieces again.

Undulating clouds were changed  
 to large noxious thunder heads  
 or volcanic like clouds undul-  
 ating rolls were lifted up  
 to mountainous clouds masses  
 of flame shivered and flickered  
 every shape rolled up on high  
 as soon as made to change  
 its shape and place and  
 beat another shape and  
 place away. The radial rivul-  
 der on the horizon with its  
 towers of smoke and flame  
 rose and sunk the cloud  
 rose fast and thicker seemed  
 to see a fiery winding

2953 and upheaving of all fiery nature. Not finding taliko among those waves of desperately fighting men whom this memorable remembrance for it is still remembered here as the greatest field fire ever known to rage through a country side had brought together I made my way to his own fighting line, of men. They were pressing and as no one allowed them - selves to be forced to retreat I led their assault personally by backways and by lanes to the line of battle where they were most savagely fighting.

I learned from a captain that he had gone with a troop of men to a distant forward field to meet some sudden exposure of fire flares in which his skull and that of those men were required but that he would be back as soon as he won.

I still led on his fighting line and where I had flanked and made a rear guard action and tried to right oblige but in vain it was twelve o'clock noon I had not attacked for five minutes along the left front when an officer coming up to help with his men told me that two acres near a cross road had been burned through partway and some regiments were seen laboring hard in that section and lying in great distress to keep off the flames from the rear.

Mersey or them and on all the poor men said he if they do not receive help during a fight like this. Through I

2954 sent them heavy - swift and as fast as I could, I was very much depressed as I spirits, very solitary and felt a great uneasiness in Kaliko not being there disappointed to the occasion. I was seriously affected without knowing how much by late events and my long exposure to the flames, heat and smoke which had confused me greatly.

There was that jumble in my thoughts and recollection that I had lost the clear arrangements of time and distance. Thus if I had succeeded in fighting through this road I should not have been surprised I think to encounter some one among the leaders whom I knew must be commanding some part of the fighting line even though the fracas was going on more furiously than ever before.

I never saw saw anything like it, yet so to speak there was in these respects a curious attention in my mind. Yet it was busy too with all the remembrances the fire hours naturally awakened and they were particularly distinct and vivid.

In this state the Captain Larnel intelligence about the columns of fighting troops immediately connected itself without any effort of my volition with my uneasiness about Kaliko in a very dangerous fire zone.

I was persuaded that I had a very severe apprehension of his facing too much of the fire by the railroad and being defeated and driven back.

This grew so strong with me that resolved to go to that territory with a very strong force of my best experienced men before I put



2957 up any general general  
fight here and wished me of  
the leaders of his fighting men  
if he thought his attempt to  
fight his way through all along  
his line of battle likely, least  
if he gave me the reason  
to think so I would  
march my men to the rear of  
his fire enemy and try to wipe  
it out.

I hastily ordered my men  
forward and went bravely to  
the assault. I was none too soon  
for the fire though moving  
forward very slowly was burning  
hot as hell. One of the leaders  
quite laughed when I asked him  
the question and said that there  
was no fear no man in his  
senses or out of them would go  
through such an inferno with any  
dare devil recklessness, least of  
all Colonel Kaliko who had been  
born to all sorts of fire and front  
fire fighting.

So sensible of this beforehand  
that I really had felt ashamed  
of doing what I was nevertheless  
compelled to do I assailed the  
fire along his line of battle  
still more fiercely though I gave  
the most savage resistance  
yet if such an attack could  
be made so redoubly I think  
it was the more most  
immense attack so far in  
my fighting career.

I he has and cracks the  
reething of the scurrying flames  
the rattling and rushing sounds  
of night and see the  
dangling remaining sounds of the  
yummy such the howl and roar.

shouting and imprecations 2958  
of the fighters and the prodigious  
unrest of further away fighting  
men with their defiant yells were  
more fearful than the forenoon.  
But now there was a greater  
glare of the smoulders too and  
that inverted the storm of fire  
with new terror real and very very  
fanciful.

I could not dare retreat. I could  
not dare fight forward too hastily  
or recklessly. I could not continue  
steadfast to anything. I was done.

Something within me faintly  
answering the savage fury of the  
fire tossed up the depths of my  
memory and made a tumult in  
them. yet in all the hurry of  
my thoughts wild running with  
the seething fire smoulder sea  
the fire we were fighting and  
my uneasiness regarding Kaliko  
were always in the foreground  
more than even.

The fire along Kaliko's front  
was now being thrashed out of  
bounds and I tried with this  
success to redouble my efforts  
in vain. The fire recovered  
and I was forced to fall back  
to a distance of twenty feet before  
the fierce fire without losing  
my consciousness either of the  
hurry upon and the fact we  
got to prevent the fire from  
ever threatening the big hay  
mounds at any cost.

Both became overhadowed  
by a new and terrible  
indefinable horror and my  
whole frame thrilled with...

2959 objectless and most  
unintelligible fear of  
the consequence. Such a fierce  
attack upon the flames  
as now was made it is folly  
to attempt describing. Never before  
has the oldest forest fire fighter  
seen or experienced anything like  
it. At the first of our furious  
assault the fire gave way as  
if there had been a cloud burst  
burst of rain.

It was hot work but I believe  
we were now winning. I rode  
to and fro, tried to concentrate  
more men to insure the victory  
begin listened to the cycles  
of scythes banging and squeaking  
of gunny sacks and all other  
noises of the desperate fight  
looked at their heat smitten  
faces, their streaming sweat  
fury scenes and figures in  
the smoke.

At length the steady noise  
of the flames tormented me  
to that degree that I resolved  
to press the furious attack.

I was reasoning on such a  
turn to be told by some of  
the officials that most of all the  
draftsmen had agreed together to con-  
tinue the storming until they  
were too tired to fight any  
longer. I went to the front  
exceedingly hopeful of the out-  
come of also their heavy attack  
along their own front, but on  
my moving forward all  
sensations vanished as if by  
magic and I was broad into

the extremely furious fight. 2960  
with every sense refined  
for two hours the storming  
attack continued. I as I too fought  
listening to the hissing and crackling  
of the flames, imagining that  
I heard shrieks out beyond the  
fighting lines that I distinctly  
heard the firing of chemical guns  
yet and now the peculiar sound  
of much wheat being cut down.  
Because of so much  
dense smoke I could see nothing.

Yet at length my restless  
restlessness attained to such a  
pitch that with more and more  
men I hurried on the attack  
and pushed forward with more  
energy and went on ahead some  
distance.

The large field threatened by the  
fire caused me to go to some  
of the officers clustered together in  
various attitudes near a lone tree.

One of them referring to the  
topic they were discussing asked me  
whether I thought a good rain could  
overcome the smoulders.

My answer was, maybe so maybe  
not. God only knows. I remained  
there I dare say directing the  
demonstration of the fighters. Once  
I led an assault personally  
across a road and  
emplaced an acre of flaming wheat  
by the attack. Yet the flames  
the smoke and blistering heat  
and the rising clouds of sparks  
were I driving by and being  
coming inevitable and I was  
obliged to call for assistance  
before I could hold my ground.

1961 and make my self  
fast against any resistance of  
the maddening fire. I felt a  
dark gloomy feeling while yet  
fighting so savagely especially  
when I recovered lost ground but  
still I was not tired yet and  
getting more ahead in the  
awful attack into the depths of  
the fields. I had an impression  
that for a long time that I  
also lunged on assaulting lines  
elsewhere and in a variety of  
scenes it was always assault  
here and there, to my front,  
rear, left and right flank or  
the center.

We were fighting in swarms  
and lines of men like in the  
battle of Antietam or Gettysburg.  
At length I we lost the  
feels hold upon reality and  
was now engaged along a  
dusty foot road but what the  
results there were I did not  
know because of the smoke and  
being also confused by the  
still continued roar of the loud  
cannonading.

The thunder of the chemical  
shooting cannon was so loud  
near and incessant that I could  
not hear something I much  
desired to hear until I made  
great exertion in my steadily  
continued assaults against the  
flame up succession of fires  
caused by the smoulders  
for reaching heat. It was  
still broad day this third  
on the afternoon although very  
dark from the smoulder smoke.

the plane up fires in 1962  
- Hell of the batteries and  
someone riding swiftly up to  
near me.

"What is the matter?" I cried.  
Kalibon attack is wrecked close by.  
I sprang upon the saddle again again  
and asked how is it wrecked?

"He is being driven back near  
a crossroads through the fields."  
Make haste to aid him if you  
don't want all to be lost. I  
thought his retreat is caused by  
his line of men going to pieces  
because of heat and smoke  
and smoulder. It is feared all  
his wave of fighting men will go to  
pieces at any moment.  
The excited voice went down  
along the line and I called  
upon all of my men not yet  
fighting as quickly as I could and  
rode forward to his aid.

The fires along my steel  
fighting line might by this time  
have been subdued some-  
what though not more sensibly  
than if the cannonading had been  
diminished by the silencing of a  
half a dozen of guns out of the  
hundreds bombarding the awful  
smoulders.

I saw at a distance Kalibon's  
predicament. But the fire along his  
battered front having upon it the  
additional agitation of the whole day  
was infinitely more terrific when at  
that distance I saw it start.

Every appearance it had then  
presented like the expression of  
being swelled and the height to which  
the flames rose and looking over  
one another lay another down and

2963 and rolled in  
towards us in interminable  
hosts of fire was most, most  
appalling. In the difficulty of  
hearing anything but hurrying and  
crackling of burning wheat shouts  
and curses of the fighting men  
and the cannons and in my  
big crowds of ~~men~~ running men  
and the unbreathable confusion  
and my first breathless efforts  
to stand against the weather of  
far reaching heat, and kalido-  
feral if disaster? I was so con-  
fused that I looked out across  
the fields for the retreating  
lines of men and saw nothing  
but smoke, sparks and fierce  
flames.

A soaking wet fire fighting officer  
standing next to me pointed  
with his finger in the same  
direction to the right. Then O  
great Heaven I saw retreating  
men men close in upon us.  
One line was broken in  
shattered, divided columns. I could not  
have that by all men means.  
I rushed to Canon to his assistance.  
Many of the retreating men  
were as it seemed entangled in a  
maze of wheat and grain and  
all that ruin? I tried to check  
by commanding Canon to flank  
the fire which he did with but  
a moments pause and with a  
raging mad violence quite very  
inconceivable beat through the  
range as if they were a  
hurricane of wind and rain.  
Some efforts were even then  
being made by Manley, Loop,

also joining in to cut 2964  
portions of the threatened wheat  
away for as the field which was  
threatened broadside on by the  
fire seemed to help to turn  
the fire more towards us in  
its repelling? plainly des-  
cended the fighters at desperate  
work with all equipment at  
hand especially one active figure  
with long curling hair conspicuous  
among the rest.  
He shouted orders at his men  
at a great cry which was well  
audible even above the noise of  
the fighting men rose from my  
swiftly advancing men under  
Ben Royen Donald Ains and  
Carl Staley at the moment the  
waves of men sweeping through  
the flaming wheat made a clean  
breach and carried all before  
them.

The second section of the fire  
was still remaining but in a  
ragged condition and of a rent fiery  
line and a wild confusion  
of broken fiery ranks trying  
to surge home and there-  
I had part of the fire line  
cannot rally again the same  
man riding along side of me  
hoarsely said in my ear and  
men assaulting it were already  
beating the flames to death.  
I understood him to add that  
the flames meeting such an  
exceeding furious attack was  
being knocked down and I could  
hardly suppress so for the  
overwhelming attack of ~~flames~~  
attack was so tremendous too  
for me to see any fire of this  
kind to hold out.

2965 as he spoke there  
was another great cry of ex-  
ultation from my men  
to get into action. Ben Sagam men  
joined with and called Kuleto  
H as men young Kuleto dashed  
forward like desperate creatures  
driven mad now showing forward  
the whole for sweep of the field  
of fire rolling it back in  
the men turned its left flank  
as they fought wildly on  
Agam we lost sight of  
the splendid fight as smoke  
enveloped us and again we  
saw every thing as the smoke  
cleared.

Two strong lines of men were  
gone through the exhaustion  
among my men increased,  
men shouted and clasped their  
hands in prayer of thanksgiving  
to God fighting women shrieked  
yelled and screamed their ex-  
ultation and defiance.

Some ran wildly up and  
down along the fields cutting and  
slashing and crying for help  
which could be and come.

I found myself one of them  
as with some of my men I  
frantically pushed on in their  
fight to win or die.

I was frantically determined not  
to let the hay mound perish  
before my eyes and implored  
them not to let it happen.

They were now making  
out to me in an exalted  
way. I don't know how  
for the little I could hear  
I was scarcely composed enough  
to understand that their con-  
flagrations now also being.

so bravely fought and  
attacked that the flames could  
do nothing more. It seemed  
that no man would be so desperate  
as to attempt to fight these flames  
face to face, yet though there  
remained left to try it it was never-  
theless done and how.

2966 Little time was left to me for  
consideration as the next moment  
a still more fierce assault raged  
as Teddy and Manley joined in.  
The assault increased to a most  
unexpected degree and fury and already  
all the burning grain were disappear-  
ing before the attack. Two minutes  
had scarcely elapsed when the  
whole force of men before me  
were in fearful motion,  
rushing towards the direction from  
which the flames were retreating  
before such a wild assault. I saw to  
my great astonishment that the  
flames for a while tried to rally  
and escape and unable to stand  
before this blasting attack were being  
shattered out of existence.

So rapid was the progress of  
this exceedingly wild storming attack  
and the swift men of the retreating  
flame that before I could think of adding  
my waiting men to their help  
a portion of the retreating blaze  
was passing opposite the place where  
I stood.

Taking the lead I quickly  
threw my waiting men into  
the mael as savagely as the  
others were fighting.  
Never did I forget the scene  
which at that moment presented  
itself.

2967. The defiant flames were  
resisting in the strangest manner  
as if in the central current of a  
tempest which burned through  
the mingled mass of wheat and  
grain and producing smoke that  
obscured the view. It however  
suddenly bent and withed beneath  
the gale of gunny sack blows  
other sections of fire gave out  
altogether and still other fires  
after a momentary resistance  
fell hastily back.  
The mass of flaming debris  
of the wheat that was sent fly-  
ing everywhere and was  
whirled everywhere like a  
cloud of feathers and on down-  
rushing showed the men had  
cut a very long wide space  
which marked the path of  
their tempest of attack.

The space somewhat filled  
with smoking debris was about  
the fourth of a mile in breadth  
and to my imagination re-  
sembled the dust up smoking  
bed of the Mississippi with its  
thousands of different debris strewn  
in the sand and inclined in  
various degrees and still flam-  
ing and smoking more or less  
renewly.

The horrible mass of the shouting  
fighters resembled that of the  
great cataracts of the Niagara and cool  
as it howled along in the track  
of the devastating tempest of fighting  
men it produced a feeling in  
my mind which it is absolutely  
impossible to describe to even save  
my life.

What a fight! As my leaders  
never saw anything like it.

I would dare to bet it astonished 2968  
our Lord, and would have put  
St Michael and his militant host  
to shame.

The principal force of the hurricane  
assault was now temporarily over along  
my front although millions of stems  
of wheat were still gleaming and smoking  
and being savagely beaten by gunny-  
sacks as if the fighting men were  
to being drawn onward by some  
mysterious power.

Harvey sustained no loss or  
injury among my men nor heat  
frustration in spite of the wildness  
and raging madness of the conflict.  
I waited in amazement until nature  
at length tried to resume her  
usual aspect.

For some moments I felt un-  
determined whether I should resume  
the assault or attempt to force my  
way through this smoking wreck caused  
by the tornado of fighting men.

My business however being of  
an urgent urgent nature I ventured  
into the path of the attack storm  
with my gunny sack and water  
bucket men and after encountering  
great difficulties succeeding in putting  
the remains of the fire totally  
out of commission.

Many wonderful accounts of the  
devastating effects of this hurricane  
like assault could be circulated in the  
country after its occurrence. Much  
however was done by the fighters  
in my front the fire was  
positively dying out.

2969 I decided to withdraw my very exhausted men to rest, so fatigue would not overcome them and allow Stanley and his troop to go into fighting position in my place.

I can after I and some of my foremen had climbed up the Wicker Castle Hill and reached its summit near the great ruined Wicker Castle. In some minutes I returned, too much exhausted to speak.

"Now," I said at length and I could have guided you on up the route of this slope of the hill as any expert mountain climber. But it appears there these days is something to me and all the rest of you, an event caused by four devilish men as never happened before to mortal men or at least such as no man ever survived to tell of and I am fully surprised that from the Chert Brown I made to this deadly corner which we all endured has not broken us up body and soul.

I am surprised it didn't weaken my limbs and to hamstring my very nerves so that I should tremble at the least exertion and be frightened at any shadow. Since I reached this Wicker Castle gate do you know I can scarcely look yonder north without getting giddy?"

I his Wicker Castle upon whose edge one of the foremen had been leaning. I knew myself to rest. This hill arose on a long slope towards its top and was

2970 to my estimation some six or seven hundred feet from the world of burning wheat fields beneath us. What I saw up here besides of waves of men fighting on against the rest of the fire, nothing would have tempted me to within two miles and a half of the edge of the smouldering sea.

In dead calm in truth I was so deeply excited by the perilous position I would be in if I was so close to the burning head of the smoulder that would blister your skin more than a mile away that I fell at full length upon the ground lying to the high strong shrubs around me and dared not glance upward at the smoke covered sky, while I struggled in vain to divert myself of the idea that the very lowest level of the shrubbery at the foundation of the hill were in danger from the fury of the heat radiance even that far.

It was ten minutes before I could reason myself into a sufficient courage to sit up and look out at the distant smoulder.

"I know your high superior," said the foreman, "but I dare to say that you have brought yourself here of your own accord that as you said you might have the best possible of the fighting below and of that zigzagging smoulder and scenes of those events that you had mentioned and that you could tell the whole story to those not knowing anything of it with the spot just under our eyes."

2971 "We are now" he continued  
in that "particularizing" manner  
which distinguished him  
we are now from way up  
here observing more fully the  
enormous smoulder in the  
sixty eight degree of lat  
tude in the great section of  
northern Ill. and in the dreary  
district where the men are fight-  
ing the fire.  
The rolling mountains of  
smoke upon our view we can call  
the smoke cloudy. Now raise  
yourself up a little higher hold  
on to the shrub if you feel  
giddy - so and look beyond  
the thick fog of smoke be-  
neath us upon the smouldering  
sea of fire."

Still feeling giddy from the results  
of my exertions in fighting the  
fires I looked dizzily and beheld  
a wide expanse of smouldering  
yellow orange fire whose glows were  
so bright as to bring at once  
to my mind the glare of the  
molten lava I read of in the  
craters of the Sandwich Island  
main volcanoes on Hawaii.  
A panorama more deplorably  
fiery no human imagination can  
conceive.

To the right and left as far  
as the eye could reach there  
lay abstract outstretched like  
flaming ramparts of the world  
an enormous sea of  
leaping fire from which  
rose high bay and estimation,

immense volcanic shaped like clouds  
horribly black and other shades of  
smoke whose character of gloom was  
but the more forcibly illustrated by  
the glare of the flaming smoulders which  
reared and reflected into it and against  
it its yellow and ghastly flaming  
crest sizzling and hissing.  
At some other locations you could  
hear the howling shrieking and shouting  
of the men who were fiercely fight-  
ing the flames.

The appearance of the vast smoulder  
in the space between the distant railroad  
bed and this Wachter Castle Hill and the  
hay mound (which I forgot to describe is thirty five  
feet high and a thousand five hundred feet long)  
had something very unusual about it, although  
at the time the strongest attack of all  
so far was being pressed against the  
fire up fires caused by the smoulders  
far distant deadly radiance that some  
of the stubborn fire lay to under  
the double fury of the assault and  
constantly broke apart here and  
there almost out of sight because of  
its smoke still there was nothing  
like a regular movement of the  
fighting men but only short angry  
cross dashing of storming through  
the fields in every direction as  
well as on the teeth of the fire  
as otherwise

of smoke as to the right there  
was little except in the immediate  
vicinity of the huge mountain  
of embers and hay. I that should  
go up my what a fire there would be



2977 The foreman asked: -  
"Do you hear anything? Do  
you see any change in the battle  
line?"

We had now been ten minutes  
upon the top of the Wicher castle  
Hall, to which we had ascended  
from the fields down below so  
that we had caught no glimpse of  
the smoldering sea in the fight-  
ing against the flareup fires  
until it had burst upon us  
from the summit.

As the foreman spoke I became  
aware of a loud and gradually  
increasing sound like from a vast  
crowd cheering, yelling and hooting dur-  
ing a football or baseball game  
and at the same moment I per-  
ceived that assembled vast numbers  
of men charging and fighting  
their way forward on a level was  
battlefield, and the movement as  
we could see far beneath us  
was rapidly changing into a  
headlong battle field charge which  
rushed toward east and south.

For a while I gazed in  
exultation, and even while I  
gazed this attack acquired a  
most monstrous irresistible  
movement.

Each moment added to the  
speed of their advance to  
their headlong impetuosity.

In five minutes the whole  
waves of fighting men within  
our astonished view as far  
as we could see were  
rushing forward into the mist

un governable fury but it 2978  
was between the railroad bed  
and the hill of hay that the  
main upsurge of the raging mad  
assault held its sway.

Here the vast columns of the  
men seemed and surged into  
long lines of fighting men  
rushing in frenzied confusion  
convulsion, bearing gyrations in  
gigantic changes and all rushing  
and plunging onward to the  
eastward with a rapidity which  
which men never elsewhere did  
assume.

In a few minutes more there  
came over the scene of conflict  
another radical alteration. The general  
surface of the became less fiery  
and one section after another of the  
flare up disappeared while prodigious  
ranks of men became apparent  
where none had been seen  
before.

These ranks at length spread  
ing out to a great distance and  
intermingling into combination with the  
others took unto themselves the  
mation as like Pickett's famous  
charge at Gettysburg, and seemed  
to form the former lines of  
another attack more vast. Suddenly  
very suddenly, these lines of  
attack assumed a distinct and  
definite existence in a line  
of furious headlong attack that  
most of the new fires resisted  
stoutly in vain.

The edge of the attack was  
represented by a broad belt  
belt of surging men and no

2975 particles of the flames could resist this terrific and most savage assault whose forward movement as far as the eye could observe it was destroying all before it speeding almost dizzy forward in a swaying and sweltering motion and every fighter sending forth to the winds an appalling voice half shriek, half roar of shouts and yells such as not even the mighty column of the Niagara ever lifts up in its agony to Heaven,

I threw myself upon my face and clung to the herbage in an excess of nervous and yiddy agitation.

"This," said at length to the Forman "this can be nothing else than the greatest assault against the fires yet!" "So it seems to be termed" said he. "And it looks like it is going to be a running one."

The ordinary accounts of this unusual assault had by no means prepared me for what I saw.

That of the Duke of Wellington or of Napoleon's attack at Waterloo which is perhaps the most circumstantial of any, cannot in part the faintest conception either of the magnificence or of the great thrill of the scene — or of the wild bewildering sense of the novel or history of the battle which confronts the beholder.

I am not sure from what point of view the writer in 2976 question saw could survey this great fire fight, nor at what time but it could neither have been from the summit of this wicker castle hill during the time I was witnessing it.

There could be passages of descriptions of this scene made by some experienced writer nevertheless which may be quoted for the detail of this terrific fight although their effect could be exceedingly feeble in conveying an impression of the spirit of the scene.

Between where the main conflagration began and changing into these "smoulders" the Forman says

I believe the depth of these fires is between six or seven feet into the ground but on the other side towards where Zaneville once was this depth increases so as not to afford a convenient clasp for even nature to conquer it without the rush of splitting it up and set it going into a new conflagration worse than the first two put together.

I can see that the battles below is running through the conquered wheat flames with a boisterous rapidity but the roar of their exultant shouts and yells is being scarcely equalled by the howling of all crowds of Indians I bet their noise is heard several leagues off.

I believe the size of one of these smoulders alone is of such an extent and fiery depth that any edge of a wheat fire too close to its fiery far reaching radiance

2977 that from its attraction it is inevitably absorbed and eaten into flames and there to prevent a new general conflagration brings this new war against it where the fighters fortunately succeed in beating and cutting the flareup to pieces, and the fragments are swiftly thrown aside.

But these intervals of successes seem to be only now and then when the flareup tries to rally and last but a quarter of an hour, then the violence of the assaults of the men gradually returning.

When the heat of this smoulder is most severe and its fury heightened by what is it a burning it is deadly dangerous to come within two miles and half of even its flaming edge.

Goats, sheep, and cows have been dropped by the awful heat by not guarding against it before they were even within its reach.

It likewise happened frequently already that horse mules came and Donkeys came too near the edge of the smoulder and were overpowered by the violence of its far reaching deadly heat, and then it was impossible to really describe their neighing howling and bellowing in their fruitless struggles to disengage themselves from the overhead terror, before they fell dead and then even really burned, a herd of some once attempting

2978  
to run from a small pond was caught in the path of the awful radiance and actually burned to death while they screamed and wroined and wrined terribly so to be heard a or mile away and large stocks of other animals and cattle after being absorbed by the deadly heat were found dead and burned to such a degree as if they were charred like logs of trees. This plainly shows the smoulder to consist of indescribable heat among which so many animals have died when much too close.

This smoulder heat is regulated by the "fluct and reflux of the irreparable furnace of fire it being constantly high and low according to what is burning. 2. see now the fighting against the flareups are raging with such noise and impetuosity that I'm surprised the noise could not be heard as far as Morris if there are any people still there."

In regard to the depth of the smoulder I could not see how this could have been ascertained at all in the immediate vicinity of its central portion as it seemed to burn more fiercely along its inner and outer edges.

The four or more feet of the smoulder under the surface of the ground must have reference only to portions of the smoulder close to its inner and outer centers also close upon the inner edge either south northeastward or east.

2979 The depth in the center of both large smoulders must be immeasurably greater and no better proof of this fact is necessary than can be obtained from even the sidelong glance into other sections of the inferno which may be had from the highest section of the ruined wicker castle. (It was not ruined beyond rebuilding.) Looking down from this wicker castle, pinnacles upon the howling mobs of fighting men below and beyond, I could not keep help smiling at the simplicity with which I can record as a matter difficult of doubt or belief if I had not observed it myself, the anecdotes of the various animals and other creatures for it appears to "me" in fact a self-evident thing that the largest earth animals the elephants and elephants and so on, in the path of the smoulder could resist heat radiation could resist it as the center of the fire itself and must disappear into a shapeless mass of smoking ashes bodily and as soon as fire could consume them.

The attempts to account for the phenomenon some of which I remember seems to me very and sufficiently plausible in all personal now were a very different and yet in part satisfactory aspect. The idea generally received is that this as well as the record and larger smoulders and three smaller ones over all this furnace fires have no other cause than for when after

when after every special harvest as I learned from many sources the lower roots or stems had never been removed or plowed away for over fifteen years so with the addition of the ground being slowly burning heat the conflagration left these unspeakable horrors behind them, to give us the ha ha for fighting them.

Therefore again the idea generally received is that this awful situation as well as probably three other causes I can't mention among the smoulders have no other cause of what was or is previously mentioned than all this burning to such a great depth which consumes the fire so that it eats beneath the left over roots upon roots and the feet earth and thus the more roots and deeper the roots and dry heat ground the deeper must the under smoulder be and the natural result of all is the hottest smoulder furnace, or really low-leaping flames the prodigious smoking fire of which is sufficiently known by experiment and yet though called a smoulder is far worse and hotter and more dangerous than the two conflagrations combined and the two big conflagrations fierce and savage with burning fury as they were, did not throw off heat one third so far or make so much smoke as these smoulders are doing. How I know do not know whether the farmers were too lazy to remove the

2982

not earth.

smould

ground burn

wheat it of

two passed

tons be

on the

here

diminished

the long men

made

near to

of the

gun heat

out

clouds

among not only far the

didn't made it

2981 roots or lower wheat after thrashing, or not. But what is the cause they are surely paying for it now.

These are the words of the Eny-clap and Brattarico. Kiches and others imagine that in the center underground of blaging wheat roots is material penetrating the ground and issuing in some vast remote part, the hull of smouldering inferno being somewhat decidedly named in one instance.

This opinion idle in itself is the one to which I as I gazed my imagination most readily assented and mentioning it to the Foreman, and how I had the first ground into a bucket, set it on a wood fire and found it to burn, I was rather surprised to hear him say that although it was the new almost universally entertained of the subject by the expert it nevertheless was not his own, and that this kind of heat earth did not come from heat logs, and this sort of heat burned like sawdust.

As to the former notion he confessed his inability to even comprehend it, and how I agreed with him. For however conclusive on paper it becomes altogether unintelligible and even absurd amid the horror of these fire seas.

I sent one of my men to bring up half a barrel of the ground dust. It came back within the hour. I then made with paper and wood a small but hot fire on the open ground near the Wicker Castle and sat the bucket on it.

The Wicker Castle is built as

discovered of very complete fire 2982 proof material I had taken another good look at the inferno beyond and forgotten soon about the bucket of earth.

Soon the foreman said: "What in the world is that awful smell of smoke from? Phew" I looked towards the bucket. The ground in it was smoking profusely and turning into a glowing smudge. "This proves the whole problem" I said. The ground of all these wheat fields in this strange heat. Set it burn out" And I took the pall out of reach of the smells.

I myself and the foreman, and two other leaders left the hill and passed enough wagons to be holding seventy tons of cut down hay, with which were to be hauled away to far distant farm barns nearly beyond morn. To all the violent eddies of this sea smoulders there could be good fighting at proper opportunities if one has the courage to attempt it. But among the whole of the fighting men we three were the only ones who made a regular business of giving, as near to the edge of the smoulder as we dared as I tell you. The usual grounds of the smoulders are a great way lower down to the southward. There the worst heat I can be felt at all hours without much relief and therefore this warlike are avoided.

The anchored spots over here among the outwashed smoulders, however not only yield the greatest heat but in far greater abundance so or since the smoulders began we often get in a single hour what other places did not get in a week. In fact we made a matter of desperate speculation.

2983 the risk of life standing instead of fire fighting labor and great courage answering for every thing else. We kept our reserves near the railroad bed further north than this and it was our practice in fighting these flares caused by the soldiers for reaching heat to take advantage of the then existing calm to fight and push along the main course of the lengthy but not yet so too flighty wall of flames for along the main line of the fires full sway and then surging round upon its flank and near somewhere near a plank road where the eddies of the fire were not so violent as elsewhere. We remained fighting until the we beat or cut it down into a black up when we made a direct killing assault upon it.

We never did dare set out upon a expedition of this kind without a steady changing now and then of fresh men for attacking, going on carrying on attack that we felt sure would not fail us until the return of our rested companies and we seldom made a miscalculation upon this point of assault. Twice during the attack we were forced back by the fire by a flank movement of its own and account of its fierce heat which was a rare thing indeed from just a mere easy fighting flareup indeed just about the plank road and once we had remain in one position of the grounds for three hours straining with all our might and courage coming to a line of fire which flared up shortly after our arrival and made the channel of flames too dangerous to to

be thought of battling upon 2984 this occasion we should have been driven back pell-mell in spite of every thing for the fires drove us back and forth so violently that at length we (foiled our line of battle and digged on slowly) if it had not been that we had to fight our way into one of the cross currents of flares - (here to day gone to morrow) which drove us beyond the plank road where by good luck we fought up.

I could not tell you the twentieth part of the difficulties we encountered on the plank road during this sort of back and forth fighting - it was a bad spot to be in even with any breeze, but we made shifts to run the gauntlet of the main fire. Themselves without without accident although at times my heart had been in my mouth when we happened to be a minute or two turning a fire get around our rear. The breezes were not as strong as we thought it at starting and then we made less way against our fire enemy than we could wish while the heat was unbearable at times and rendered some of our companies unmanageable. My head form had a son eighteen years old and I have two stout boys of my own. There would have been of great assistance at such times as this in using their lines of fresh men but somehow although we ran the risks ourselves we had not the heart to let the young ones get into the danger of this sort of fire fighting for after all said and done it was a horrible danger and that is the truth.

2985 It was now within a few hours since what occurred. It was about five P.M. or hour which all not yet in action of this part of the fighting line will never forget for it was one in which which Manley Scanlon, Kaliter and others made the most terrible and almost unsuccessful attack upon the fires that ever was made and yet ever will be made.

And yet all the early part of the afternoon and yet until late in the afternoon there had only been on off and on concentration from the northeast so that the oldest fire fighters among us could not have foreseen what was to follow.

The three of us highest leaders had forced our way across the plank road about two o'clock P.M. and soon nearly wiped out a portion of the fire flank which we all remarked was more of a victory this day than we have ever known then.

It was just three by my watch when we cleared the fire away from the Plank road and started for its rear so as to make the worst of the flare up at slack time of this fire which we knew might recover and rally.

We set out with a fresh breeze on our rear which blowing against it retarded the flames and for some time spanked along at a great rate to apparent final victory never dreaming of danger

2986 for indeed we saw that the slightest apprehension reason to apprehend it. All at once we were taken aback by a counter charge of a new fire from over Shellys hay seed wheat crop and it drove a part of our line back with three men trapped and killed and fourteen burned more or less seriously.

I hurried a strong part of my line promptly to their assistance and to rally them but the storm of fire resisted them most hotly and stubbornly and despite their savage and impetuous attack finally demoralized them and forced them into a retreat as swift as was their impetuous attack.

But without loss.

This was most unusual something that never happened to us before and I began to feel a little uneasy for fear it would spring up into a third big conflagration.

As we put our column fresh column to the attack Companies under Walter Luewington, William Hubbard and George Gross and William S. Alder rushed into the fight, but though somewhat defeated, the fires held their own stoutly and adamant and there leaders got ranged and lots of their men more severely than usual.

I put my left front savagely into action but made no headway at all for the fierceness of the flames got a winged arm and face and I was upon the point of proposing a withdrawal back to the plank road when looking to the right we saw the whole territory we were fighting covered with a very singular copper colored cloud that rose with the more most amazing velocity.



2987 ever seem for rising smoke  
in the meantime a part of the  
line of fire that had held us fell  
away yet in our continued attack  
we drifted about in every direction  
this state of thing however did not  
last long enough to give us time to  
think about it.

In less than a minute the storm  
of main assault by the men under  
Swearington George Gross William  
Schlosser and William Hubbard  
as again rushed against the fire  
despite the ringing of their leaders  
added by Stanley, Scanlon, Minney  
and Kaliko and others in less than  
two the fields were actually over  
coat with waves of fighting the  
men and what with this and the  
during attack it became suddenly  
such a fight that I cannot describe  
it to save my life.

Such an attack as then raged  
upon this fire I or no one can  
ever describe. No one in all the  
world or this country ever did  
see or experienced or ever been in  
anything like it. This fire had  
it did everything to repel me  
and to drive me back before  
these many companies came but  
at the first headlong rush of this  
assault both left and right  
wing went reeling to the rear  
as if they had been hit by a  
cloud of fire the main line taking  
with it all its cloud of smoke  
and heat.

Yet even now the fire was the  
hardest thing to fight. But the  
line of battle had a complete  
head start with only a small  
gap near the center which was

spontaneously by way of pre- 2988  
caution against the raging flames got  
my thought to flank them. But for  
for this circumstances we again would  
have been beaten back at once for  
we were too close upon the fire  
on our mad rush.

How some of our companies  
escaped destruction I cannot say  
for I never had an opportunity for  
uncertainty. In my part as soon  
as I had let the other men fight  
their own way, I threw my own  
column again to the attack with  
the same fury as the others.

It was more instinct that prompt  
prompted me to do this - which  
was undoubtedly the very best  
thing I could have done - for I  
was too much flurried to even  
think.

In some moments we were com-  
pletely deluged as I say and all  
this time I held my breath and clung  
desperately to the assault. When a part  
of my line got so exhausted the  
men could stand it no longer  
I withdrew them slowly and let  
fresh men take their places.

Presently the fire appeared to  
recede. I was now trying to get the  
better of the stupor that had come over  
me because of the dreadful heat  
and to collect my senses so as to  
see what is to be done to lick  
the fire much more when a  
man on horse came up quickly  
and grasped my arm. Logan and my  
heart leaped for joy for I had  
made sure that he was bringing  
good news but the next moment  
all this joy was turned to horror.



2988 for he said.

Kaliko and Teddy are driven back again and with loss. No one will ever know what my feelings were at that moment. I believe I shook from head to foot as if I had the most violent fit of the ague. You perhaps know that I understood what he really meant by those few words well enough. I knew what he wished me to understand, comprehend. With the fire that was rallying Kaliko was in danger and if we could not succeed in holding his line nothing could save us from final defeat and we would have a third general conflagration on our hands and how.

You perceive that in pushing the fire beyond the plank road we went a long way up above the fire and then had to wait and watch carefully for a black up on the fire - but now Kaliko was in danger of being back to the same plank road and trying to endanger his men despite such an attack as this we were directing.

To be sure I thought we shall get there just about to relieve him rally his men and confront the fire ourselves - there is some little hope in that, but in the next moment I cursed myself for being so great a fool as to dream of hope at all.

I knew very well I could not withdraw any of my companies from my fighting front. I was doomed to fearful disastrous defeat had we been a

2900

of fighters at big as both opposing forces at the battle of Waterloo put to gather. Paul Marcus and Olamnightlings were not in action so I sent them to relieve Kaliko. They rallied his men to a good and showed the fire where to get off at. The fire finally rallied again but was not able to make any more headway.

By this time the fury of the attack along other fronts grew more in proportion or perhaps we did not see so much opposition by the fire there as they seemed before the assault storm but at all events the wedges of men which had at first been slightly held at bay by the fire now got up in numerous assaults.

A singular change too had come over the heavens from the distant smudges around in every direction it was still as black as pitch but nearly overhead there burst forth or out a circular rift of the rimoulders reflection as orange bright as if - I never saw - and as I said before of a deep bright wavering or flickering orange and through the lower part of the cloud showed there blazed forth - the flames of the rimoulders with a cluster that I never before knew any flames to make.

It lit up everything about us with the greatest distinctness. But oh what a scene it was to light up. I now made one or two attempts to speak to Clyde Gumble and he obeyed, but in some

2901 manner ? could not understand the din from the mobs of fighting men had so increased that ? could not make my other leaders hear a single word although ? screamed at the top of my voice in their ears.

Presently one shook his head looking as pale as death and held up one of his fingers as if to say the one word "Stop".

At first ? could not make out what he meant but soon a hedious thought flashed upon me. ? dragged my self away from its job and glanced at its face by the reflection of the flames and then burst into tears as ? replaced it. It was 7 P.M.

We were behind theUMP of the proper general concentration when the incident attacks of our companions were in full fury.

When a thick line of fighting men is well established properly concentrated and not too heavily attacking they are like the waves on a strong gale when they are going strong seem always to rush here and there which appeared very strange to a man not an experienced fire fighter and this is what is called by me a general concentrated attack.

We were so far we had succeeded in whipping some of the fire fronts very cleverly and presently a gigantic column of desperate men took taking the fire front on the right

flank with irresistible fury 2902 and bore the fire before them as they fought on-on as if trying to conquer the hellish regions and devils combined. ? would not have believed that any assault against such a fire as this could be so carrying away.

On against the fires they came with a sweep on onward rush and cutting and splitting all before them that made me hopeful and exultant as if ? was mowing and conquering all the fires in hell and the world combined as in a dream.

It could not have been more than two minutes afterwards until we suddenly saw the wave of flames subside for the assault though the fighters were engulfed in smoke.

Those fighting men made a sharp half turn to right and left and then shot off in their new direction attacking the retreating fires like a thunderbolt. At the same moment the roaring noise of their shouting was subsiding.

We were now in the belt of our own subsiding blaze and ? thought of course that another moment would bring us to total victory which we hoped we could accomplish on account of the amazing velocity with which we were pressing on.

As they beat and slashed their way through the men did not seem to go through the dying fire at all but to skim upon an air bubble upon the surface of the fires remains.

My line of charge was now next to the edge of the bottom

2907 fire and the on the other  
side burned the unburned fields  
we had left. Before the slight  
breaze it spread like a huge  
sea of withering swaying sea between  
us and the horizon.

It may appear strange but now  
when we were on the very verge  
of success I felt more com-  
posed than when we first started  
fighting the fires.

Having made up my mind to  
hope no more for beating the  
fires I got rid of a great deal  
of terror about a third big and  
uncontrollable conflagration which so  
unmanned me first and caused me  
and my men to fight with such  
undiscoverable fury.

I suppose it was despair that  
had unstrung my nerves. It may  
look like boasting but what I  
tell you is truth. I saw our  
exact position in an instant.  
The rest of the fire was  
one third of a mile dead ahead  
but no more like the others  
flared up than the fire as you  
now see it.

If I had not known where  
we were and what we had to  
expect I should not have re-  
cognized the flare up at all.

One thing I must say and  
I am sure it is the sure  
truth if we had all the  
men we have now the two  
conflagrations would never have  
defeated us.

I began to reflect reflect  
now how magnificent a thing  
it would have been to have  
had all these men then  
and like now fight those two

general conflagrations in such 2904  
such a manner and how fol-  
ish it was to think of so frail a  
consideration as my own individ-  
ual success in view of so  
wonderful a manifestation of  
God's power.

I do believe that I blushed with  
shame when this idea crossed my  
mind. After a little while I became  
possessed with the keenest anxiety  
about the receding fires themselves.  
I positively felt a wish to explore  
hell and fight its eternal fires  
even at the awful sacrifice I would  
have made and my principal  
grief was if I did and stayed  
there always that I should never  
be able to tell my old companions  
about the mysteries and all the  
lost souls I should see.

These no doubt were singular  
fancies to occupy a man's mind in  
such extremity and I have often  
thought since that seem our men  
begin to get the best of the  
fires and now so easily might  
have rendered me a little light  
headed.

There was another circumstance which  
tended to sear my self possession  
and this was the cessation of so  
much heat and flames which could  
not reach us in our present sit-  
uation for as you could see yourself  
the belt of fire was considerably  
lower than the leaping flames of  
the smoulders themselves and this  
latter towered above us a twenty to  
thirty foot of fire.

If you have never been  
fighting such fires as these in a  
heavy gale or no wind at all  
you can form no idea of the  
confusion of mind occasioned

2905 By the sudden strange withdrawal of the flames and heat and smoke together. The smoke blind you, smart your eyes and strangle you and take away all power of action or reflection. But we were now in a great measure rid of these annoyances just as death condemned criminals or prisoners are allowed petty indulgences, forbidden them while their doom is yet absolutely uncertain.

How often we met progress against the flames here and there it is impossible to say. Our assaults never were never less than before.

We had fought back and forth for perhaps several hours charging like soldiers attacking the enemy on a battlefield getting gradually more and more headway, cutting slashing and banging our way through the very middle roaring fiery surge and then nearer and nearer to the ending line of fire.

All this time I never let go of the progress of the head on attack.

Blamrighting was at the left holding on also to his headlong progress wiping out the left wing of the fire and prostration all sections of its main front confronting him, and turning its left flank.

George Gross was at the flank road holding his ground along his own front like a line of men on the battle field, but here the fire was in its own 'social security' and was the only line of fire within our sight that had not been swept back when he first attacked

the fire. As my wave of men<sup>2906</sup> working men worked on and the attack increased by enthusiasm with our success they assaulted flareup after flareup with relentless and tremendous fury. There was a fearful sullen sound of rushing men and of what fiery is not being set down.

Teddy Carter was also on the left front holding on to his successful drive which he had secured along his front and was the only one that had not been repulsed or driven back at any time as I pushed on desperately. He sent several companies to my assistance who in the comprehension of the situation they endeavored to get to the fires near as it was not swiftly advancing while the rest of them attempted to close in on its front.

I never felt deeper joy than when I saw them attempt this simultaneous assault - although I knew it was like madness to do so everyone fighting like a maddened maniac to secure their hoped for success.

The fire did not however seem to contest the point with Teddys men. I knew it could make no difference whether either of us held on at all so I let my own men have their way and went ahead to storm the fire front.

Thus there was no great difficulty in doing now for the attack went on steadily enough and

2907 and upon an even movement the wheat swaying to and fro from their attack and before the immense swarms of many cutting equipments. Scarcely had I secured myself to the advance and got my men into a new position when everyone gave a wild rush forward and to the right and left and rushed headlong men into the midst of the retreating flames.

I muttered three Hail Marys to the Blessed Mother of God and thought all was over with the fire.

As I witnessed the richening sweep of the assault I had most instinctively tightened my hold onto the advance and closed my eyes to avoid the smoke. For some seconds I dared not open them - while I expected instant destruction to the fire and wondered that we were not already in our death struggles with the flames. But moment after moment elapsed.

I though totally defeated the fire still lived, yet the roar of losing our fight had ceased the forward motion of the attacking men seemed much as it had been before while in the belt of doom beating flames with the exception that we moved forward along the whole line.

I took courage and looked once again upon the scene.

2908  
Never will I forget the sensation of ~~the~~ awe, exultation and admiration with which I gazed about me a part of the line of assault appeared to be hanging back as if magic midway in a field vast in extent, prodigious in thickness and depth and whose perfectly smooth swaying surface might have been taken for water but for the bouldering rapids through it the men advanced, and for the gleaming and ghastly radiance the flames shot forth as the glare of molten lava from that circular rift amid the clouds of smoke which I have already described streaming on a flood of red orange along the fields and far across the lands.

At first I was too much confused to observe anything accurately. The general level of terrific grandeur was all that I beheld, when I recovered myself a little however my gaze fell instinctively across the scene of the fighting lines. In this direction I was able to obtain an unobstructed view from the manner in which the fighting lines was unobscured by smoke which hung on the undulating surface of the burning wheat.

The flames still resisting us were upon an even keel that is to say stretched in a parallel with that of the wheat but this latter was twisted and out of shape.

2909 so that our fighting  
lines seemed the shape of a  
twisted snake. I could not help  
observing nevertheless that I had  
scarcely more difficulty in main-  
taining my hold and an advance  
in this situation than if  
we were moving on across a battle  
field in a real war, and this I  
suppose was owing to the speed  
at which we were fighting our  
way onward.

The reflection of the retreating  
but defiant flames seemed to  
reach all the way across the  
fields, but still I could make  
out nothing elsewhere distinctly  
on a count of the smoke in  
which everything elsewhere was  
enveloped and over which there  
hung a suddy glare.

This smoke was no doubt  
occasioned by the thickness of the  
growth of the burning stretches  
of wheat as they all burned  
together but what hissing snappings  
and crackling there was which I  
dare not describe.

Our most headlong assault  
across the fields themselves from  
the belt of half burned grain  
itself had carried us forward  
to a great distance across the  
plank road, but our farther  
advance was by no means at all  
proportionate.

On and on onward we fought  
our way forward not with any  
uniform movement but in long  
drives and pushes that

thought us sometimes on 2910  
ten or twenty yards sometimes nearly  
the complete width of the fields.  
Our progress forward at every re-  
cession of the fire was not slow nor  
fast, but yet very perceptible.

Looking about me upon the  
wide waste of wheat through which  
we cut and thrashed and beat our  
way, I perceived that now my own  
men were not the only line of  
attackers in the embrace of the  
slowly dying flames.

Both to the right and left were  
visible all mobilized ranks of men bare  
large masses of gunny sack men  
and scythe and sickle men and  
and men with other equipment  
such as broad swords, chain cutting  
knives, long handled pitchforks,  
shovels and sharp nosed digging  
spades.

I have already described the very  
unnatural curvatures which had taken  
the place of my original expec-  
tation and defiance. It appeared to  
grow upon me as I and my men  
drew nearer and nearer to the  
doom of the fire.

I now began to watch with  
a strange interest the numerous  
thongs fighting what remained  
of the fire. I must have been  
delirious with exultation for  
I even sought amusement  
in speculating upon the  
relative velocities of their  
advance as if trying to beat  
each other against the fire  
opposing them.

2911 "His line of men I found myself at one time saying well certainly be the next one that takes the retreating fire by storm, and drives it away headlong and then I was disappointed to find that another line of men over took them alongside and went at the fire before them.

At length after making several guesses of this nature, and being deceived, to all

the fact of my invariable mis calculation set me upon a train of reflection that made my limbs again tremble and my heart beat heavily and fast once more.

It was more than exultation that thus affected me but the dawn of a more exciting hope. This hope rose partly from memory and partly from present observation. I called to mind the great variety of fighting men that I knew the wheat fields having been forming for action and to throw themselves forward at the still defiant fire enemy.

By far the greater number of fighters because of the thickness of the wheat and grain were scattered in the most extraordinary way so bunched and crowded here and there as to have the appearance of wedges, groups and lines. But I distinctly recollected that there were of them not scattered at all but in long rank formation. Now I could not account for this difference except by supposing that the various formations of the fighters were

disasterous to the fires 2912 which had been so absorbed by the fighters that the others had entered into their fray and attack at so early a period of the battle or from some reason had stormed forward so swiftly after entering the fight that the fire could not much reach them that the fighters did not along this front receive much resistance before the turning of the time came, as the case might some how be.

Then the fire rallied but in vain. The assault on it then was much more fierce I conceived it possible in either case or in either instance that they might thus be able to move forward again to level level off the receding fire without undergoing the repulse of those which had assaulted the flames during a more slower advance or absorbed the flames more rapidly without good result.

I made also three important observations. The first was that as a general rule the larger the bodies of the attacking men were the more rapid their advance the second that between two masses of equal extent the one a long line of attackers and the other columns of any other shape the long line of fighters was only able to advance more slowly.

Since my success along my front I have had several

more my men needed very little



2916

my  
cert  
takes  
and  
then  
that  
took  
at the  
seve  
and  
the  
my  
train  
my  
my  
fast  
that  
of a  
nose  
from  
round  
men  
and  
for  
enem  
fight  
the  
in  
burn  
as  
we  
dust  
of  
long  
not  
at  
war

2917 conversations on this sub-  
ject with an old historical  
school master in 5 halls  
and it was from him that  
I learned how one fighting line  
of men can outpace the other. He  
explained to me although I have  
forgotten the explanation - how  
what I observed was in fact the  
natural consequences of the forms  
of the fighting lines caused by  
the stubborn but retreating fires  
and showed me how it happened  
that two lines moving forward  
side by side, caused the fires to  
offer more resistance to their  
assault and was beaten back  
with 'greater difficulty' than an  
equally heavy body of men  
of any form whatever.  
There was one startling cir-  
cumstance which went a great  
way in enforcing these obser-  
vations, and rendering me anxious  
to turn them to account and this  
was that at every movement  
one column of attackers one  
line passed ahead of another  
in their fury of attack or else  
men in a large group doing  
the same to another group.  
While many other columns  
which had been behind the  
others when I first opened my  
eyes upon the wonders of  
this extensive fighting fields  
of men were now far ahead  
of us in spite that the  
stubborn fires had moved  
from their original stations.

2914

I no longer hesitated what to  
do I resolved to cut loose loose  
in a divided attack and in separate  
columns make a headlong attack upon  
the fires, I attracted Reddy's attention  
by signs pointed to two groups  
of advancing men and did every-  
thing in my power to make him  
understand what I was about to do.  
at last he comprehended  
my design and did the same.  
I prepared to do  
if it was impossible to do anything  
if we delayed indeed the emergency  
admitted no delay. We as to  
my grouped our lines of men  
and precipitated ourselves against  
the fire without another moment's  
hesitation.  
There was a most bitter struggle  
beyond what you could comprehend  
and the result was precisely what  
I had hoped it might be.  
as it is myself who now tell  
you this long story, as you can  
imagine and see that I did win  
and as you are already in the  
possession of the mode in which  
this victory along my front was  
effected and must therefore antic-  
ipate all that all I have further  
to say I brought my success  
along my front quickly to con-  
clusion.  
It might have been an  
hour or thereabouts after this type of  
sudden overwhelming assault when  
the fire was wiped out along my  
front through the choos of  
battles all along the lines  
my lines of attack to which  
I drew my men needed very little



2915 further to go than half the distance between my line and those still not making much decided success. As soon as it was possible I moved forward to their assistance in an irresistible head long flank and rear attack. Then a great change took place in the character of the flare-up fires.

The fire became momentary less and less before the attack and taking advantage of it the attack grew gradually more and more violent. By degrees stretches of the fire disappeared and we now made greater headway.

It was the hour of victory but a long wave of fire still resisted. Kalikos and the others. Half of my men bore valiantly into their fire front as soon as possible and in a few minutes we hurried to their assistance. Get this licked and all the fire was done for.

Most of Kalikos' men were badly exhausted from fatigue I tell you now we struck his fire enemy so hard and savagely and in a manner that I can hardly or scarcely expect the reader to put on any faith in what I now describe.

The stubborn resistance of the fire might have by this time have lulled or slackened a little though more sensibly that if the cannonading of the nearest part of the smoulder smoulder had been diminished by the silencing of half a

dozen guns out of hundreds. 2916 But the fires having upon them the agitation of hours was infinitely more terrific than when I had last seen it. Poor Kalikos surely had his hands full. Every appearance the flames had intensified bore the expression of non defeat and the height to which the flames arose and looking over one another rose above the other and surged on throwing great heat was most appalling.

In the difficulty of hearing anything but shouts, yells and howling of the fighters and in the crowded lines of attackers and the unspeakable confusion and my first breathless efforts to move against the fire also I was so confused that I looked down the line of magnificent battle for Kalikos' reserves and saw nothing but the remote and wildly resisting fire.

One of the foreman standing next to me pointed with his naked half scorched arm to the left. Then O! great Heavens! I saw the whole situation close in upon us.

One line of attacking men was broken "skat off" six or eight yards length from the main front but refused to withdraw entangle in a maze of cut down burning wheat and grain and all that fiery ruin as the flames raged and hurried and tried to rally which save it shamed without moments pause and with a heat and violence quite inconceivable and the men beating and cutting at it as if they would win or die - some efforts along other parts

2814 =

2817 were even then been made to cut and slash this portion of the burning wheat away for as the seething flames which was broadside on turned towards us in its surging flames described all the fighters at all sorts of equipment even axes long knives, real sharp edged swords, especially one active figure with long curly hair conspicuous among all the rest.

Evidently, he was their leader. But a great cry which was audible even above the shouts of the fighters rose from other lines of fighters at this moment the flames rushing on made a clean breach and drove the men back before us.

The second line of men were yet standing their ground yet a ragged rank of men broke and a wild confusion of desperately assaulting men charging to and fro. Another wave of men had struck at once the same ground beside me. I barely said in my ear and then slightly withdrew and struck again.

I understood him to add that the fighting was then, for a while like you would a ship admiralship? and I could really suppose so for the fury of the flames were too tremendous for any lives to suffer and fight on too long. As he spoke there was another great cry of defiance from reinforcing lines of men for lines of men rushed up the wreck of the receding front along their line

of direct assault clinging to them their desperate attack to the upper most the active figure with the curling hair leading them on. 2918

During this stupendous fighting there must have been some kind of bell rung and as the men swarmed and dashed like desperate creatures striving to overcome the rage of these while driven mad now showing us the whole sweep of the assault as they turned the flank of the fire now showing nothing but their mad rush onward as they sprung wildly to the fight and turned the fire towards us ward the flaming field the bell rang and its sound the holl of those fighting men or if the fire was borne away on the breeze.

Again we lost sight of the fighting lines because of the smoke and again they were seen lines of men were in sight coming headlong. Where did they come from?

The suspense of me and my men increased. The reinforcements ran wildly up I can find my self young then frankly giving hell to the fire yet officers were making out to rise in an agitated way I don't know how but the little I could hear I was scarcely composed enough to understand that two other lines of men elsewhere had bravely managed a day long assault an hour ago and could do nothing and as no other line of men would be so desperate as to attempt an assault into the heart of the fire there was nothing left to try when I noticed that some new

sensation moved the waiting reserves on the plank road and saw them part as Stanley came breaking through them to the front. I turn to him - as well as I know to repeat my appeal to help us.

But distracted though I was by a sight so new to me and terrible the determination in his face and his look towards the still victorious fire - exactly the same look as I remembered in connection with the first conflagration and he to the acknowledgment that he could do anything.

No fire no matter how fierce it could hold him back and I employed all the men within hearing to support him not to let him fail in anything he will do.

Another cry arose among the fighters and looking to the battle line we saw the rushing fire beat back two long lines of men pell-mell and flare onward in triumph around the alive column of men left alone upon the field.

Against such a sight and against such determination as that of the calmly desperate man who was already accustomed to lead all the fighters present I hope fully looked upon my best friend and leader, my friend Henry who said cheerily grasping me by both

hands "I of my word has come to defeat the fire and come to your help. It comes if it won't I'll lead by it. So I'll bless you and bless all comrades make ready I'm going off to the assault and win or else -"

A part of the fire elsewhere was also being swept away but not very quickly to some distance where the men fighting it made it stay urging other lines of men as I confusedly perceived that more other lines were bent on going forward with help or without and that no one should endanger the precautions for their success by troubling those with whom they rested.

I don't know what I answered or what they rejoined but I saw hurry along the fighting lines and crowds of men running forward with all their available weapons and penetrating into the fields near the still stubborn fires where smoke hid most from me.

Then I saw Stevens leading his own men. He still burning wheat to my practised eye was burning itself away. I saw that Stevens great wave of men was parting in the middle, on going to the left the other to the right and the life of the fire being by "thread" the fire clung stubbornly to the wheat.

Stevens at what the blazing wheat standing alone with the great silence of suspended breath behind him and the storm of fire, before, until there was

2921 a great retreating fire front, when with a back ward glance at his men behind him he dashed on afterwards and in a moment he and all his men were buffeting with the receding fiery fury washing through with scutes and all equipment and nothing could stop them.

Some one roped and hauled in a foreman hastily.

He was scorched and burned. I saw his face badly - ringed from where he fought but he took no thought of that.

He seemed hurriedly to give his reinforcing men some directions to go at the fire more vigorously or so. I judged from the motion of his arm and was gone as before with those men. Stevens kept making for the retreating lines of fire, sometimes lost within the smoke striving hand and foot valiantly.

The distance was nothing but now the power of so many most determined and desperate men and other lines of fighters so many with their gunny sacks and buckets of water and liquid chemicals made the strife deadly.

At length they reached the lines of flames. They were so near that with their vigorous charges they were clinging to success when a vast wave of men under Manley & the scarlons and Otto Zink moving from another direction beat hit like crazy and with within another

half hour all the fire was gone. Exultation 2922 was on every face. I screamed Hurray! God be praised! Stevens came riding up in a proud way. I remained near him while my men pressed on. The fire had been beaten to death by the grave furious wave of men. I saw the burned, partly burned hurried foremen wave his sootting wet coat and yelling "I know we could do it. Who said we can't win."

Stevens went to the nearest tent suffering from excessive fatigue and heat and laid down on a cot r/o and his men and the other had beaten the fire to death. I sat by the bedside.

"Sir" said Stevens if no more flare up occur we have this all licked. But nothing but a long heavy rainstorm can overcome the smoulders."

Then very exhausted came Manley, Otto Zink and the scarlons. "Has the fire been totally wiped out?" I asked.

They said "yes" together. "I know how you did it?" I asked them.

"By overwhelming concentration from three directions of the smoulders."

"God will take care of those," I answered. "I'm not going to even try to fight them. It is suicide."

2922 "This smoulder is one of the greatest disasters that has ever happened in this country," Stanley said. "I do not suppose there is any unusual thing ever happened to really compare with these immense smoulders of which though slowly burning forward will not in the slightest way diminish."

"Yet it is strangely funny," he exclaimed. "Did you know for all forest fires ever burned anywhere combined into one they could never compare to this."

"Yes," replied John Manley getting up from his cot and coming to my side. "I know that now it is shown on the map of Ill. how far it has spread, but what nature the fire is and what makes it burn so strangely I do not know. No one I know in any forest fire ranger of the most experienced kind has ever seen anything like these giant smoulders or heard of them."

The eastern smoulder has burned all the way up east to Kansas River threatening the city by that name with the west east of there and the State of Indiana on the other side. But the nature of these big smoulders I know very little."

"I guess no one else knows much about them either unless it is the farmers who planted the wheat year after year without uprooting the old roots themselves remarked Otto Junk." But the papers in St. Louis say the eastern smoulder is threatening

Ottawa and there is likely to be

severe fighting needed or much trouble will be the result." 2923

"So that all the paper soaked John Scanlon as Kaliko and Zeddy Carter came walking in."

"Every word" said John Manley and Scanlon and Stevens seemed surprised and perplexed.

"Tell me Stevens" said Otto Junk what exactly manufacturing the heart of the two smoulders?"

"I cannot Otto" confessed Stevens. "Until now I have never heard of such a smoulder nor have I ever heard of any kind of this type of smoulder before. In all the ground beneath the wheat however are probably hidden my roots upon roots and other stuff affe- ruff beneath this ground which is also inflammable. First earth, not the bog type and those which have never been uprooted for every time the wheat is thrashed are unknown to me. However that may not be the cause of the stubborn fire either. However if you so desire I can learn by trying to dig up some of this wheat by the roots and find out."

"I wish you would" answered seriously. "You see Otto if the wheat is too deeply rooted they then are the cause of this extraordinary smoulder and if possible I cannot allow any mysteries to go unsolved about this smoulder if I can possibly help it."

"Very well Henry" said Otto. "I will try to get the information to guide you. Please excuse me for a time."

2924 May I go with you

asked Dorothy eagerly.

"Yes" was the reply I may need your statement as proof of what I discover."

So Otto and Dorothy went out and I and the rest waited patiently for them to come in again. In about an hour they appeared both looking grave and thoughtful.

"Mr. Dargon" he said to me "I cannot find how far the wheat roots are in the ground, I more deeper I have dug the more deeper down they still are I have dug more than three of roots up and still more deeper I come to more. What in the world did those thrashers and farmer leave all that in the ground, I am surprised the wheat ever grew in all maze of roots upon roots, I think it is one thing you could come out with us and see for yourself. I on that reason because of that I can learn nothing else but that is the cause of the deep burning smoulder."

"Why I didn't know such a thing could be possible" I exclaimed as I had went out with them and saw the evidence. "The farmers and thrashers are also responsible for the smoulder through their laziness."

"Yes and that is because the thrashers and the farmers

who did the work never followed 2925 up the roots in any part of this territory" explained Otto. "As you see the roots upon roots are all there and maybe much more under ground and be cause of this the smoulder won't burn out."

"What are they like in depth?" I asked starting to dig with the spade myself.

"I cannot tell you that" confessed Otto. "For the maze of continued roots won't stop coming no matter how much I dig. Therefore they prevent anyone knowing how far underground they are."

"The farmers must know as they planted the wheat" suggested Dorothy.

"Perhaps so" Otto replied but I can get little information from or about the grain and barley barley either. They too grew root upon root deep underground. The ground also is garden heat and you know when that too burns it'll burn like a lake of fire. I have recently learned that these wheat fields here extend one hundred and one miles while grain and barley fields number just number two hundred two."

"Why did they let all this go without ploughing it up and what did they expect of all this awful blunder?" was my next question.

"As I know not their way? I can not tell you that" said Otto. "But see here" cried Dorothy

2926 "No against the law? believe  
for any farmer to not removing  
the wheat roots after every thrashing.  
so if these farmers by their lazy  
carelessness are responsible for these  
smoulders, they are breaking the  
law and ought to be punished  
for this."

I smiled upon my little friend,  
"Those who do not know  
the consequences of any law  
of this land," I said "can-  
not be expected to obey these  
laws. If we knew nothing how  
deeply rooted all that grain after  
grain would be, it was likely  
the farmers knew nothing of the  
consequences either."

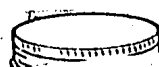
"But they should have known,"  
Henry, and too bad we didn't  
know before hand declared I said  
Manley "When going to tell the  
authorities about this discovery  
and how are we going to  
find a way to whip the two  
big fires?"

"That" I returned "is what I am  
now considering. What would  
you advise Ottawa?"

Otto took a little time  
to consider this question before  
he made reply. Then he said,

"He at not come for the  
existence of these smoulders  
we would never have heard  
about them; know about them  
or their honors. God Himself  
know we cannot fight them."

DISHES



LUBBER

2927

So if we pay no attention to  
these smoulders we may never  
hear of them again.

"But that wouldn't be right,"  
declared, "I am main leader of all  
these fighting men which includes  
the drafters, refugees and spectator  
volunteers as well of all the country  
fighting force and being the general  
of all this it is my duty to  
run these smoulders and make  
all the people exiled by the smoke  
to be able to return to their homes  
where ever they may be and  
make all these people happy and  
content again, settle the situation  
and keep none of them from being  
made homeless by all this smoke.  
So while the farmers who own  
all the blazing honor may  
not yet know the cause I know  
now the cause of the fierce burn-  
ing so I would not being be  
doing my duty if I kept away  
from all this and allowed this inferno  
to continue on"

"That's a fact Henry," commented  
Stanley "We've got to go against the  
smoulder and make it go to pieces  
somehow. But how are we going  
to do it? It's deadly dangerous to get  
within two miles of its killing  
heat"

"That is what is puzzling me also  
Henry" said Kaliko "It is very  
dangerous for all of us to go within



2928 two miles of it where the heat is so far reaching and deadly."

"I'm not afraid," said with a smile.

"Isn't a question of being afraid?" argued Dorothy. "Of we know you an unusual fire fighter a great experienced leader and so far have not been even ringed as vigorous as you led the fiercest attacks and we know what you accomplished is almost like a lot of magic which helped you lead successfully in these most terrific fights. But Henry in spite of all this you've been in trouble on account of the resistance of these fires and it isn't right for the leader of all these men to put yourself and all of them in danger by leading an assault against the smoulder."

"Perhaps we shall be in no danger at all," returned with a little laugh. "You mustn't imagine danger, Dorothy for one should only imagine nice things and we do not know that the smoulders could outwit us. Perhaps we could find a way to whip it yet we could get some well experienced leader to listen to reason."

Dorothy is right. Henry asserted calmly. "It is true, we did not know nothing of the nature

of the roasting of all this wheat 2929 except that now we know and know they and the heat ground have a whole lot to do with the smoulder to continuing burning instead of burning itself out and have an unusual amount of fuel to burn besides."

"You have a large army of men now with you," added Dorothy. "It wouldn't be so bad but there isn't such a thing as an army in the whole country that would risk that deadly heat of the smoulders."

"We have lots of cannon which are firing chemical bombs," said.

"Yes the guns we have now but they have not the range to throw them to the center of the smoulder but only hit the edge but that isn't going to do us any good for us. I'm sure the smoulder is so terribly hot it would defy the very chemicals anyway. And even 100 cannon is not doing much good at that. And one hundred soldiers no matter how brave they are couldn't do much against one hundred smoulders."

"What then my friends what would you suggest?" inquired.

"I'd advise you to send many scouts to investigate the nearest smoulder and let them secure the information what the smoulder is like" proposed I would answer. "Let them find out come back and tell you what they discover." I shook my head to indicate that the advice was not to my satisfaction.



2930

"If they refuse to go near what then?" I asked. No one can go within two miles of the smoulder because of the deadly heat. It is a great and to make any one scout that near would be as a cruel punishment and too it would be an unpleasant thing to do and they even while scouting cannot discover anything if not near enough. I am sure it would be better for me and the rest to go scouting by myself or forget the whole thing and wait for rain. When if that don't work and the smoulder prove more obstinate yet I could resort to other things or means to over come it."

"It's a ticklish thing anyhow you look at it" sighed Dorothy. "I'm sorry the farmers kept plowing the wheat in such a crazy way."

"But can't you realize my dear that I must do my duty now that I am aware of this trouble?" I asked. "We are all firmly determined to do what we can to prevent the smoulders from spreading or starting new big conflagrations!"

"There are plenty of experienced and trained officials who would like to go with you on a scouting tour of your own," said Stevens, but none of them could afford you at any one for a protection in case you were in danger. You are yourself one of the most experienced leaders of fire fighters ever known."

2931

although us leaders have more varied arts of fire fighting experience at our command. However you have one art that no other in the world can equal the art of conducting successful demonstration against all fires. For that reason I believe you can accomplish more good alone or with this large number of excellent fighters in your train. Had we all these men now fighting the first big smoulder we would have had it licked in no time. But we had few men then and they had their hands full."

"I believe that also" I agreed. "I shall be able to take care of my self you know, but not be able to protect others so well if they won't let me. I do not look for trouble or opposition however. I don't do any dare devil recklessness however and will not allow any one else to do it either. I shall speak to those who accompany me on this scouting venture to be very careful. For very good emergency reasons I wish you Dorothy to accompany me. But in order to prevent its spreading we must scout at once. We can prepare to start at once."

"I'm not quite satisfied with this plan but I cannot think of any better way to meet the problem declared Stevens. "I know you are accustomed to abide by any decision you will make and will not

2932 be under any condition be turned from your purpose. Moreover I can see no great danger to you in any sort of undertaking even though the flareups caused by the heat of the smoulders prove obstinate. But then we may succeed by the help of God."

"Do the Mayor of So Ball call these fires the Supreme Dictator of all nature?" I enquired.

"Yes that so" said Stevens rubbing his hands slowly together. "It seems like its word is law against us - It is the Head of all disasters. yet caused by those four."

"I am had been made main leader of all this fight organization and I have come from Chicago to -

"Stop a minute" interrupted Mr Stanley and turned to a official who had brought him a message. "Go take this message to Teddy Carter. It's for him not me."

The man bowed mounted his horse and Dorothy asked in wonder:

"Is he a messenger too?"

"Of course" was the answer.

"We have many messengers I know you were made the supreme leader and know who you are. I know you don't like your position but can't buck out if there four men really caused this unnatural smoulders fires are people in that location still trying to get at them?"

2933 "If you really are our main leader" Otto Zink said: "you are one that band of Champion forest-fire fighters who under the Chief Forest Rangers made all success in forest-fire fighting in the west. I have heard that the main head of the Rangers left you the permission to come to an middle west? I learned this fact lately."

"How did you come to beat this fire out so quickly while it drove back the rest full-melt?"

"It was this way" began Otto. "I and my officials and men always loved to fight forest or brush fires and as we have great experience we knew how to outwit it."

Seeing the fire overthrow Kaliko and the others made my men very angry, for they declared the fire must be whipped, that this country side was under their protection and therefore the fire and going to drive us back.

"That was very risky you must admit but we paid no attention to the dangers thought the fires prevented others from moving against it. Now my main captain Roro James had become a wonderful fire fighter. He vowed he would destroy all opposition from fire. The fire defied them but not us."

"With overwhelming numbers we got the fire on all sides and that's how it ended."

"Then" I said thoughtfully Roro James must be an unusual experienced man."

"Yes" said Otto. "But he also knows how to fight brush and field or other kind of fires. However is not so powerful."

2934 or at least powerful as  
you or me are now as the  
flame up fires discovered when  
we fought our great battle and  
destroyed it.

"The flame up can't occur any  
more of course" observed Dorothy.

"No or at least I hope not. We  
can't be overconfident though, we  
have to keep our eyes open."

"It seems a sad story" was  
Kaliko's comment "and all the  
trouble arose because four men  
wanted to take revenge on that poor  
farmer because he won the girl  
one of them wanted."

"As for that" said Otto "I will  
make a law that any one of my  
men could arrest any suspicious  
person when ever they want to  
so the trouble though was,  
though those four men defying  
all law."

"We can all of us leaders  
make laws to govern all this  
fire district" asserted I also  
was empowered to make laws  
that must be obeyed by all  
the people in this fire zone."

Pook "cried Otto scornfully,  
"You couldn't make those four  
scoundrelly rats obey your laws  
I assure you. I know the extent  
of your powers. Henry and  
no one is more powerful  
than you are. Yet the fire  
bug rats wouldn't pay any  
attention to your warning signs  
mean the delus rules to prove it  
they set the four farmers  
wheat afire."

Dorothy was annoyed by  
this statement. But I was  
unruffled and defiant looked  
at Otto and said

"You do not mean they were 2935  
that trouble and heartless. You  
are angry and speak unwisely  
I came here to fight the fire."

"I do not approve of the action  
of the four men in transforming  
all this part of Teller into one  
big blaze nor do I approve of the  
attempt to get even with the poor  
farmer. No one has the right to  
set any ones property on fire so  
those four men have broken all  
laws which must be obeyed."

"If we all want to see justice done"  
said Teddy Carter "make those four  
scoundrels do restitution for what they  
had done also make them make  
amends to the poor farmer."

"How can they do that?" I returned.  
They're not such men, they could  
not do that, and even their prison  
sentence and mob trying to get them  
there won't make compensation."

Neither may they do any restitution  
as it's beyond their power."

"Never?" cried Otto "They will not  
do that if they could. They're too  
mean. Any arrangement just and  
perfect cannot change them and  
you must agree to it. Gaze on the  
evil work of the four men and  
then say if you can prevent the  
spread of the scoundrels all those  
burned up fields. It was once every  
farmer's best property. The most  
beautiful country side all through  
here. Now look at it. I will  
even fight the scoundrels to  
the bitter end and if a dozen  
armies of devils forbade me  
I would fight just the same  
to the last."

The scoundrels had well prevent  
us.

2937 "Maybe it'll prevent us  
and maybe it won't, I'd like  
to myself get hold of those  
four men; I'd throw them into  
that fire."

"I know what these smudges  
are for I have consulted my  
circle of knowledge which tells  
me that one of these smoulders  
grew to sixty miles in extent  
and the other to one hundred  
and thirty miles. I know nothing  
of the cause of it growing so large  
and I know nothing of what it  
will do next."

"Why if it keeps on all destroys  
all this northern country" cried  
Dorothy "It's a large part of north  
Wisconsin that is burning anyhow  
whether you know it or not."

"Oh indeed" answered Kaliko  
scornfully, "I suppose you will claim  
next that another big conflagration  
will break forth?"

"Of course" returned Dorothy "I have  
no doubt of it, except if it comes a  
good rain storm."

Kaliko turned to me:

"Do you dare to make such a  
claim Henry, Don't be foolish."

By this time I had made up  
my mind as to the character  
of these dangerous and disdainful  
smoulders whose unusual size were  
growing larger every hour and  
which evidently led Dorothy to  
believe these two fires superior to  
all others combined."

"I did not come here to argue  
with you about any claim or to  
do anything foolish" I said  
quietly "What and who I am is  
well established and my authority  
comes from the main headquarters  
of Chicago not San Francisco of whose

headquarters is the Chicago 2938  
municipal courthouse and the city  
hall of whose committee I am a  
member after the occurrence of the  
fire (I cannot what) said otherwise, Chester  
brought a tornado and now there fires.  
There are several main commands  
and several different leaders  
in these brigades of men  
each of have their separate  
leaders, Sergeants, Captains and  
so on. But these render obedience  
to my command and acknowledge  
me as the supreme commander.

I of other leaders  
are fools in spite of my authority  
that does not interest me in the  
least but should another big main  
big smoulder break loose  
I won't let you or any one in-  
cluding myself to go and fight it  
if it burns all the fields in the  
whole United States I've lost too  
many men, leaders and three  
superior officials.

Ruggs, Daniel Jones and Tom Thom  
and several others are now in  
the University made it a hospital all in  
serious condition and that's enough  
over all these men and leaders.  
I am alone. Supreme Any one  
is impudent to think I would  
defer to these smoulders or to  
any kind of fire. I won't fight  
them and won't let any one  
else fight them if they burn  
all Illinois. What did I get  
for fighting them? I was  
burned and burned and  
scorched men. Let Heaven sort  
them. It's obligated too in such  
the hell with it."

2439 "But this is a serious situation" said Scamlon "These smoulders render obedience only to the laws of old Mother Nature so let us not speak of this now. All this part of Lebanon is in danger for a new powerful conflagration probably is preparing to destroy all".  
"Bah the smoulders far reaching heat and its scorching radiance I do not fear them" said Stanley Manley and the two Scamlons together.  
"Their supreme heat is a far reaching scorch and deadly more than two miles away".  
"There are greater heat from big forest fires than this" said Paddy Carter "Set the smoulders spread. They will never continue on I will see to that".  
"I did not like this attitude for it meant that these high officials were eager to fight the smoulders and my object in turning them off was to prevent their spreading if I could".  
"I was also greatly disappointed in the situation for the reports of all officials had led me to imagine the big smoulders an easy conquest and not so bad as said".  
"Indeed I reflected that the smoulders might be better and not have so severe an effect and that their self spreading and burning may be arising

2440 indicated and in any event it would be wise and just not to antagonize my leaders on this either excusable or maybe explicable situation but try to win their decision not to fight these excusable fires".

"I do not like the idea of contesting these excusable smoulders" my friends when sooner or later they may come said I said "In my ranks I have now thousands of experienced fire fighters and even women, draftees and teen agers under my command".

"In the unburned regions and fields near Kankee Mours and O'Hous where thousands upon thousands now acknowledge my leadership there is no fear among them at all, because there is no danger to them and need to fight if told so. If differences arise between my leaders as how to contest the fires they come to me and I judge the cases and award directions to all so when I learned there might be dare devil recklessness between my leaders I gave an ultimatum that I will not let any one even Angel Gabriel or his leading angels to take the chances of fighting these hellish smoulders".

"It is my business to settle this situation not any one else".  
"If they defy my law and take chances I'm not responsible of the consequences and will like Pilate wash my hands of the whole calamity. You say these smoulders is destroying all

2941 this part of the fields  
of Telson, which disaster the  
four connected men are  
responsible for but that is  
all nonsense for I've never  
heard of a whole country side  
wiped out before a rain would  
come you say well you are  
very experienced leaders and  
also the government gave you  
command over this leader of all  
here and I won't go the chance  
to fight the smoulders and  
why should you?

I don't believe all of us  
could face its fierce heat two  
miles away and live. What  
I do believe is that those two  
smoulders are ten times worse  
than the two whipped big  
conflagrations put together  
and I have increased because  
of what is discovered I burn  
below the lower circumstances.

The four men may  
even be spies of some  
other more standard higher  
up powerful incendiaries and  
I have come here not only  
against the poor farmer but  
I have come here to set up  
serious trouble between all  
other farmers who are already  
suffering total loss on their  
many farms.

They might also had  
tried to trick us. But I  
understand this I added I  
have power to combat  
any type of forest or bush  
fire greater than any even  
seen before and greater than  
any other experienced fire  
fighter possesses. I am

2942  
The most experienced  
forest fire fighting leader I  
ever created in the world so they  
tell me and I fear the fires  
of no other type that exists.  
But even I have no ex-  
perience to fight those  
explosible smoulders. I say  
I command many thousands  
I have one hundred one  
leaders. But every one of them  
trembles at the thought of facing  
the deadly far reaching heat of  
these smoulders now that you  
suggest to fight them well go ahead.  
But if a calamity ensues of  
terrible consequences I will not be  
held responsible and wash my  
hands of the whole affair. More than  
that if the heat wipes you all out  
it too is not my fault take your  
chance.

I have some plans that  
probably could help. I said  
when the smoulders would not  
be so high and mighty after  
all yet if we truly know the  
smoulders we'd be scared to death  
to face their awful heat I've  
seen it in the paper that people  
of all Church and Religions even  
the Jehovah witness the Second  
Day advent, the Free Masons,  
even the Christian Scientists  
have prayed for rain and  
ministers priests and  
all other preachers have given  
lectures and so on about  
the fires. Well they began  
and nothing came of it.  
In Catholic churches masses  
are said more than  
any day sermon have been  
given about the fires every

2943 religious organizations  
is offering every kind  
of service freedom of  
sacrament they trust in God?  
know for they believe He  
being our Supreme Ruler can do any-  
thing if they did really know  
of the dreadful smoulders as they  
really are you would not wonder  
why every one is unhappy about  
it most people in this country  
are not bad people they do  
nothing seriously wrong so  
I can't understand why God  
does not send rain to over-  
come this smoulder which is  
smoking out every place North  
east of us.

Notwithstanding all that I have  
seen that I've got a lot to  
do here in this Iowa foraker  
part of Illinois - I just place  
we've got to cut down and  
and take away all the wheat  
and grain from nearest the  
smoulders for reaching heat and  
from elsewhere too. My idea is  
that neither of the smoulders  
can be checked in their progress  
if we don't. So we'll have  
give all our efforts at the  
tasks when we've done all  
that we can go back home  
again."

Bill smiled at my earnest  
counsel but Otto Zink said in  
an anxious tone  
"I am surprised that you suggest  
these reforms or plans while  
we are yet outwitted by these  
smoulders and in their power.  
That these things should be  
done there is not the  
slightest doubt, but just now  
because of that for

2944 reaching heat a new and  
dreadful conflagration is likely to  
break out and frightful things  
may happen to us all. Some  
of our officials has such correct  
reason that they think they can  
overcome these smoulders and their  
allies, but it is said the smoulders  
are immeasurably powerful - more  
greater than the two fires."

I found myself really confronted  
with a most serious problem and  
although I had no thought of ever  
despairing, I realized that all the  
part of Illinois were in grave  
trouble and that unless a long  
heavy rain would come to save the  
rest of the many fields all the  
hundreds of miles of farming wheat  
country would be lost to Illinois  
and other states for all future  
time.

"In such an awful dilemma" I  
said musingly "nothing is gained  
by haste. Careful thought may aid  
us and so may the course of  
events especially a long heavy  
rain. The unexpected is always  
likely to happen and cheerful  
patience is better than reckless  
action."

As into the night I sat in  
my tent studying a roll of  
scrolls in such a way  
that would enable us to conquer  
the smoulders yet midnight  
found me unsuccessful.

I was in  
a hall in the early morning



2945 and I was thinking to myself if this was an ordinary kind of snowdrift there would be several ways by which I might find means to bring it to an end. But this morning newspaper says it even is burning underground besides the lower stalks of the hay burned out wheat and will not respond to any effort to overcome it I do not despair in the least but it will require some deep study to solve this most difficult problem. Now if I only could find some plan - "Therapy" called the restaurant man. Its raining."

I almost ran to the window. It was raining but only very lightly and not hardly enough to get wet the streets I felt badly disappointed for I had hoped for a rain that would finally destroy the snowdrift. I discovered this very light rain was starting ten thirty in the morning. An hour and a half passed and though still raining I could see at a distance that it was having no effect on the snowdrifts excepting to increase the smoke smoke ten fold.

I felt like crying, yet you will understand of course that had I got this morning's paper which I unfortunately missed I would have found out in "known" that we were in the path of an extensive long duration heavy rain.

storm that was nearly country wide and everywhere was causing some rivers to threaten to be some threatening. But that fact had been recorded in the paper I missed so the real nature of this rain for several hours was all unknown to me. I remembered how during the main fires two storm side swept us and I greatly feared this rain would also do so.

Between eleven thirty and twelve PM the rain slackened almost to a final stop for a time I sat as if stunned. I felt crushed over this.

"This is awful" I said to myself as I turned away from the window grief stricken. The damn old rain is stopping the snowdrifts are. snowdrifts are. I was sitting in my room at home in a frightful state of mind about noon. It is awful to think of this enough. I drove a fellow out of his senses and to almost make me lose faith in God."

I hurried away into the lounge room and burst into a passion of tears. At the right of the room I had had stopped as if struck with a first blow. I returned with my high dash to the ground. No big rain to quench the snowdrifts. I threw myself down on a couch and lay for a time silent and despairing. At last tears came to my relief and my broad shoulder shook with a passion of sobbing. I think that just at the moment



2947 when I hoped for chance for  
the remainder to be caused into  
nothingness - just when all the  
dangers - seemed nearly past the  
saw that start to slacken to a  
stop and I and all my men had  
be able to strike a blow to  
think of these awful remainder to  
continue to burn. His damn slight  
showers to only increase the  
smoke ten times more.

It was maddening but after a  
time the passion of weeping calmed  
down and suddenly I sat up  
from a startling surprising extra  
being shouted in the street.

Extra, Extra, Big Long, heavy rain  
storm approaching Extra.

I rose to my feet to run out  
to by a paper, I opened the door  
but came back for my umbrella.  
It was raining pitchforks. Thunder  
was heard.

"I am a fool" I said as I  
went out and called the new boy  
a nice sort of a fellow for a  
fine fighter lying here crying  
like a little baby when I found

I was a man, wasting my time  
here when I should have known  
that stock up was a fake. Took  
at it? Like a cloudburst? Thought  
while walking I heard a strange  
noise like heavy rain falling.

I need not lose all hope yet.  
The way the sky looks this  
rain will keep up. The bullet  
is not lost yet and any one  
could know I would have  
moved heaven and earth to  
conquer the remainder and ---

"Each bang" I went in with the  
troop. I don't like to be out  
side when thunder crashes like  
that.

I read about the storm and 2948  
that on the west and also about  
where it had caused the rivers to  
assume threat of dangerous flood  
stage. I also read that mobs  
were still storming the prison  
at Long Spring.

Yet as to the prospects of  
storming the jail for all this time  
without any success as yet I did  
not feel sanguine.

If it was not so strong a  
prison, and not so strongly  
guarded, and if there were not  
many regiments of troops in the  
town the strong defenses of the  
jail would have been forced long  
ago. Past reports had been even  
attempted. I know they will succeed.

Mid after noon came Rain? Don't  
talk about it I saw many of my  
men coming down the streets of the Ball  
to Ball in the rain after an all  
half day drizzling.  
I saw that the clouds of smoke for  
off were much worse but later  
of steam clouds were mingling  
with it.

By evening it was still raining  
pitch fork and I also knew that if  
all that thunder would keep keep  
up through the night very little sleep  
would I get. By nine p.m. the  
rain fell as if from a cloud.  
Lightning continued to flash and  
the thunder continued to crash.  
I never in my life saw such  
a rain. It seemed as though every  
bit of water in the heavens must  
have come down during the  
entire night it did not stop  
raining once and was a veritable  
deluge.

2949 All night the storm raged in all its fury and there were continual crashes of thunder many discharges all night. The rain fell in torrents & it was almost a cloudburst and kept every body in. Very early morning came and instead of letting up the storm grew worse and it became very windy.

I could not sleep a wink. Four times I got up and looked out to the east but did not see the slightest glow or smoke either.

All night had been terrible thunderstorm rain lightning and thunder. The rain through the house like mad. Even too much wind to go out with umbrellas.

Wondering if I could see whether the fires were overcome by this long heavy rain I looked out towards the east.

But all I could see was the white shower of rain. The rain coming down. Most of the fire fighters had come to go to get out of the rain. I called to some of them and asked them how the rain was working on the burning burners. They could not tell however. Yet they had looked for smoke from the rain.

Yet the wind now was from the east and stepping out on the porch of the store I noticed a very funny smell in the air like from a grain elevator of a fire had been put out.

2950 I thought it rained heavily all the earliest part of this day. The rain was much heavier during the afternoon and again went into the night. I feared about the Mayaguez River but though threatening the rain did not fall.

I thought I didn't rain any more this day. It was cloudy and very dark. I looked seaward but saw nothing. So mounting my swiftest horse and taking a number of my fire tentatively. I rode for the

We arrived by noon. Except for some sizzling clouds of steam here and there the whole territory was a blackened burned sea of what had been even roots. The smouldering was dead. There was not even heat within a foot of its edge. The long cloud burst had done its work. Even some parts where there had been branching smouldering flames was now lakes of water.

The smouldering had actually been faked. What a blessing this was, a great country fire sea of burning fields absolutely without parallel was wiped out by the storm. I dared to go to where the steam arose but there even was no heat there. I returned that spot up with a stick but there was warmth but no fire. It was out. I thanked God with all my heart. I had thought only to see the smouldering sea only. I saw it and it was very even flooded in many locations surprised me. This and it had been such a hot smouldering. What a rain.

2951 I could not understand the actual flooding of parts of the ammunition dump and most of my followers would not believe it until they saw it themselves. Three days later I went to the dump and observed something that most greatly surprised me and made me again feel joyful. All the timbers of all the damaged buildings that could be saved had for a certain length of distance had been stacked up like you see lumber in a lumber yard but much higher.

All bricks from demolished buildings that also could be salvaged had been put up like wide tall walls and all wood not fit for salvage also had been stacked neatly in the yards of the houses not touched by the whirlpool of the air.

Waste made refugee shelters and for the injured had been very strongly strengthened and continued living quarters and comfortably furnished. Simon Segre's barn was the same with the undiminished structure unshaken.

around it still as to the stacking of the debris into piles so high and neat I must have taken the minutes work for this short time. Many stores were truly heavy high and not burned. And all boxes were stacked neatly according to size.

I could not believe my eyes. I had never believed or thought if the people of Chester town if that they would plan to construct the lumber piles could do it within months. It was done between the day of the beginning of the field fires and what ever day it was finished. It seems they had faced, yet what was the method of this great lumber came. It too was strongly fenced in.

How could they do this from such a jumbled mass of debris which even kept every outsider from coming in. Even the lumber had been piled up from wreckage where loads had been wedged so tightly that they were mutilated by the men who do not angled them. It had been said by the authorities that the sort of the wreckage could not be adequately searched for weeks.

2952 Yet even now so soon that some wreckage was now lumber again and put piled neatly according to the equal size of the boards and the debris were as tightly wedged by the fury they flung by the winds. If they were cemented together, Simon Segre's Dog Barn was still used as a hospital and many made rafters were still bedridden. But it was handsomely remodeled inside and outside and a good bed inside and nicely furnished outside. It was still a hospital and filled even with burned fire fighters. Had long high piles of attached salvaged bricks from brick houses. The unsalvaged ruins had been neatly cleaned and were piled

2953 far away and dumped some  
where out of sight. I heard  
all sort of house hold goods  
bedding clothing and so on were  
also salvaged and stored away in  
the basement on street floor  
There was another thing that  
surprised me greatly. What had  
become of all the tornado debris of  
Chesterchire brick houses and so on.  
I soon found out.

At Chesterchire all the people  
there had been killed or mortally  
injured. There were no survivors.  
By cart wagon long hay mule  
drawn trucks and other conveyances  
the salvaged wood house hold  
goods and all type salvage type of  
merchandise had been taken from  
there and brought to Chesterbourn  
and stuff no good had been  
likewise disposed of so all was  
clear there too.

I thought from the mule long  
trucks and there was more  
wood than was from Chesterbourn  
alone. The salvaged bricks alone  
amounted to millions. To get all  
this wood even all wrecked wooden  
houses had been demolished.  
Some few houses brick or  
wood not too badly wrecked  
had been rebuilt from  
the salvaged debris.

Many pianos not damaged by  
the tornado were also stored away  
in vacant floors of the University  
of hour and upon thousands of boxes  
of cigars were also stored there.  
tea store stock and the contents  
of rubber goods store stuff  
hot water bottles and other rubber  
articles all types of books not  
damaged by the tornado were sal-  
vaged. Also artists supplies beaut-  
iful pictures not damaged by

by the storm. Everything all 2954  
Chesterbourn stores had not damaged  
were salvaged. dolls toys bibles and  
so on. All Church pews found were also  
salvaged but no trace of any other  
Church articles not even Religious statues  
vary ex. stations of the Cross.

No canned goods were found.  
but a lot of drug store merchandise were  
recovered among the debris and bottles  
of wine and brandy.

A very large eight pound Bible  
was found but printed in Spanish.  
and full of illustrations. Despite the  
full fury of the tornado plenty of  
registered mail parcel post packages,  
all other type of mail not ruined  
and postage stamps and funds  
of the post offices of both Chester-  
bourn and Chesterchire were saved.

Sole too were found ruined  
by the rain following the winter.

Also about 24 000 000 million  
plain envelopes I in both places  
had been found and saved.

as well as other post office supplies.  
Lots of dry goods too were found  
and salvaged. Meats from  
butcher shops and Bakery Goods  
were found missing by the  
workers. One John said "I made  
the tornado ate them up."

2953 No water or garden hoses were found or grass cutters. Chesterbourn was entirely without horses, mules, donkeys or asses. The animals caught in their stables by the tornado had been found scattered dead among the wreckage.

Bodies of dead horses badly decomposed had been found everywhere in streets everywhere.

All type of money from destroyed banks were never found.

The workers told me that they moved scores of heavy machines from the debris. They wondered where they came from as no such machines were ever in Chesterbourn. None of them had been damaged.

They had been salvaged on the street floor of the university besides undamaged cash

and France and held for ransom. King paid the ransom - rep. Spence - eventually got his position; married in B66; B 1368, expelled as a quaker; & 1378 was sent for trade mission to Italy where he & Broccius V B 74 was

Registers. Even salt 2956 boats were found which never been known to be in Chesterbourn. They also had found scattered hand ware wholesale notions wholesale drygoods everything of paint stores, jewel stores second hand stores shoe string stores shoes stuff from a shaving Emporium, and retail dry goods among the wreckage they gathered.

All articles from telephone exchange building had also been among the wreckage. And Chesterbourn had never had a telephone exchange building.

By questioning I had learned that great numbers of nightdress and other curiosities though they knew they were forbidden had come to Chesterbourn.

By soldiers of the National Guard and officials of the Relief Committee they all had been apprehended, and compelled to

go to work on helping with the salvage of the debris or go to jail. None were jailed. So now I see why all the salvaged lumber was stacked so soon. Even the guards made the night seeing able to do it so completely.

2957 women and teen agers kept  
too because the women folk and  
teenagers of Chester brown did all  
thea that work by volunteer.

Yet after all the spectators did  
their work willingly and hard.  
During this work were day  
and night shifts.

Even the wreckage pile fire  
was so wiped out that all the  
wood not ruined by the fire  
was a part of these huge  
lumber stacks. Wood not too  
much burned but which could  
be salvaged was brought to  
Chesterbrown as fire wood what  
could not be hauled away  
as fire wood was dumped  
into a large dump in the  
ground and buried under lot  
of ground.

I did not know why all  
that wreckage wood  
was saved as I learned  
no one was ever going

to rebuild the city. And  
none of the salvage was  
for sale, and was  
under strong guards.

The guard knew me well 2956  
and gave me thrilling but  
very important information. I have  
and of the surviving people of  
Chesterbrown, men able bodied  
women, children ten years of  
age, teen agers and hundreds  
of night seers took night and  
day shifts.

The hardest job was to  
get the wreckage loosened from  
the piles tearing down wrecked  
wooden houses, salvaging wood  
from demolished brick buildings  
and prying up tightly wedged debris.  
It took five days and nights  
to accomplish the work and  
also from the wreckage  
of Chesterchire and the half  
burned wreckage out side of  
zone ville.

I learned that there  
was three big big wagon  
loads of salvaged wood to  
be brought from Chesterchire.

yet I through my efforts  
the wood was brought in  
within ten hours and I  
helped with the stacking  
of it. The next day I  
detailed two guards to accompan

*James F. Bracces 1911*

2957. me to see how  
the Sacred Heart Convent  
still was. When we got there  
it was in a still worse wreck.  
It had never been demol-  
ished by any workers and  
a tall strong wooden fence  
had been erected around it.

I had only one strong  
gate which was padlocked.

I didn't want to go inside  
the fence though I could  
have.

A ladder was placed  
against the fence for me  
as I didn't want the gate  
opened and I climbed that  
to get a view of the  
convent ruins.

The ground was still covered  
with the wreckage of what  
once had been the most  
magnificent of convents.

I noted several features  
of the front was the same.

And what was left of  
the lower floor toward  
furnishings were still  
strewn over the ground  
in and in the branches  
of what is left of the  
trees. I saw as I climbed

before furnishing 2958  
several chairs and convent  
cushions and many clothing  
fastened on broken trees.  
I asked that even now has any  
of the missing persons of the  
convent ever been found or traced.  
The answer is no.

Lines snapped by the tornado  
in all directions were still not  
repaired so that all communications  
interrupted by the storm still  
remained so not one wire was  
yet working. The storm had  
taken down all wires in its  
path and all electric power  
was still cut off.

The line men had no means  
yet for restoration & especially  
because of the excitement caused  
by the great fire.

Even electric light and trolley  
wires carried down by the storm  
still remained unrepaired. But  
what good if they were. All  
trolley cars had been destroyed  
and were still left where  
they were demolished.

Also the fire fighting apparatus  
had been wiped out.

The sight of the Convent was

2959 still more terrifying  
& terrifying. Most of the  
tumbled down ruins in the  
front had collapsed to a final  
downward level all remaining  
debris lay all over and the  
big iron girders of the building  
still were twisted like spun  
thread

Desolation and ruin was  
everywhere in front of the  
Convent some sections of  
the upper parts of the second  
floor also had collapsed.

In trees and on fallen  
twisted wires still hung bed  
clothing and convent and  
people's clothing too. The  
wreckage of the house which  
had been flung against  
the building by the tornado  
still remained.

Sister Clara and little  
Mildred Maxwell, the only  
survivors of the Convent were  
still in the hospital slowly  
on the road to recovery.

I discovered at the west  
side of the Convent which  
I had not yet observed  
before sight after the storm  
that a very big furnace

thrashing machine 2960  
lay against the lower wall  
on the ground and not the  
slightest damaged. I also saw  
a big box car near there  
too standing perfectly on  
its big round iron ~~wheels~~  
wheels as if still on the tracks.  
But it was split wide open  
and barrels laying near  
it.

I had learned that many  
investigators officials and  
most experienced firemen  
had gone diligently over large  
and lengthy territory follow-  
ing the tornado path from  
Chesterbourn all the way  
to a great distance from  
Geneville but found not the  
slightest trace of the upper  
parts of the Convent Convent  
or any of its system or  
child students. Not even  
any of the convent's house-  
hold goods school seats  
flooding or so on. What  
in the world did the  
tornado do to it all yet  
I firmly believe without



2961 the slightest doubts  
for what the Tursten did in  
Chesterbourn Chester Chire  
Jannerville, and the big strongly  
built Sacred Heart Convent  
that it was big stronger  
and far more powerful in  
its force and speed of its  
churning movements than  
ten of the Mosko-storm  
which took between Soderen  
and Mosko, put together.  
Why? Mainly be-  
cause of it causing the mys-  
terious disappearance of the  
upper part of the Convent  
and all its inmates. Only  
the big dining room tables  
were found but crumpled  
away some damaged and  
others not.

Some of the national  
guards men said:

"As you are in main authority  
here you, if you wish could  
be admitted through the  
gate to go closer to inspect  
the ruins sir"

"Not on your life" I  
answered. "I believe Tim

as have a man as my 2962  
one even could be but yet  
Tim too cowardly to go near  
that structure even forty feet  
from it. If I can Tim going  
to have it leveled by explosive.  
It's too dangerous a building to  
be left standing. I'll go no  
near than this fence-barricade  
here"

I could not understand why  
the destroyed portion of the city  
of Chesterchire Chesterbourn  
were never rebuilt.

Even all the shattered telegraph  
and telephone wires not read-  
justed or other articles restored.  
All sort of debris however had  
been cleared away totally clean  
and salvaged wreckage stored  
up in a lumber yard.

All survivors were now housed  
in improved shelter built  
from the wreckage all had  
clothing and food provided  
and appeared as well as  
as before the storm.

all relief-stations were  
still there. Really so well  
did the citizens of the destruction  
city and Su-dalee and

2963 Those adjacent

adjacent responded to the call for assistance that no national help was required. President Roosevelt immediately upon hearing of this most terrible disaster as the Relief Committee showed me sent on the following message to the Relief Committee at So. Salto:

"To the head Relief committee at Chester-brown. I am deeply distressed at the news received from C. S. Salto about Chesterbrown. Can we help in any way possible?"

Theodore Roosevelt

In reply the head relief committee at Chesterhire had sent this message of deep appreciation

We

"We do very deeply appreciate your offer of assistance but our surviving people are responding most nobly and as badly as were we are in the situation I believe we can handle the situation."

Mayor Brown of Springfield

and his men came 2964

promptly to our assistance and are doing great work. The 2,000 surviving surviving people of Chesterbrown desire however to express their greatest and profound gratitude to you for your message of sympathy. No assistance need be made at Chesterhire. It is practically wiped off the map and of its population only two hundred survived and are hospitalized at Chesterbrown. That city is beyond restoration. This tornado was unconsciously strong and ran wild.

James C. Horton. Representative of Chief Relief head 11  
"DANGER absent fighting the fires"

Work was the word which told the story of all the lumber stock but I still wonder why Chesterbrown was never rebuilt?

work is still going on all debris not useful had been cleared away. But the ruined city is not to be rebuilt so I heard. Why?

2963 Those adjacent!

7965 With permission was  
wood from the debris at So  
Salle had been brought from  
So Salle for salvage as no  
rehabilitation was not yet to  
be begun. Only houses not  
badly damaged had restoration.  
The destroyed portions of  
So Salle was not to be  
rebuilt. All the wood debris  
that could be salvaged was  
sent to Chesterbourn, and  
the alacrity of which the  
task of stocking it in lumber  
piles brought a measure of  
joy to all.

Three thousand carpenters  
were still at work on So Salle  
repairing buildings only partly  
damaged by the tornado and  
more than two thousand  
haloers had cleared away the  
wrecks debris from the worst  
devastated structures and  
other debris kept by people for  
firewood.

There also was work going  
on of replacing many homes  
to the foundations from

which they had been. 7966  
pushed off or twisted. The lum-  
ber stacks were signed on.  
The fence barricade telling  
of each section where it came  
from. Even near or on the  
grounds of the Sacred Heart  
Convent shade trees which  
were only for partly wrecked  
or uprooted? saw wires  
wrapped around as if wound  
like thread thread on a spool.

A strange thing about the  
disaster was that Chesterbourn  
destruction was kept secret  
for three days by the storm  
for all communication  
was broken down.

Messengers had to go to  
So Salle or Lincoln Ill to  
give the first definite news of  
the disaster. Even now it is almost  
impossible to communicate with  
the outside world as no lines  
has been restored.

The hospitals in Chester-  
bourn are still filled to  
their capacity and especially those  
battered fighting the fires.

~~2963. those dependent~~

2967 And many of these are still in a serious condition.

The twenty relief stations on Chestertown established by the Relief Committee were still in operation and yet that does not begin to tell the story of the enormous amount of aid that was provided and still given.

Clothing is still given out to those who apply.

The shelters and newly made living quarters had been and still is supplied with cots, bedding, tables, chairs, cooking stoves, medical supplies and rations.

One of the strange situations was still presented as a result of the storm and that was what still confronted by the railroads in and out of St. Louis.

Signal wires, switch and block systems were completely deranged by the storm and were still in that condition.

Therefore the railroad men still had to resort continually to the antiquated method of sending out signal men to mark the passage of all trains.

Men still carried red flags and were still sent ahead to signal clear track, or give warning of danger on approaching trains and the cars carrying passengers, mail, baggage and free freight crawled in and out of the small stricken city at a decrease of speed which still was causing considerable delay.

As I again viewed the monument nothing can describe the unspeakable honor of it all nor can any one in the world conceive the loss.

In that one big five story building upward of countless number of children with the men and employees disappeared with the three upper stories. How many uncounted disappeared in the tornado will

2963 those adjacent

2969 never be known be-  
cause even up to now no trace  
have been found, were there  
-but the slightest trace it  
would suffice. The disappearance  
of all that part of the  
building, great and most  
unusual though it be is but  
an incident of the most  
recent breaking devastating  
tornado calamity.

The heart aches at the  
sight, the inconvenience and  
strange mystery of it all,  
and such damage to so  
unusually a strong building  
are beyond comprehension.

They talk of the loss  
of dollars and cents and  
some with a commercial  
sense of proportion place the  
monetary loss of the  
enormous block and

half long building at  
something like \$200,000,000.

But I believe they are  
empty figures.

What estimate  
of value can be put upon

loss of the beautiful 2970  
Chapel windows on both sides  
or calculate the cost of the  
loss of Chapel and Holy articles  
of the most expensive kind  
in the most irresistible rush  
of the wind.

There is intelligible persistent  
about that once most magnificent  
of all Catholic convents the world  
ever seems. And another thing:  
What became of the Chapel's  
magnificent tower and  
expensive beautifully  
sounding brass bells?

The streets form a sort of  
horseshoe around the Convent  
and its once beautiful  
garden grounds which makes  
it impossible even now  
to go near any part of  
the building building with-  
out counting certain death  
as life-long cuppling.

In this undecorated convent

convent of streets is it any  
wonder with the undecorated  
swept horizon of the

2963 ~~those adjacent~~

2971 Tornado found little detailed description before the public in the early hours following excusable or explainable disasters. To my idea it is impossible to truthfully estimate the convent damage or loss.

There is no communication with the building with so much of it blown away.

For all this time since the melitome of the air none was able to tell just what the situation was or what the ultimate outcome, even the State Governor being unable to obtain exact information with all the facilities of the state at his command as on the undated of his descriptive statement of the general conditions of the convent.

Four days after the great disaster when the tornado struck at the west side of the building with

2975

such unbelievable force. 2972 Appealing even to the world I sent in the paper what the Governor said:

The extent of the appalling wreckage of the Great Sacred Heart Convent at Chardon known park new Ave is still unknown. Every hour impresses us with the uncertainty of the situation. The tornado had assumed such unknown strength that most of the convent and its inmates disappeared to only God knows where.

Three quarters of the great building was wiped out of existence, and it surely was a miracle that a ruin and a little girl escaped the disaster of the upper part of the building.

Please give great publicity to an appeal for help of all friends and relatives who see that the convent children at the convent disaster and who <sup>are</sup> ~~are~~ still crowded in camps now.

2963 those adjacent

2971

2973 Chesterbourn vainly awaiting news of their disappeared loved ones. My judgment is that there never has been such a tragedy in the history of our country. The Relief Committees are the center of all activities in behalf of these stricken people.

Every hour has apparently been filled with an accumulation of dramatic circumstances.

Petitions appeals have continually been made by these people who lost their children in the disappearance of the upper section of the building. Every human energy has been exerted to give relief and yet the measures of assistance have been comparatively small. They don't realize that their children will never be found in the debris of the building either.

In all respects the convent situation is absolutely

without parallel to me. 2974  
is able to vent to life outside.  
would the real loss?

The Governors.  
have withheld

The upper part of the convent and all its inmates disappeared in a way that would seem naturally impossible. It is reported that outside Chesterbourn the territory is crowded crowded block with people still mourning awaiting news about the missing children. Not until today it is apparent that more than twelve thousand people are crowded in the tents and improvised shelters, making it apparent that they won't give up for hope for satisfaction or bad news.

They have been informed that no investigation has brought no trace, but still they stay in hoping against hope.

2963 those adjacent

2475

That section is patrolled by a number of the National Guard outside and the camps are so situated as to enable the soldiers to make more or less accurate estimates of the number of people waiting in vain for news of their lost children.

Yet to any stretch of imagination save possibly that regarding the disappearance of the upper Convent section and all its inmates by the unmeasurable force of the storm has depicted a scene more terrible and yet more awe inspiring and mysterious than that of all tornado fury in the history of tornadoes ever raged.

One reason you couldn't get near the convent also of the heap of wreckage from other houses near it and tangled masses of telegraph telephone and electric light wires.

I had asked why to.

2976

crowds was not admitted into Chesterbourn instead of left in the camps but they won't come in as they're afraid because of the appearance of the ruined convent and they were continually issued plenty of rations.

I also learned with good feeling that every able-bodied man among these waiting throngs had been pressed into service stacking up the salvaged lumber. A man with a very loud imagination had stood nearby calling out orders.

The new Mayor of Chesterbourn I learned has telegraphed the Governor in an early report that special emphasis be given the great need of more immediate supplies of provisions. There's not a full day's food supply in Chesterbourn and before this coming night it is likely that all the survivors of Chesterbourn and the



2963 these adjacent

2977 people waiting for news of their lost children who have been held down without food or water since yesterday will be released and there will be no provisions for them and no place to care for them either.

Horrible as this is according to the Mayor the real true suffering will get worse for days. There at Chester Brown twenty thousand who are homeless and added by the twelve thousand waiting persons who refuse to go away.

They are being fed from hand to mouth with less than a days food supply ahead of them. They won't depart for their homes and also expect supplies from there that is slow or nothing. There is no water and there is no light.

The immediate need of these people call for every attention. The

2978  
suffering inhabitants of Chester Brown are doing what they can for them but yet must watch out for their own supplies.

The waiting crowds again and again have been urged to return to their homes but they refuse to go away. They desperately want to know of their lost children.

I had heard that the new Mayor had been urged to see that a trainload from So. Ball be kept constantly on the move on the Rock Island. An effort has also been made to induce all those waiting people who are able and who can find their way back

home to leave the encampments for So. Ball as fast as the trains service will permit but still they refuse to leave. Many only pleaded for the officers to obtain news of their lost children. Everywhere

2963 those admitted

2979

things of these people  
yelled to members of the  
Relief Committee who came  
near them to find news  
or whereabouts of their lost  
children, but it was really  
impossible, for no trace  
of them had ever been  
found.

All had tearful eyes, children  
with them cried for milk.  
Even from these people large  
amounts were offered for  
news good or bad. Yet the  
traces enacted were really  
heart-rending and the most  
pitiful were witnessed  
among the younger persons.  
Frenzied crowds watched for  
every message against hope  
that they would hear some  
good news of their lost  
children.

Women became hysterical  
at times when no cheering  
message came.

The food situation  
which threatened to  
become serious was  
relieved temporarily by

2980

the arrival of a special train  
from So. Falls bringing  
twelve cars of provisions.  
Yet sufficient supplies arrived  
to prevent great suffering  
among everyone. None had had  
enough but no case approaching  
actual starvation was found  
among them.

A cordon of soldiers was still  
barring the way to hordes of  
curious visitors from other  
cities. Only those bringing in  
supplies were admitted and  
many supplies were badly  
needed. Bread was the staple  
most in demand.

The grounds of Chesterbourn  
were alive with citizens most  
of them very hungry and  
appealing for food.  
Along the embankment of the  
railroad line north of Chesterbourn  
in which probably lie the  
Black Island tracks is one long

station of camps of these people  
who won't leave and go home.  
From a point nearest the Convent  
another has been established So Falls  
has care of them.

2963 those adoration!

2981 ~

Many of these people prayed Rosaries daily for news of their disappeared children. I also heard that all through every night could be heard the wails of the disappointed people in these encampments.

And as the moans and the shrieks of these sufferers floated across the railroad tracks wails from those of temporary refuge joined.

What could be done? Only God knew where all these children disappeared to. Trains coming from Chicago, Detroit, Michigan City and every direction from the northwest and east had carried these people to Chester-brown where they now are.

Many of these also reached "a hall in through trains" which through unknown reasons we had been delayed for hours.

The fact that the railroads were able to get their trains from west north and east to So. Sable

2982

was the cause of this great influx of people looking for their lost children by train or other means. By rights this was the saddest most heart rending scene the world ever witnessed.

Still even now sightseers were refused admittance to any the city or any other disaster area. A train loaded with about three hundred and fifty reached So. Sable just to day but the mayor had them turned back. Another train from Bloomington Ill was refused.

Only such trains as brought supplies were allowed to enter.

Except through the final reports of the Government which has taken up the Convent situation for the purpose of adopting measures at which probably no one will know just how many perished or were swept out of sight in the great Convent disaster.

2963 those adjacent

2983 That many thousands of children, and all the top of the Convent were swept away into a mysterious disappearance is now known to everybody but there is no central source from which data can be secured to really determine how many disappeared with the upper part of the Convent.

Even in So. Ball a city with every facility for ascertaining the true facts the exact number may never be known, especially in the first place it was never known how many were in the Convent.

Sister Clare and little Mildred the only minuscule survivors were questioned by they knew nothing of the number.

The local authorities found that all the inmates except a sister and a child, had mysteriously disappeared with out a report being made and yet who even knows how

many strangers or 2984 visitors also within that part of the building also disappeared in the tornado explosion force and will be known only as mysteriously missing with the disappearing portion of the Convent.

But to give some concrete idea of the loss of the Convent loss these facts and figures published in the daily newspaper concerning condition of the Convent after the explosion tornado are quoted from a statement issued by a representative of our State Governor.

Dead or mysteriously missing Any type of estimate impossible, 500 horses killed around the Convent, beautiful Convent of Holy picture windows missing also all the expensive Stations of the Cross, all worth \$250,000.00. dollars.

2963 these adjacent

2985 Some statisticians had set the loss at a higher figure but most expert opinion agreed on \$25,000,000. It is believed that the damage to missing convent household goods and furnishings would mount into the millions because the convent had the most expensive furnishings money could buy.

It is said also that the damage of the school room section on the street floor still left was set at a conservative figure of

\$2,000,000. All school seats were torn loose, expensive wall pictures damaged beyond repair, beautiful windows destroyed and the school room floor littered with debris blown through the wind own from other destroyed houses.

The loss of the Chapel statuary was set at \$500,000 though the altar alone was not severely

damaged. Damages 2986 to the building is impossible to estimate but some set it at a conservative estimate of \$1250,000,000.

The disappeared bell and belfry was estimated at twenty thousand dollars.

The large life sized image of Christ on the Cross alone was estimated at five thousand two dollars from what it was made of. It was still in what remains of the Chapel but was badly mutilated, beyond repair.

Scenes of horror, grief and terror are still depicted almost endlessly by the people still awaiting the hopes for news of their loved ones but there could be no heart rending more tragic moment than that still

presented when no news of the disappeared children could be obtained. Even the all night vigil

2963 those adjacent

2984 of the people as they most anxiously waited waited and watched for news news are vividly described the by the Mayor of La Salle who had tried his best to have thousands scour the territory for the missing children and the remains of the convent

Around him stood hundreds of women wringing their hands in anguish. The Mayor was besieged by every sufferer. He could not tell them what the tornado did to the convent or their missing children. Every one weiled over their missing children. Absolutely no hope was felt by these people and everyone were in mourning.

And what stories of unbearable anguish, anxiety, sorrow of hearts anguish were than a toothache lay behind the disappearance of all those children. Brothers and sisters separated for ever, Husbands and wives losing all their and most seriously made childless because all of us mankind in all the wisdom and glory and

3003 assisting the citizens in securing financial assistance that is deeper -

unrepeatable power never will be able to cope with Mother Nature and her angry 2989 elements nor quell or pacify her by any supplication what ever.

The sentiment expressed by the waiting people that they never witnessed such exhibition of weakness. Without exception the people all considered others before themselves. Hungry men and women received rations but divided them or gave them to women and children physically unable to stand long hours waiting to be served.

Settled aside from the military the Governor drafted the services of the Mayor of La Salle and also of Molone who because of their experiences in all type of sociological work, were placed in charge of the issuing of permits to ride on trains sent over the rail roads which the State had decreed must not under any conditions must not carry sight seers and undesirable people to

3003

has this power me its resident national

his com and loved

and would be of his

to 1967

in lays richest

how led out off

of putation at the States

the air words sufficient quies till

2991 to the disaster districts  
Permission to ride on these  
trains are freely given to  
those who have relatives  
for whose safety they are con-  
cerned but none other were  
allowed on them.

Some are being given full  
transportation and others orders  
which the railroad have to  
have before selling tickets.

Still naturally the Red  
Cross Society are still per-  
forming heroic services  
on behalf of the refugees  
and sufferers.

They are still sending  
nurses surgical supplies and  
through the various branches  
raised a large sum of  
money more than \$25,000,000  
has already been raised  
for the sufferers of the waiting  
thongs and on the "funeral"  
tornado and fire disaster  
areas every large city  
is still sending a large  
contribution.

3003  
insisting the citizens in securing  
financial assistance that is desper-  
ately needed.

Thousands of tons of 2992  
supplies are still being shipped  
into the homeless and hungry  
from every railroad centre  
and the railroad though suffering  
enormous losses themselves  
and working under greatest  
difficulties in the disaster  
area transported everything to  
the relief points free of charge  
and gave all the merchandise  
preference in transit.

The relief committee dis-  
tributed countless baskets each  
containing 12 good meals and  
right there even among the  
anxious waiting crowds the  
leveling power of hunger was  
exemplified for the millionaires  
enjoyed the sausage they  
contained which as much  
gusto as the laborer.

All officials and investigators  
and others made careful  
inquiries for witnesses of  
the Convent disaster but found  
only one and his testimony was  
not satisfying.

this  
brown  
me-  
its  
resident  
National  
his com-  
and  
toned  
red  
would  
nd re-  
of his  
t 1917  
m lays  
nichest  
know  
led  
ut off  
s of  
putation  
at the  
States.

a air  
wads  
supplies  
quise  
fell  
than  
on

2947 The one bad spot on the state had been Chester brown where the conditions had been recognized as being even more deplorable than any place ever hit by a tornado before.

In a word the city except 31 houses had been utterly smashed and its streets had been avenues of ghastly horrors. Many hundreds of work men had had their homes and all they possessed swept away and have nothing but the clothing they now wear.

The crying need of Chester brown is money those who face this awful condition must have needed substantial help.

The surviving merchants and manufactures though also wiped out can rely to a very great extent upon outside help but the hundreds of workmen

3003  
assisting the citizens in securing financial assistance that is deeper -  
The undersigned has

must have for areas 2993  
help. That everyone from all that ghastly horrors of wreckage established all the lumber piles of salvage wood is a miracle.

All had also cleaned away the unwanted debris and mud and other refuse. But no employer went near the dangerous wreck of the convent.

The Mayor and others who have visited the Chester brown city Chester brown and the tornado town part of So. Ball declare without reserve that Chester brown proportionately has suffered by far the greatest loss of all and yet because of the greater prominence of other communities they have gotten their distress before the Country while poor Chester brown almost wiped

out of existence its building shattered beyond restoration a quarter of its population wiped out its business forever paral-  
yzed has been given much less attention

this  
brown  
me  
its  
resident  
National

his com-  
and  
tomed

and  
would  
nd re  
of his

t 1967

m lays  
nickat

h now  
led  
ut off

s of  
putation  
at the  
States.

e air  
words  
suff and  
quiere  
field  
than  
or



2994 Before the stacking up of the wreckage was begun the Mayor of both Chesterbrown and So. Falls submitted to the Governor an exhaustive report upon general conditions in Chesterbrown showing that twenty eight miles of sheet asphalt streets twenty miles of sewers and the gas electric and water plants are wrecked beyond redemption and that all the homes and the great Sacred Heart Convent are in such ruined condition that their restoration is practically impossible.

The hopes of the waiting crowds which grew as the wreckage was put onto lumber piles which was accomplished in five days and nights were dashed to pieces when

the news came that all the searches no matter where they went and how far northeast could find no trace of the missing people.

3003  
arriving the citizens in securing financial assistance that is desperate - how this

the debris of the upper 2995 parts of the convent or bodies of any kind. Even now Chesterbrown will supply a real most tremendous problem because no one had reached it until now. It has been impossible to get there from the Northwest North or Northeast.

With the So. Falls supply diminishing down to the point of need and the torn away wires destroyed railway bridges cutting off all communications from all sides Chesterbrown is practically cut off.

I had seen long lines of coal cars loaded down with thousands of tons of coal that had been tossed about by the great twister that rushed through the town like a chip on the rear Central Ave near the Convent had been gone. Other streets suffered the same fate as Central Ave. Some tornado, stronger than the worst giant whirlpool. Worse than the worst flood.

brown  
no  
its  
resident  
National  
no com-  
and  
wired  
red  
would  
nd re-  
of his  
t 1917  
m lays  
richest  
h now  
led  
ut off  
s of  
putation  
at the  
States.  
e air  
wads  
suff on  
till  
than  
on

2 1996 Another fatalizing  
of striking view of the conditions  
of the convent is here pre-  
sented because it shows the  
many phases of the mysterious  
tragedy which the tornado  
developed causing unspeakable  
damage and countless heart  
aches among weeping crowds of  
anxious people.

For worse than any human  
mind can picture are the  
conditions revealed of this big  
convent after the tornado  
exploded itself against it.

It is a jumbled mass  
of debris mutilated beyond  
recognition serving as a  
reminder to what was once  
the most magnificent  
beautiful Catholic convents  
in the world.

If it ever does happen  
it will be many years  
before a new one is  
built, and yet will never  
be like this one was.

What an excruciating  
multiplied tornado this

3003  
insisting the citizens in receiving  
financial assistance that is deeper -

sure turned out to 1997  
be.

### Long Conclusion

The tolerance of the reader  
is asked in this lengthy con-  
clusion because it is almost an  
interpolation. It has no place in the  
original compilation but the conditions  
which developed at Charleston Illinois  
justify the presentation of that city's  
unmeasurable calamity in its true  
relation to the entire most terrible  
catastrophy on record.

This is still the appeal - the wail  
of sorrow that is still ringing from  
that city, and the anxious waiting  
crowds outside the city more than  
a week after the terrific tornado  
had disintegrated everything.

It is not a story filled with  
thrilling rescue nor deeds of heroism  
but the portrayal of the most  
dire conditions of which the country  
learned little because of the  
tornado stripping down all wires  
and ruining bridges and tearing up  
railroad lines this once beautiful  
city is still practically shut off

this  
hours  
mo-  
ute  
resident  
national  
his com-  
and  
wood  
red  
would  
nd re  
of his

1917

in lays  
richest

know  
led  
ut off

of  
putation  
at the  
States

air  
wads  
suff on

field  
plan  
ion

2998 from the world. Its  
story for days did not yet  
reach the public. The Red Cross  
representatives reported that over  
20,000 persons in Chester Brown still  
were in need for all for some  
kind of rehabilitation and the  
city did have before the "Storm-  
under" hit it a population of a  
little more than 36,000.

Out of that twenty thousand  
are the survivors and a quarter  
of the survivors are still in the  
hospitals and yet added by the  
number of recruited fire fighters.

This is the appeal made for  
the city the like of which  
has been made in the interest  
of the communities.

"Chester Brown needs help very  
badly. It is not suffering for  
food nor for clothing. But the  
Capitol seat of Illinois the  
recognized world center of  
machine tool and safe manu-  
facturing interests, the second  
greatest producer of manufacturing  
factories in our America  
is prostrated by a record

3003  
unsetting the citizens in securing  
financial assistance that is deeper -

2999  
breaking over strong tornado in  
no city of its kind or size has  
been prostrated since the St.  
Louis tornado of May 1896.

In the great soul swirl of  
disaster which overwhelmed the  
Central west were before no so  
many cities and towns had been  
devasted that it has been hard  
to differentiate.

St. Louis suffered woefully with  
great loss in life. Memphis-Brown  
had a "hell of a tear up with over  
a thousand killed. West Kansas  
city got unmercifully tore up,  
Omaha got its awful share, but  
proportionately Chester Brown  
suffered five times as much as  
all those put together in one  
and all.

This was not presented to  
to the world because of the  
awful conditions which precluded  
the further dissemination of the  
news. The strange thing about the  
disaster was that the wild destruction  
of Chester Brown was kept record from  
the world for never days or more

this  
brown  
mo-  
lets  
President  
National

his com-  
and  
donor  
wood  
he would  
lord re-  
of his

at 1969

on lays  
richest

ch now  
bled

cut off

to  
one of  
population

and  
at the  
States.

he air  
of words  
suffocant

myself  
in field  
it has  
than

3000 by the storm. for  
all wire, bridge and railroad com-  
munication was broken down or  
destroyed in the wrecking of all  
of it in its path. messengers had to  
go to Lincoln Nebraska, the  
State Capital to give out the first  
definite news of the disaster and  
that took time.

What can you expect when  
even now when all forms of  
communication annihilated by  
the onslaught of wind is not  
sufficient yet as live men can't  
yet get near the territory.  
And no railroad able to com-  
municate because of the des-  
troyed bridges.

But Chesterbrow has one  
feature. She wants it.  
She is absolutely  
upset. her home suff. suff.  
dreadful. there is this.

sewerage system her electric  
light plant her water works  
system are totally destroyed  
beyond recovery even which  
was very unusual and  
most astonishing the power

3003  
urging the citizens in securing  
financial assistance that is desper-  
ately needed. The ~~indemnity~~ has

has all been torn up 3001  
or away by the storm and the  
streets are mere mud roads. The  
sidewalks are gone. All of the  
houses mostly of the dwellers  
and working men have been torn  
into scattered debris or swept down  
the streets by the violence of  
the winds.

With no desire to make com-  
parison that would in anywise  
minimize the recent seriousness  
of other cities long ago torn up  
by tornadoes the statement is  
justified after many rescuers  
coming to Chesterbrow that none  
of those cities whose names were  
previously mentioned, or others not  
mentioned, suffered in any degree  
comparable to Chesterbrow put  
together as one. One might walk  
through the streets of those cities.

In Chesterbrow it had  
been necessary to climb. The  
way the wreckage was it is  
a real miracle the

people were able to salvage  
it all into huge lumber  
piles. Even door and window sash

this  
brown  
me-  
lets  
President  
National  
has com-  
and  
done  
used  
he would  
ford re-  
of his  
at 1917  
own lays  
richest  
re  
ch now  
also  
cut off  
to  
ers of  
reputation  
and  
at the  
States.

he air  
of wads  
supported  
mud  
it till  
at his  
hor

3002 were in neat tall  
files. All picture frames on-  
tacks with beautiful pictures  
were saved, but all type of  
furniture or any kind of house-  
hold goods were beyond of as  
beyond salvaging.

Every one of four bridges  
connecting the Northwest, north  
northeast and west was had  
been swept away and the huge  
east bridge previously mentioned  
was still a shambles.

The Mayor made a voluntary  
statement to the Tillman Governor  
in which he stated that the  
property loss and the loss of  
life in Chesterbrook was greater  
in his opinion than that suffered  
on a dozen big part tornado  
disasters put together especially  
with the great number of child-  
ren who disappeared with  
the upper part of the Cornment  
with no trace of them still  
not found. He concluded his  
statement with this:

"The present paper is all  
drawn up with a view of

3003  
assisting the citizens in securing  
financial assistance that is desper-  
ately needed. The undersigned has  
no interest in any way and this  
statement is unsolicited.

In desperation the Chesterbrook  
Relief Committee headed by me  
still considered the advisability  
of appointing a committee to President  
Wilson and ask Government National  
aid.

Before taking final action this com-  
mittee telephoned the Governor, and  
on his advice I had abandoned  
the project. The Governor assured  
me and the Committee that he would  
do everything possible to afford re-  
lief to the stricken people of his  
old home town.

This horrid month of August 1917  
will never be forgotten.

Had to say Chesterbrook lays  
in the Centre of one of the richest  
farming communities in the  
Central West, yet so much now  
burned up. It has unrivalled  
school facilities which is cut off  
by the lost bridges. Its  
manufacturing interests were of  
international importance and reputation  
now wiped out. Its financial  
institutions have stood at the  
head in all the United States.  
Where are they now?

Some whiff of the air  
I'll say I have a lot of work  
about it but I'm not supposed  
to use that kind of language.

Chesterbrook disaster is still  
unfathomable worse than any other  
town city or town put together.

3004. Chestertown is in tears and appealing. Chestertown needs help and needs it at once. The general opinion is first that the city would recover in a few months from what the tornado did. was completely shattered after the Committee had time to make a tour of the city and see for themselves what the damage had been before all the wreckage that could be salvaged was stacked up.

The plea to the newspaper men not to paint the picture of the tornado disaster "so black" was changed to a frantic appeal to place the exaction before the world.

A square after ~~hundreds~~ squares of houses had been wiped out all the people remaining have been completely ruined.

All business houses had either been swept away or crippled so badly that they will never be able to resume operations.

Nearly all of the population is without a cent in the world and no real place to call home.

The only work possible for the male population is employment in the Street Cleaning Department.

No city or town ever before was devastated like Chestertown. It is the hardest hit city ever before.

The Secretary of War and head of the national military government and many others who spent several days in Chestertown and other towns devastated by towns and also Omaha say while the loss of property

property and lives was unusually large, especially St. Louis Chestertown was the worst of any of them put together - you can't make the appeal too strong. The condition is too depressing to talk about. Every survivor in the city is hard hit. Money is what we need and bad. The city is far worse than at first comprehended. ~~as~~ Even the Mayor of Omaha said that ~~no~~ tornado hit city has suffered nothing like Chestertown.

There is no comparison between any of the cities. Every house in Chestertown was totally demolished. Many hundreds upon hundreds of lives were wiped out. The Sacred Heart Convent at a distance looks like some strange type of shipwreck battered by the sea. The children and the upper parts will never be recovered. Men who had plenty a week ago found themselves seven days after the tornado without a thing in the world.

Many factories are ruined for all times and all stores are no more. All the people thrown out of work will find it impossible to get along unless they go elsewhere for employment. I hope the people of the country realize that Chestertown has passed through the worst tornado disaster in the history of the world.

The Chester Brown Relief Committee after the talk with the Governor has the following letter mailed to him:

To the Hon Governor Springfield Illinois

Dear Sir: Our telephone message from you was the most encouraging

3006 encouraging message that has  
yet come to the people of this stricken  
city. Our community of 20,000 survivors  
is frustrated. Deserving reports do  
indicate to us that other cities  
have suffered greatly in the past  
especially Omaha but we can con-  
ceive no conditions worse than  
those that now confront us. In the  
judgment of the Mayors of Chesterbourn and  
So. Falls and of other cities who  
have visited under the past  
stricken cities the property loss  
in Chesterbourn is greater in  
actual amount than in any of the  
other tornado stricken cities all put  
together.

The judgment is confirmed by  
many newspaper men. The tornado  
is a tornado ran wild in its  
course, all buildings and factories  
are wiped out blow in the world  
could the tornado do this? But  
this is what it did. It ruined  
totally the sewerage system street  
paving, pulled fire department hydrants  
out of the streets and wiped out the  
water plants.

All the four bridges spanning  
the wide river are gone and  
the one east is totally demolished  
demolished out of shape.

Our great industries are wiped  
out. The final loss will never  
be estimated. The loss of lives  
is believed to be eight thousand  
including the mysteriously missing  
children of the convent. This real-  
statement of facts will  
acquaint you with the needs  
of the city especially the  
survivors. We probably may  
never recover and essentially

If we do it will be years as 3007  
you will realize that all our re-  
sources are wiped out. Chesterbourn  
needs help, no false pride can  
restrain this appeal. We want you  
to know. We want the world to know.  
Most respectfully yours,

Chesterbourn Relief  
Committee. Henry Dager -  
Desmond James Homan  
Director of Public Safety,  
Ray Dugan President Chamber of  
Commerce."

The Mayor of St. Louis also  
sent a letter to the Governor  
explaining the Chesterbourn situa-  
tion. The Mayor arrived in  
Chesterbourn in August 21. In this  
letter to the Governor he said:

"The undersigned has not been  
able to make any estimate of the  
damage but it is evident the city  
is almost wiped out. Food and  
clothing is being received in large  
quantities but no financial aid  
has been forthcoming. The  
people have salvaged the wreckage  
in a low row of lumber piles  
but are refusing to sell any.

It is understood the city has  
been able to appropriate \$5,000  
which sum is to be applied  
to clearing up the city since the  
wreckage is removed. This amount  
is only a small fraction of  
what is needed.

The thousands of tents sent  
by the War Department within  
a few short hours after  
word of the tornado reached



3008 the Federal Authorities in Washington the millions of dollars given with a free hand on every section of the country the great acts of kindness and the heroic deeds of the wheat field fire fighters performed by men and tiers in all stations without urging the ingenuities shown by military men, policemen and citizens should all be written down in the records a worthy of being remembered in the minds of all true Americans.

With for instance but a real good Mayor would have conceived the idea which is put into effect as soon as the thought was born of printing an official newspaper in So Salle to convey to the people of the Country information about conditions and carry out directions and instructions to the militarymen, volunteer policemen and rescue workers.

Such a paper or bulletin is or was issued under the direction of the Mayor from the So Salle newspaper plant in So Salle which for a time became practically the executive headquarters for the city State and Government.

And in the hours of need the Mayor with the hand of a trained newspaper writer had set down and his own signature sent to the world a story of the tornado conditions which spread like far flung strings of the country and brought relief to many many thousands whose very all had been

taken from them by the cruel whirlpool of the air - 3009

The immeasurable catastrophes from Freeport, So Salle and all the way past

It is still firmly believed the inadequacy of engineering work of the course of the railroad along the side of the Magnolia river and the strange long formation of Chestertown and formation of the houses are given as the cause that the turst left on a bee line cause and not zigzag as tornadoes usually do.

It even would not even lift up on leaps and springs but stayed down and in one part of Chestertown whirled so fast that it could not move forward for five minutes and sucked every thing away. It was close to the Sacred Heart convent that it did this.

Truly for that territory it didn't get stuck there.

The position of the filaments had nothing to do with this crazy wild cat tornado the director of the Observatory of the University of Cincinnati says since he says is at a loss to determine the cause of this tornado which ran so wild and its beyond the field of observation.

"So far" said Professor Porter the position of any of the filaments has not been at all found to have anything to with the tornado he says and so unusual to come in August.

Even the sun spots if there were any have nothing to do with the two record breaking Chestertown that caught the wild cat tornado between them although many drastic



3010 experiments have been made along this line. It seems very plausible but so far science has been unable to trace any such connection. The wild cat tornado came at a time to during mid-summer when severe storms are due.

We do not always have cyclonic storms during midsummer. But when we do they are the worst of all. And however also, it is the end of the year and they are usually expected. Very often too in the midsummer the worst thunderstorms of the year occur. But at this time tornadoes are rare. The change from a too cool change up north west we rushing into a hot wave in this territory naturally caused a most severe kind of readjustment which brought on the two severe twin thunderstorms with the tornado forming between.

This readjustment happened at this time to be more drastically severe than ever known before. And it was followed by an eight day awfully hot and dry spell during the log country side fire.

Science can offer no reason for this situation. One point that strikes me as peculiar is that the condition of the railroad course and river are such that they would not let the winter run off its course and should all do it to do so much damage. It looks as if something is wrong with our river engineering. I understand that the great whole sale damage from frequent part 3 amere

was due to the course of river and railroad so line, making the tornado run amok. Professor Porter lays the fault of the great damage done and the loss of life to the carelessness of man rather than to the fickleness and caprice of old mother nature.

In various ways men served the public in a large way all through the territories from Chester Brown, even as far as Kansas men tramped the country side along this tornado path looking for traces of the missing children sent messages and delivered orders for the militia and the chief executives of the state a service that did no good.

Not once in all that long vigil did they falter seeking bits of information for the Governor and the Mayor of Chester Brown and So. Haller to Kansas. Kansas and lie on to some Haute time after time they searched the country side rounded rivers and dals of the state for rights of the missing victims of a right days, and the search is still on. They still do not found. What in the world did the tornado do to them, Had they been in their school room on the street floor at that time this would not have happened.

It was hard and dangerous work days and nights. Hours were long and accomadation what they happened to be. There was neither lagging nor complaining. Men on duty slept in the fields or roads after long hours in the desperate search and so to

3012 report report the same  
uncomfortable and dangerous tasks. Even  
the rivers did not have no missing  
persons. And among the waiting people  
men women and children were  
now frozen.  
The tented city for these people  
was who would not go home grew  
from time to time as emergency  
and ample provisions was provided  
for the stay of all while in the  
camp.

Each tent accommodated only five  
persons but because of the crowded  
conditions it was necessary in many  
instances to put more than this  
number in a tent until others  
arrived.

Many of these waiting men anxious  
people who found their way into  
the improvised city came from a  
score of Eastern cities. To augment  
the care of those whom the storm  
made childless with a prospect of  
being indefinitely without shelter  
additional refugee stations were also  
established in various sections of  
So. Halle.

In the beginning the school  
buildings were used for the purpose  
but these of course soon would  
have to be abandoned for the  
resumption of school sessions in  
September. The tent for the  
shelter of the three bereaved people  
were sent by the War Department  
and from the headquarters of the  
Illinois National Guard.

This disaster has placed  
the State of Illinois in the  
position of facing the largest  
problem of reconstruction and  
rebuilding it has ever met.  
Public service corporations were  
desperately hard hit. Many

counties are staggered by 3013  
losses and municipalities have  
losses doubled or quadrupled. Indicat-  
ion of the situation this part of  
Illinois lost forty six bridges  
that it will cost two million or more  
to replace. A similar situation exists  
in other Counties differing only in degree.  
This does not include the damage  
done to highways culverts and little  
bridges.

It is estimated it would cost two  
hundred million dollars to restore the  
bridges claimed by the worst of all  
tornadoes cities villages townships and  
districts must shoulder the load.

Our State Governor said that in his  
opinion nearly all the damage  
done by the tornado would fall upon  
the railroads.

A high official of the New Michigan  
Central said it would require  
three million dollars to restore  
bridges on the Illinois Central also  
and that normal transportation  
facilities need not be looked for  
until late next summer or  
late fall of next year.

Besides bridges however the railroad  
of Illinois lost whole terminal  
systems on the cities destroyed by  
the tornado along with communication.

Even the Pennsylvania Railroad  
branch line to St. Louis and the  
Alton suffered in proportion.

Tramway lines in the state  
were cut to bits. Bridges disappeared  
tracks were pulled away and  
enormous damage was done.

3014 The estimate of the Governor that the Illinois property loss by the tornado would exceed that of Saint Louis. Omaha Kansas city proved to have been modest.

The State loss was not less than nine hundred million dollars. An odd feature of the loss was that so little of it was insured. Most buildings were insured only against fire. Therefore the state the eighty eight counties and so Dallas to Chester have are face to face with a most discouraging problem in which the one ray of hope in the traditional capacity of the American to surmount all obstacles and difficulties.

A very disastrous phase of this tornado history in which which relates in which to the mismaner in which the news of the disaster could not reach the public until it came from Lincoln Nebraska. And then it was slow coming.

Practically all the tornado news which was given to Decatur newspapers for many hours after the tornado's horror emanated from Lincoln and Omaha and Kansas city and Rock Island and Malone cities over only one small telephone wire secured by a Peoria newspaper.

From this point the news and many official messages were disseminated by customary methods.

For instance into telegraph circuit was made up to reach Chicago consisted of telegraph lines, from Cincinnati to St. Louis to Memphis even to Dallas Texas to Denver Colorado and back from Denver

back to Chicago. Toledo 3815 though in Ohio received its news with information from the stretch section of northern Illinois by way of Cincinnati through Nashville to New Orleans to New York to Detroit and back to Toledo.

In some cases a circuit was established by using a telephone line to complete a telegraph circuit and yet it was not for a week after the wild cat tornado that some not full telegraph service was established, from So. Salt, Ottawa and Chesterbourn and also much further east beyond Jannell no communication of any kind still could not be recovered in any way.

Why? because of conditions left by the wild storm the locomotives could not get into the stretch territory and where it could be reestablished it was with the greatest difficulties because the log Rock Island bridge was demolished as described before several times all wires snapped or gone or wrapped around the trunk of broken trees like thread wound around a spool and poles blown away or heavy cable stretched across the river was gone. Log cable spools wrapped in cable swept away or rolled for miles and other freaks of the storm. The task to inspect the ruined iron bridge across the river from Chesterbourn proved most Herculean and dangerous because it and even the track of the road was absolutely twisted out of all conformation by the storm.

This bridge alone is a most frightful economic loss to the railroad. The eras also of forest destruction by the storm are manifest and

3016 and comparisons can be readily made between former twisters and the present one for this duration has occurred within our times especially the grand parks in So. Ball and Chesterlain and the horrid destruction of all the expensive zoo animals snakes and birds.

All birds that were the most valuable that were the high economic value and very rare kind are no more and the monkeys disappeared like the children of the Sacred Heart convent. The birds also. The more thought of this most unmeasurable disaster is intolerable and most heart breaking.

And perhaps all this loss of life and destruction might have been avoided. The city twenty eight miles long and seven blocks wide along both river and along the river and railroad is believed to have caused the strange bee line of the twister.

The very system which which has been applied for the shaping of the city and being along the course of the railroad and river has been most severely criticised and the tornado horror of August 1913 justify that critical criticism.

One man went to Indianapolis says he predicted the disaster that has come to Chesterlain and other places. I have been repeatedly to the board of works to the City Engineer to the other city officials. He said "and told them we would see a tornado disaster at Chesterlain if crossroad were not made through that city and across the railroad and the river."

I have been told by tornado experts that twisters don't like 3017 crossroads crossroads and avoid them. I never read of any tornado passing through where there are elevated crossroads.

all any one could do is see no crossroads were made. Now see what the tornado has done. The authorities said it would be accomplished but delayed too long. I hope in Chesterlain have been uneasy after reading of the Chicago tornado Easter Sunday March 23 1931.

The lesson of the tornado horror has been a most bitter one but if in the end it results in the adoption of plans that in the future will make safe the lives of people and their possessions by making the embankments crossroads the price paid for the lesson will not seem so high. I have spoken.

Of course tornadoes which have caused tremendous havoc at any place are absolutely inevitable, but ones might believe could be kept (but) would not be so.

The lack of course of adequate information makes it impossible to suppose for the commission to specify at what towns or small cities the construction of crossroads would result in benefits commensurate with the cost.

In most cases with a human lesson concerning the cause of twisters and the physical conditions causing them to form or whether there could exist crossroads sites suitable to afford the maximum necessary good results.

3018 The extent of the damage caused by the tornado on other different towns has not as a rule been estimated at all nor have the most drastic investigations been successful to ascertain the relations of the cost to the benefits that would be derived from the construction of crossroad systems.

The commission is of the opinion that each case must be considered on its merits after a most drastic thorough investigation of all the facts and strongly urge the necessities and necessity of careful studies of crossroad tornado resistance construction.

It is said the Federal Government has no constitutional authority to even engage in works intended primarily for crossroad construction or other development.

To activities are limited to the control and promotion of such a project project and on it works incident there for. The Commission is of the opinion that cross road construction on the outskirts of towns cities or villages is mainly a local problem and the work of constructing such type of crossroads should be the first instance to be undertaken by the minor political subdivisions but that the Federal Government may very properly participate with the localities in carrying out such work. In crossroad building places where a very substantial and necessary improvement to such construction will result.

Unless some such policy as this is adopted and adhered to there is grave danger that the Federal Government may go outside the proper jurisdiction and become involved in enormous

expenditures which are for local benefit. It has sometimes been urged that the Federal Government should undertake work for crossroad construction at the level of all cities and towns which even happens to cross a State boundary line. It is clear that in such cases if building of crossroads is not concerned the Federal Government should have nothing to do with crossroad construction.

A method is provided in the constitution by which the State may co-operate for this purpose.

The extent to which the Federal Government should participate in the expense of constructing a crossroad system on the outskirts of every town city or village in the tornado belt should be determined in each particular case by an investigation of Government experts possessing the necessary training and facilities for undertaking a study of this nature.

If such investigation show that the promotion of constructing crossroads will as it is claimed turn a tornado away but as it is said it cannot cross it and shows the number and costs of crossroads for this purpose, the Federal Government will have a satisfactory basis for sharing in the expense of constructing a larger system intended also for preventing big fires.

In this connection it should also be noted that the construction of such crossroads will indirectly benefit traffic but this alone is not sufficient reason for the participation of the Federal Government in crossroad projects.

Bills to carry out the recommendations of such type of crossroads commission as to this sort of crossroad construction and other works are expected to be introduced early in Congress and will be considered by the Roadway and other Committees in the House and the Pathway Committee in the Senate.

The indications are that the Commission is a denial to the authority of the Federal Government to deal directly with this hope of blocking a tornado, onward course, or making it turn aside will be ignored in the proposed legislation.

On the specific question of constructing such crossroads to turn aside tornadoes if possible the Commission said:

"The commission has given special consideration to the feasibility of the construction of such crossroads on the south and southwest of town or city or on isolated roads also.

From the information obtained it appears that such a plan has greater prospects of success here than in any other part of the United States. The caused every time caused by tornadoes in the central part of the country are or has been enormous but none of all put together can equal the Chester Brown terrific hour.

In the second place investigations shows that a large number of unusually good steep crossroads sites exist in parts

of this country and no tornado 3021  
so far has ever struck around there,  
as far as known.

It was said Morris Allavar Dighton Country or National hydrographer of the road and railroad right of way geological survey has worked out a plan of impounding crossroads at every entrance to a town village or city for the hoped for turning aside of vicious tornadoes which will be made the basis of one of the bills to be introduced in Congress.

He proposes that the crossroads be operated primarily for turning aside of tornadoes about November 1 but not for traffic, a study of tornadoes shows that eight per cent of them occur between March and June a few sometimes in midsummer some in February and December especially in southern states in winter or fall.

Those occurring in the summer periods sometimes are a hundred percent more severe and damaging especially if they hit big places such as St. Gall, Chester town Chestershire and so on.

Government road engineers say that had some crossroads within system been in existence the awful catastrophe of more than a week ago would probably have been averted.

It never been heard of a tornado trying to pass over a high narrow crossroads. But crossroads level with the ground, won't keep.

The Illinois Kansas Nebraska Ohio and Indiana communities decided a couple of years ago to adopt this Dighton plan.

3031 They proposed to carry it out by bond issues and asked the Federal Government because of the benefits which would result to cross roads construction to co-operate by bearing a share of the expense and by authorizing a corps of road engineers to construct and operate the system of cross roads at sufficient successful places.

They urged prompt action because the most desirable cross roads sites were in danger of being slowly appropriated by private capital for other power development.

So far Congress did nothing with this appeal.

The roadway commission says that the use of cross roads for the turning aside of waters is feasible if the cross roads are of sufficient capacity.

Thus far "says the report" the construction and improvement of cross roads in this country, except ones level with the ground, has been almost solely for the purpose of it really happens as they say to turn aside whirling hellos.

The other purposes have been almost entirely disregarded.

The Government has pursued the cheapest policy of construction of cross roads, but it is time the commission says for a revolution of this policy.

The combined benefits of turning aside waters from additional power development and from a more uniform widening of the roads may warrant the

adoption of a system of cross roads which if intended for any one of those purposes alone would not be practicable. That the country is wholly beyond measure is indicated by the action of national and local organizations and bodies which following the awful tornado wheat field fire horror called upon the Government to adopt full measures which would safeguard the cities and the people.

Government experts who make a study of floods tornadoes say there was no direct relationship between the terrific tornado that swept Omaha in the closing week of March 23 1919 and of the most disastrous tornado that time up to date, Freeport, Chesterbrook, Chester and Genesee on that fatal August 15 of the same year.

The authorities are of one opinion regarding the August 15 horror. That in a general way it was due to an excessive fall of rain in the thunderstorms between it formed coupled with the fact that August had been abnormally hot and a cold front from the north had collided with the hot wave too suddenly. "Another person stated:

"The cross road system will not. Tornadoes can run up and down no matter where they go. Trying the cross road plan will only store up disaster for the future. In time of crazily raging tornadoes they are liable to even tear up the cross roads as we did in Ohio with all its resultant damage and loss of



3032 Nothing not a fullsize even  
can restrict the progress of the  
wild tornado as such hillsides have  
actually been torn away. Facts  
and figures prove this more  
distinguishing men to the contrary  
notwithstanding. Some of our greatest  
most violent tornados have occurred  
in midsummer.

And its nothing extraordinary  
for a tornado to be between two  
thunderstorms. But there find one  
unusually strong because they draw  
their moisture from the two as  
the large black tornado cloud usually  
connects with the two thunderstorm  
clouds. A survey of the river,  
the railroad lines, a path road  
between the Rock Island and  
the city of Charleston as it is  
still now was made. Robert Herbert  
Kauffman, Hoffmann and Be Thomas  
were road and city engineers.

They found that in addition  
to the damage already known that  
one thousand one hundred and thirty  
five bridge crossing the river  
east of Charleston Brown over the Rock  
Island road.

All of the big iron framework  
and many large girders had  
been twisted like screws. The  
bridge was broken in two and the  
two middle ends are down in  
the water. The west and east  
ends of the bridge had been fas-  
tened to the very strong railroad  
bed. The twist tore up the soil  
bed with the bridge.

Even on the bridge or what is  
left of it still hanging back  
clothing, people, clothing, and  
a few dead horses. The bridges

abutments have been swept  
away by the force of the storm.  
It can be possible the cause  
of the river, the two roads and the  
strange long formation of Charleston  
may be responsible for the  
line of the storm, but that  
remains to be proven. It also  
made a lee line from its source  
and caught between the two  
thunderstorms may have caused this  
as it was forced to follow the  
two storms which also went on  
a straight lee line. It was an  
act of God it missed Kanabha  
as that city was out of its direct  
path.

The storm passed twenty miles  
north of it. That study just  
related and the disaster to it. Also  
the State of Illinois in the position  
and largest problem of replacing  
and re-financing it has even in  
all history even met.

Because of the destruction of  
the bridge all Northern Illinois  
railroad and public corporations  
were or are fatally hit. Many  
counties are desperately staggered  
by the destruction of this  
immense bridge and many  
families have burdens ten  
times doubled or quadrupled.

The loss to the bridge  
is incalculable. Though some  
claim it might be fifty million  
dollars.

It is not understood how  
so powerful a gully could  
be wiped out. The iron  
flowing is gone.



3034 The construction bridge engineers had been questioned about the building of this bridge and they had claimed it was made from the strongest iron material that could be procured. They absolutely believed nothing not even the strongest tornado could ever even slightly injure the structure.

A high official of the Rock Island railroad which has corps of engineers in the state was quoted as saying that the bridge could never be restored or replaced no matter what expenditure of money could or would be required, as there are no more such material, and that normal transportation facilities would have to be constructed in that location on a new and northward road. It is probable it would not take a full year.

Besides the loss of this once magnificent and beautiful bridge the whole track route was destroyed by the twist ripping up miles of the road bed along with all types of communications.

These losses cannot be at all financed. Every piece of material and other construction goods from four states which had been brought and loaded for the construction of this bridge disappeared like the children of the convent. Only the dreadfully tangled mass of the bridge remains.

An odd feature of the loss was that the bridge was not insured against destruction.

The state and eighty-nine counties, and the cities

through which the Rock Island 3035 runs are faced with the most discouraging problem on all record because of the destruction of the bridge, and the road bed and tracks in which there is no ray of hope for no part of the nation can surmount all this obstacle. The state itself lost not less than five hundred million dollars from the tornado.

All of the iron flowing of the bridge is missing. Not one particle of it was found in the river. Even the railroad tracks across the large bridge is gone, and the bridges strong iron like railings.

Resolved by the council that the chief of public service and the chief bridge engineer be requested to submit a report showing so far as possible the cause of such a bridge being wiped out by this tornado including in such reports an estimate of the damage if possible to the bridge and the fifty miles of railroad and the condition of the steel rails and wooden ties generally, and if possible to secure information giving the total loss to the various industries because of the destruction of the bridge and that length of railroad running east and west.

This was unanimously adopted.

The extent of damage caused by the tornado on the bridge on the east and west bank tracks of the railroad has not as yet been determined and cannot be accurately ascertained nor have the most rigid investigation that was made been able to ascertain the relation of the facts that ever would be known. It is not even remembered what the

3036

construction of the bridge was, the commission is of the opinion that each case must be considered on its merits after a thorough investigation of all the facts and strongly urges the necessity of careful studies recently made by the So. Falls investigators of the mysterious disappearance of the great St. Vincents Church in Chesterbrown and the children and three quarters of the convent.

This tornado has caused the most enormous frightful economic loss on all record and all roads leading out of So. Falls without word are still blocked. The country pipe to Kankakee is under the stream house debris all the telephone and telephone wires are gone with the poles and nothing can point out where this beautiful Illinois thoroughfare is packed.

A most distressing feature to be noticed in the district north of the river adjacent to the north side of the river between So. Falls and Kaneville and all the way north of Kankakee in the devastated farm lands. The tornado seemed to have done its worst here.

Barns and outhouses and dwelling on high windmills and silos are gone in the wide spread spectacle of destruction the fields are rendered bare and deeply plowed up by the hard winter the worst ever witnessed done by a winter.

Chesterbrown to Kaneville were considered no longer on the map. The Mayor of Chesterbrown said:

"This is a thousand times as bad as the St. Louis tornado. This is the worst tornado disaster in all history."

3037

Nearly a month ago Henry David Joseph 331 W. Webster Lane Chicago who was an experienced lumber camp manager went to Chesterbrown and began work there as manager of a lumber concern telling his wife of the magnitude of the long city and asking his wife with her three little girls and one boy to rent their home and prepare for removal to this beautiful north Illinois city.

Mrs. Joseph as well as her children loved Chicago and were in no hurry to get away. All she said she believed something would happen that she and her four children would not have to move. The husband kept writing for them to spend August in Chesterbrown and he became suddenly ill of the summer grip and returned home last week.

Mr. Joseph was soon better and personally directed the packing of his house hold goods for ship ment to Chesterbrown. Not having obtained a house there he temporarily stored his goods in Joliet and the family was to go to Chesterbrown the day of the wild cat tornado but on that day it was impossible to get out of the city.

When Mr. and Mrs. Joseph read of the Chesterbrown tornado they quickly decided to take their goods out of storage and return to their home. Mr. Joseph said the lumber camp company where he worked was no more all the lumber was gone and that he could resume no summer operations. Two large timbers found lodged in

3038 he had brought to that  
Swimber Company office and  
the big heavy desk full of  
office merchandise in locked drawers  
were found by rescuers amid the  
wreckage of large dwelling at  
Lene Street, Indiana. Some tornado  
Indeed.

There was one man who lives  
in one of the houses missed by the  
tornado. He said to us:  
"I am from Norwayham from  
Norwayham. It is my wife and  
two boys. We have often been  
near the big whirlpool near  
Safaden and on the high hill  
of Helsingborg as the clouds

It would take a lot to describe  
the intense incident by that awful  
whirlpool. We Norwayham call  
the tornado as Mos hoe - storm  
when it is the  
tornado tore through the city  
here it did a terrible sound  
like that maelstrom but very  
much louder. I'll explain  
the best I can.

I was sitting in my room  
by the window watching the  
passing by of the first all night  
all moon thunderstorm. I thought  
it stopped thundering and raining  
it did not actually clear up  
but remained dark and cloudy.

There was an unusual dead  
calm and the high humidity  
was very oppressive.  
Two hours and a half  
passed and it began to grow  
darker and darker until it  
was so dark that I couldn't  
see to read.

It had been raining  
again just a little and

the gradual darkening of 3038  
the sky and the frenzied  
convulsion of the cloud hearing  
boiling, hissing and gurgling in  
gigantic and innumerable voices  
all while whirling and plunging  
on to an eastward with a rapidly  
rapidity which clouds never seem  
to do before made all of us and  
those in other parts of the house  
very apprehensive.

My wife and little boys  
were watching the crazy motions  
of the clouds and talking  
excitedly about it when we noticed  
at a distance a humming sound  
high up mingled with sounds  
lower down like howling of  
packs of wolves and the moaning  
of a vast herd of buffaloes  
combined.

I did not know what  
caused it but our house trembled  
at its very foundation and it  
seemed as if the ground rocked  
as if there was a slight earth-  
quake.

The humming sound and  
the two other sounds grew  
in volume and closer until we  
recognized them as a mass in  
the air and down towards the  
ground the most fearful  
and fearful sounds I ever  
heard. After seeing all the horror  
that occurred I never want to  
see or hear such a sound  
again.

Then I perceived the whirling  
character of the darkening  
cloud was rapidly changing  
into some sort of a current  
which moved to the eastward.  
Even while we gaze the  
swirling current seemed to acquire

3639. a monster our strong churning  
velocity. Each moment added to  
its terrifying speed - to its headlong  
impetus. The whole length of  
the five minutes the whole length of  
the city to the south west of us was  
lashed by the most unmerciful  
fury of flying debris as thick as  
clouds in all directions. At an  
interval between the distant  
Pulaski street and the location of  
the Grand Hotel. The main  
main upon held to being at  
main upon held to being at

To introduce the scene another  
radical alteration. The general  
swirl of the cloud was growing  
somewhat more and the whole  
whirlpool one disappeared,  
the cloud changed  
toward the center while prodigious  
cloud cloud like  
the of the line. It became  
apparent where none had been  
before.

At the same time within an eight  
the whole of Chestnut street  
with of swirling rushing  
clouds of flying wreckage and the  
more was terrible.

There long narrow streaks of  
cloud at length had spread out  
to a great distance and in  
entering into combination look  
into themselves the gyrations of  
of the subdued voices and  
seemed to form the germ  
of something of another another  
stage at more vast vast

Suddenly suddenly  
very suddenly I saw it  
by a bright flash of  
lightning a long cloud  
of acicular form was rushing  
forward in a circle of more

than a mile of in diameter,  
pushing a wide whirling dense  
cloud before it and that cloud of horrid  
whirlpool. The outer edge of the  
while some distant upwards was  
represented by a broad umbrella up-  
down belt of swirling of debris of all  
kind all as particles of this being flung  
outward in that shape by the terrific funnel  
where no other so far as the eye  
could observe it by the flashes of  
lightning was a smooth shining and  
jet black whirling funnel cloud swaying  
to one side and the other.

It was not straight up to the main  
cloud but tilted like the apparatus  
of a vacuum cleaner inclined at an  
angle of some forty-five degrees  
speeding around at electric motor  
speed dizzily round and round with  
a change swagging sweltering  
motion.

It sent forth to the hear the  
same appalling noise half shriek  
half roar like the Maelstrom but  
ten times louder.

Even if the night, the  
cataract of the Niagara had ten times  
the volume of water going over its  
brink it could not compare to that  
tumult, and yet added to the terrific  
don of the city being so wildly  
torn up I was so scared I trembled in  
my shoes my feet felt like caught in  
ice.

"Then" said at length to the  
man "that you say this tornado  
rounded like the great whirlpool  
of the Maelstrom?"  
"No it could not be termed" said he.  
"If the tornado and the whirlpool were  
side by side you could only hear the tornado"

3041. Of course we know very well  
that the Moskoe-strom, from the  
inland of Moskoe in the mid-way  
of course of the Moskoe-strom  
is scarcely equalled by the loudness  
and most characteristic catenact the  
noise being heard several leagues  
off. In the year 1645 early in  
the morning of Perseus's day  
Sunday it raged with such noise  
and impetuously that the very  
stones of the houses on the coast  
fell to the ground.  
Yet the yell that sometimes  
goes up to the heavens from the  
maelstrom I dare not attempt to  
describe. These tornadoes have never been  
heard of all that sound.  
So it true in Dange that this  
tornado was heard as far as  
Alton Del.<sup>24</sup>

keep thinking that the largest and strongest buildings of the line of resistance caught in the influence of that deadly attraction could resist it as little as a feather in a hurricane and must disappear badly and at once like the most of the Sacred Heart Convent and the great St. Vincent Church and its Rectory building and others by it.

now  
factory aspect  
The idea generally received is that  
the tornado as well as the great unusually  
severe thunders torm east and west of  
it have no other cause than the  
collision of waves of colder air from the  
northwest rising and fulling at place  
and reflux of the heated air of the  
August hot course against a ridge of  
thunder clouds in an unusual turmoil which  
confined the chiller air so that it  
precipitated itself low down into the  
heated air like a cataract and thus  
the higher the heated air rose the  
deeper was the fall of the colder air  
to be and the natural result of  
all was a whirl pool or vortex of the  
mightiest on all record the prodigious  
ruiction of which is sufficiently known  
as a one thousand a mile half  
in an wind puffed. It must have been  
that strong, especially to sweep  
all of 3 or 4 mile totally away with

3043 the annihilation of its total population. Of all places I am able to believe was hardest hit. Many believe that the center of this mighty maelstrom tornado had the explosive force of 5 million tons of dynamite. This opinion in itself was the one to which I had gazed at the wiped out part and the remains of the convent my full imagination most readily assented, and mentioning to the chief of the investigators I was rather much surprised to hear him say that it was the new almost universally entertained of the subject of all the people I nevertheless was not his own.

As to the former notion he confessed his inability to comprehend it and here I agreed with him, for however conclusive on paper it becomes altogether very hard to understand and even absurd amid the thunder of the wild west tornado.

As I had watched the progress of the tornado in its headlong impetuosity the whole section of the city in its path was flung into the most ungovernable fury of clouds of wreckage with a pandemonium conglomeration of deafening sound.

Then the vast stretch of houses reared and scared into a thousand clouds of conflicting wreckage all the city in its path hurled into a frenzied convulsion of horror, gyrating, to yaguntis and innumerable voices of flying wreckage and all whirling

and plunging and rushing on to the eastward with a rapid motion which wreckage never assumed before. The noise of the wreckage hurt my ear drums and more of it as far as we were was flung all about us breaking many windows of the cherty surrounding houses and spraying all over the territory.

In a minute or so a second severe thunderstorm came with blinding fury and with wind burst upon us in all its fury. There were continual crashes of thunder louder than I ever heard before and rain fell in blinding torrents as thick as a four inches an hour of snow in a Yukon blizzard. It was a cloud burst for over two hours and a quarter and kept us in and we then could not see the tornado go off into the distance. Finally towards six o'clock the storm gradually let up and we learned first over the telephone that the full length and width of Chester town had in fact been wiped off the map all together.

Three or four to thousand out of 30000 were reported and 10000 more or less injured. Every survivor had totally lost all they possessed. I have read of many freakish things tornadoes do and after what I and my family seen it has to be believed the city was ten blocks wide. In all that width across what had been streets was thickly strewn with wreckage of what had been fine residences. Big wooden houses were either ripped around like tissue paper or lay wrecked bottom up or twisted and tumbled.

All house furnishings were scattered far and wide and in branches of what had been trees I saw several chairs a big wooden table a bare and empty cushion fastened in a tree.

3046 I could not count the number  
of dead cats and dogs - lying around,  
all telegraph and telephone wires  
gone, poles too. I saw lots of  
broken trees and running wires  
with bed clothing and all sorts of  
dry good stuff hanging on them and  
clothing that belonged to runs too.  
Desolation and ruin was everywhere,  
it was a terrifying sight, yet back  
building no matter what size got  
it went than wooden buildings.

Even the walls of the surviving  
houses not hit by the storm had  
planks and trees driven through without  
damaging the houses. My own house had a huge  
long scantling driven straight  
the wooden wall into the kitchen.  
We did not yet remove it and it  
is above the floor near the  
ceiling.

This tornado did not jump over portions  
of the city on its path and then  
sweep down but remained crazily  
tearing along the ground all the  
way. All our electric wires were  
or are still down or swept away  
poles and all our telephones  
are I believe out of commission for  
good on our streets and sidewalks  
and even fire hydrants are  
ripped up, street car tracks gone  
and our sewers sucked inside out.  
By the way did you see what is  
left of that Great Sacred Heart  
Convent?

"I sure did and how!" answered.  
"Did you ever see the great Convent  
before the tornado wiped out the upper  
part and 3. razed the rest?"  
"I was in it, there were a  
number of the sisters I knew  
and whom I knew. I saw  
know Sister Clare in of the

I remember with a little girl whose  
name is Mildred Maxwell?

3047

When you know I had a high stant  
ing roof?

"Yes twenty feet with a broad flat top.  
"The roof" continued was made of the strongest  
material tougher than iron. It must be an  
awful powerful tornado to do what it did. Even all  
of the roof disappeared there is not the  
slightest trace of it whatever whatever"

At the near west end of the camp cities  
of Chester chure were now larger camps.  
Even Hotel in Sa Balla were crowded  
with these people

Mothers nursed their babies by gyping  
like fires on which nations were cooking  
while young children played about unhedging.  
In all these waiting people were clad  
in strange and many colored old and  
new garments, others were clothing of the  
rich and well to do. Rich and poor were  
mingled yet one could not tell who in the  
crowd of still waiting people might be  
real rich Chicagoan noble or a poor  
servant from their homes.

Misery over their loss of the disappeared  
children made comrades of them all and  
reduced them to one common level.

The Sa Balla Mayor said:  
"What fearful things have happened  
here. We are in the midst of such untold  
gony and anxiety all hotel will  
even soon be full and most of them  
are now.

We tell these people their children  
cannot be traced but they won't go away.

The women and elder girls seem  
to be suffering the most  
what shuddering under the recollection of  
what seemed a night more than actual.



3048 nearly many of the survivors of the frightful calamity have tried to picture in words of graphic intensity the one minute and thirteen seconds of record breaking horror and the moment of terror when the tornado exploded away the upper parts of the convent and the 3000 children with it.  
They recount the roar of the storm when hitting the convent.

Minutious destruction of the Sacred Heart convent and disappearance of the children.  
A graphic story of the disaster was told by a woman who had been brought to the Hospital on Charles Brown in a badly wounded condition.

The story was told to me.  
"Infernal is the only word that absolutely describes the fearful and terrifying scene" she said.  
The storm then was upon us out the park with the 300 animals and the tornado before hitting us rocked the house by its vibrating the ground with its awful force. Windows swayed and rattled and glass crashed to the floor. The next moment by its vibration I was violently thrown out of my bed to the floor.

I was half stunned but knew the only thing to do was to make my way out of door doors and flee to the northwest to get out of its path. The streets were filled; everybody had rushed out of their homes amid the incoming like hordes of the shrieks from storm terrified and we heard heart rending

appeals for help from the unfortunate. 3049 caught in their storm shattering homes or those in the distant streets overtaken in their flight. Coming winds in clouds of wreckage was flying far and wide in all directions making an indescribable dreadful confusion of loud sounds; and not one of my parties expected to escape alive.

My brothers and sisters were with me and in a frenzy of terror we groped our way through the streets northwest ward holding our own against the panic stricken people until we reached a place of comparative safety.

But this was not done before I was struck down and badly injured by a piece of furniture that was flying at me by the awful windstorm.

all along the street we were jostled by scores of fleeing people who after all unfortunately did not get out of the storm's path in time.

Suddenly the twister began to pass us with a terrifying roar and yell. It seemed to me this must mean the end of everything. We saw it strike the Sacred Heart convent with a crash that seemed to shake all Charles Brown.

I saw all the upper section of the west wing roof and all with the whole of its briny lumber disappear instantaneously away with the passing cloud of storm.

The whole of the upper part of the building and all who were in it were in a moment all gone. Not a single person not a shred of garment not a splash or splendor was seen again.

It was a most marvelous strongly built building. I don't know how a tornado could ever do that to a building so big and strong.

3056. I surely could believe that the tornado was so uncommonly strong for what had been left of the railroad line. Tracks were in many places curiously distorted and the ties ripped loose from the main railroad the same like fashion in which the remaining rails on the railroad were bent or twisted indicated a lateral force of the wild cat tornado.

One incident that I heard occurred and received evidence of. God knows only where this came from. A great thirteen foot high Sacred Heart statue was carried from where it had been scooped up from by the tornado and hurled with wicked violence through a hard thick cement pavement near the ruined Sacred Heart convent and buried deep in the ground. The cement pavement had been shattered into a thousand fragments.

It was dug up the next day where it was buried twenty feet. The singular fact is that when recovered after eight hours of digging it proved to be without a crack or scratch. I have heard nothing can break or scratch marble. The statue weight 200 900 pounds.

The best way we can describe a scene of which some survivors tried to tell the story is to give the narratives of a number of the survivors. From their several stories a coherent idea of the terrible scene can be formed. From the various accounts given of the terrible explosion by survivors taken from the wreckage of their home I select as a first example the following description by a badly injured woman.

I saw the beautiful Sacred Heart convent destroyed. It was blown out by one great cloud shadow. All the upper three floors and its inmates disappeared at once. The upper part of the building was blown to pieces then swept away. There was no warning.

all the upper part roof three floors 3057 of the building disappeared and there was hurling clouds on homes & old ruins. A crowd of immense size. The thousands of dogs howl and roar of wailing houses sounded like thousands of cannon. I saw it strike the convent roadside and take away all the three stories. It all vanished before our eyes and the air grew thick with clouds of debris from the houses.

The city was torn into big whirlpools of wreckage. A sister superior and a little girl were the only ones to escape though seriously injured.

They were taken out from the front of the convent.

Another eyewitness said:

It was a little before two o'clock on the afternoon of August 13 that the end came. I was not in its path when I noticed it was growing very dark when the ground trembled under my feet not as it does when the earth quakes but as though a terrible struggle was going on against something bent tearing along its surface.

The very heaven above in the dark darkness howled & screamed and yelled "bloody murder!"

A terror came upon me. It was quite dark. The air was dead about me so dead that the heaven of trees above moved.

The insane howling and vibrating yell grew very loud and near followed by a rending crashing grinding and alarming and all other sounds which I can only describe as sounding as though very hot of all the houses in the city was suddenly being shattered to pieces. It was deafening and the strange of flash of lurid light that accompanied it was blinding more than any lightning in the severest thunder storm I have ever seen.

It was like the sky was going down and there a fraction of a second before there had been a perfect calm. I felt my self drawn

3056.

3052 was a strange vehicle and I had  
to brace myself firmly. Then I  
saw the "kerosene of the skies" coming with  
the speed of an express train rushing  
by and I was drawn by the force of its  
strange attractive condition.

Oh God how it yelled, Transfixed I stood  
not knowing in what direction to flee.

7 looked towards the direction of the so called  
blewst current but saw nothing there but  
a great black awfully agitated cloud rising  
with an ungovernable fury of which mightiness  
it is impossible to describe.

It literally enveloped all the territory  
- there and reached high connecting with the  
cloud far above. It moved with a rapidity  
that made it impossible for anything to  
escape it from the cloud now came an in-  
describable roar that sounded as if all the  
masses of the world were in the most  
furious combat mingled with that awful  
howling and earthquake as an vibrating  
drowning shriek and yell

lightning played on an over-cast  
dark sky followed by a severe earth-quake  
thunder the result being that intense  
darkness was followed by light that seemed  
to be of mysterious power.

2. I was prevented from seeing the destruction  
by the very overwhelming cloud of debris and  
cloud of dust that shut off the view of  
the territory. It is impossible for me to  
tell how long I stood there and

Probably it was only a few seconds  
but it seemed longer. My impression  
that it now seems as though I should say

a spectacle for many minutes. As it was passing by where I stood, the enormous cloud was in the shape of a most terrible convulsion.

It was that territory seemed to be about 500' or  
1000' high in a minute and twenty  
seconds. Soon the shrieking howl passed  
on leaving behind it loud thunderous  
howls and yells. A long cloud of uprushing wreck-  
age followed it with a tremendous rattling grind-  
ing banging noise.

I don't know why but that last glimpse of the upper parts of the convent will stay with me just as long as I remember destroyed Chertashan and that will be long enough.

In another instant it was all over for all that part of the whole length and width of the building magnificent roof and all.

I called away with that awful cloud in waves. As I was looking at this astonishing scene all was gone. That all happened a long way inside of half a minute.

Debris from many other buildings was strewn around of what was left of the convent and that was a total wreck. I then took to shelter from the onslaught of rain that followed that terrible maelstrom of the air. What a tornado. I can still hear the maelstrom noises in my ears yet!

James Handbooks graphic story.

It seems desirable to add here the narrative of James Hendrick's summary of his ruined home since it gives a vivid and striking account to some of his personal experience of the frightful disaster with many details of interest not related by others.

We decided to go to the park to see the  
700 animals at one thirty that afternoon. Half an  
hour later that was the time when the  
city the park with all its expensive animal  
and the Board of East Convent and every  
thing else with them were all sent to hell  
in a minute and not ten seconds.

The park was crowded though after sunset  
when the sky was still dark and threatening  
I was standing by the tiger cage trying -

3050.

town  
what  
tracks  
totter  
walk  
where  
was  
of the

3054. To get him somewhat excited?  
was at the time looking at the sky  
towards the northwest at all, and it was  
getting strangely dark and a dog like howling  
from that direction. I really thought a number of  
dogs were making the uncommon noise.

But I guess most of the people were and  
some strangely uniformed men and the last time  
I heard him speak was when he shouted  
"Run for a park tunnel!"

I turned around toward the room and then  
I saw the change about which involved of alarm-  
ing the foolish people fascinated them.

Did you ever see the tide come into the  
Bay of Fundy? It rolls in waves, I hate the  
way the head of the black cloud rolled  
overhead. An awfully large shadow was on us  
in almost no time. But I saw it and heard a  
frightful noise from the center of it and in  
the same glass I saw that man near the  
park underground passage. Leaving himself  
to meet what coming as he saw he was  
much too late.

He was facing the strange yellow  
cloud with both hands grasped hard to the  
wall scaling above the passage his legs apart  
and his knees braced back stiff.

I saw the man I say at the same  
instant. I saw that man coming at us I don't  
know why but that was the last glimpse of  
that poor man or that last glimpse of him  
will stay with me as long as I remember  
Chester Brown and that will be long enough.

I ran swiftly under that passageway  
but it was all over for them.

He was hurled by a cannon ball  
against the abutment of the passageway with  
his face towards me. His mustache and  
eyebrows were gone by the force of the  
wind in a jiffy. His hat and all  
his clothes were gone and his hair

3055

him I know he was conscious when he  
was held tightly against the abutment which  
also was being injured by the shock of his  
eyes but he didn't make a sound. That all  
happened a long way inside of half a minute.  
Then something happened. A terrible noise  
- unbelieveable savage rage of wind came crashing up  
- with the maddest fury.  
That was a wall of wreckage within and for  
the inside of it was so high and so solid that it  
- seemed to rise up rush forward and fly on dense  
- clouds of splintered beams in all directions and did  
- the rest. For we were in it. I could see nothing but  
- all this and much of people and trees go forward,  
- before it.

That tidal wave and wind of tornado fury raging  
- through that passageway thirty feet long and ten high  
- pulled it loose and upward like a canoe, heaved it  
- straight up and then whirled it in every direction  
- like a top and smashed it. At the same time I saw  
- the convent disappear like a rushing cloud with  
- great noise and tumult of screaming children and  
- others of the building. All its three upper floors  
- and the immense roof.

I had saved myself from the wind by jump-  
- ing into a room under the passageway. When  
- these persons, two men and a woman tumbled in  
- in tops of me one man and the woman were dead,  
- dead, the other, frightened, crawling out, still  
- alive. I saw a thin sister and a little girl clinging  
- to wreckage of the front of the convent as it collapsed.  
I wished over at any risk to save them as the  
- storm was on its way northward.

I managed with the help of another man  
- to pull them free through some of the wreckage alone almost  
- yet not.

I got some assistance from a few injured men  
- but nothing could be done yet to get them to a  
- safer place. There were only five of us left in  
- this location who could do anything. I do not know  
- the names of the three others. It was still raining

3056.

long  
what  
trucks  
totaled  
railroad  
cut  
under  
of the

nursery

3057 I was after the passage of the awful  
turbulence and you could hardly see  
half a block away for dust and  
rubbish in the air. All of the upper portion  
of the convent had disappeared in that rush  
of wind. So far that and the inmates have never  
been seen again. All this happened in less than  
a minute. We found wreckage some bodies - a  
hand, or an arm or a leg.

We found a cook mangled to death in the  
kitchen of what had been a hotel. Evidently he  
must have been preparing potatoes for supper  
and what was left of his right hand held the  
handle of his potato knife. The wooden handle  
was gone.

The little girl and the nun was brought  
to the University Hospital, for a  
while they were not expected to live.

Before the second thunderstorm came I went as  
close as I dared to the remains of the once  
magnificent convent.

The tornado must have struck the convent like  
a sweep away terrible explosion. It was struck  
broadside on the west. The shock I suppose  
to the lower part of the building must have  
been terrible. I believe other houses though also  
demolished saved the convent's lower part from  
being swept away also.

I was this day called to the University  
Hospital and interviewed with an injured man  
who claimed good was backed by some others  
who knew him well as the engineer of the  
boiler room of the convent. He claimed his  
survival as a sort of miracle and also a  
miracle.

His name was Patrick Flanagan of  
Turk. Decent. He was Chief Engineer of the  
convent's boiler room and was attending the  
children's banquet party on order of the  
celebration of the Assumption of the B.V.M.  
The score of hundreds of children  
had just begun the celebration meal

and the sisters and others were 3058  
drinking a toast to the heart of the  
celebration when we noticed from a distance a  
great tumult of sound comparing to a thousand

howling wolves and immense crowd of child-  
ren at the same time with the abattering roar of  
masses of timber flung to gather. It had grown  
dark enough to alarm anybody.

It looked like at that distance like a wide part  
of the city had opened out with a most terrific  
swirling explosion. A wall of flying wreckage was  
sweeping over the town and down the street toward  
the park which was struck broadside by the  
wall of cloud and debris. The shock to the  
convent even that distance of the vibration was  
terrible shattering every window.

Hearing the awful uproar and seeing the  
great wall of swirling wreckage and cloud ab-  
solutely once the park and approaching the  
convent all the children and others became  
terrified and panic stricken and sought shelter  
in the dining room where ever possible some  
even jumping out of the window of the  
north or south end, or even running to the  
steps leading below.

I started quickly downstairs panic stricken  
myself also like others believing self preservation  
as the first law of nature. Instantly something  
made the part of upper section of the convent  
disolve as if in a monstrous explosion and  
I was most violently hurled downstairs  
into the waiting room below flat on my  
face and a fierce fierce wind within  
pushed me around inside like a small  
sled dog.

I tried desperately to struggle to my  
feet and managed to rush into a large  
corner closet within of which were rum clothing  
and closed the door. The wind swept away the  
entire upper part of the building except the  
corner closet in which I sought safety.

3056.

lawn  
what  
trachs  
toted  
rally  
which  
was  
of the  
ce  
co  
H  
le  
thick  
Hie  
in  
wa  
of  
a  
c  
u  
w  
in  
run  
of  
the  
to  
the  
fire  
a  
ce  
gre  
an  
u  
fre

3059 I being so terrified by the ear-splitting roar I remained there but when the terrific storm of wreckage from all the other houses were borne by so inconceivably swift movement of the wind that some pieces were hurled in the closet door one piece striking me in the shoulder. I was also terribly injured by these timbers before I reached the clothes closet so they came in through windows like arrows shot by a bow but managed to reach the closet.

The second and third engineers and the foreman were at work below in the boiler room and so escaped injury. They did their part in attempting to escape but could not get out as the lower part of what escaped the wiping out was charred in by wreckage of other buildings.

One of the most terrifying conditions was that the atmosphere being charged with thick dust from destroyed buildings and water that it was totally dark. It seemed almost to say that the scene was almost living in the extreme.

As I dared to open the closet door wreckage was still rushing through the air in perfect swirling waves and the scream of people being killed was terrible to hear and it soon grew as dark as night.

From a small window I witnessed the destruction of all the upper part of the convent. The crazy tornado enveloped the convent in every upper quarter with such light and rapidity that it was absolutely impossible that any person could escape that awful doom.

As I have said the day was suddenly turned to night about sunset. The darkness was so great that the flash of the

of the lightning everyone dis- 3060  
tinctly saw here and there some  
preparing to jump out of the north or east  
windows all this time the storm was raging  
and shaking the building wildly and in the  
intervals between these terrifying sounds I could  
hear the cries of despair, pain and agony  
from the many about to perish.

These cries added to the terror of the scene but it was impossible to describe its horror or the  
dreadful sensations it produced. Set me add that it  
was like witnessing the end of the world.

Before it hit the convent I saw it rage through  
the town. It came like a dense cloud hurling  
before it a tidal wave of huge proportion of wreckage and  
debris and whole sides of wooden houses mounting the  
streets and carrying everything before it.  
The progress of the tidal wave of debris was  
terrific sweeping forward with tremendous  
violence.

I looked also where and saw two whirling  
cancer shaped masses of wreckage swirling swiftly  
around with the funnel with the funnel speed  
as the turbine tumbled the biggest houses about like  
logs turning them turtle into clouds of dust wreckage  
in every which way. It came with tremendous  
velocity but it seemed an age before it swept  
into the park with a noise yell howl and a  
screaming hall tearing away the good houses  
like paper and engulfing everything in its  
mad thundering ahead.

I heard so violent was the motion of the  
atmosphere coincident with this tidal wave of tornado  
horror that people fleeing blocks away ahead of the  
madness were carried bodily up into the air.

Screaming to stop for a moment in  
its headlong sweep the horrible winds whirling  
out the park and killing all the people there  
in no time hurled itself madly toward  
the doomed convent just as I rushed quickly  
for the stairs down which I was fleeing I  
reached them the closet.



305.6.

what  
trachs-  
torted  
railly  
cotu  
were  
of - the

cc

lit

thick

143

2

W.

7

...

12

10

1

20

52

Ant

1

1

5.



100

1

10

11

1

They say the ground for a great distance trembled under the shock of the impact. It seemed to me as if two mountains of debris were hurled furiously the one towards the other mingling in the most frightful confusion. I heard the shake of horns from the banquet hall.

The tornado had evidently the force of a huge tidal wave as it like an immense explosion of a million sticks of dynamite hit the convent sweeping with it like sweeping agitated clouds the roof and upper floors flinging them in dire confusion all before it like dust.

The next floor of the women's ban-  
quet hall was suddenly wrenched up  
sideways with a terrific grinding malice  
round, heeled violently bottom upwards with  
with great speed with every body on it.

Then the vast structure of flourey  
with the long tables and everything, in  
it and with the whole of its swarms  
busdon was swept away like cloud of  
dust simultaneously into the distance out  
of sight

of sight. All upper parts of the building  
and all others who may have been in  
it all of them also filled with children  
or others were all in a moment  
gone. Not a single person or not a shed  
of raiment not a plank not a splinter  
was left and the rest of the building  
after the storm passed recumined for  
many hours in a state of unusual agitation.

Living borne on a state of tunnel and vegetation -  
 .. Do me the most peculiar and  
 distinguishing peculiarities of this town which  
 were the disappearing of the upper  
 of our strata of the Concomite and  
 the eight below occur and  
 .. and the .. the .. to travel  
 and its .. ..

tribal wars from the highest hills 3863  
not in its path they say were violently  
shaken by the vibration of its passing and  
went at their summits huge masses fall-  
ing from them into the low land  
rough, bounding valleys. Here great fire  
gave rise to immense volumes of dust which at a short  
distance were mistaken for smoke by those who  
beheld them.

The great park is all gone with its trees, zoo  
houses and animals. St Vincents Church is no more  
entirely swept away and nothing remains of the  
Rectory. The portion of the ground on either side  
south west and north covered by its initiation  
and shock from the driven wreckage is estimated  
to have been flat as far as Ottawa, Morris  
and many other places as to crack window  
glass. The proper ways according to the testimony  
of its people the noise of the twists and destruction  
was heard quite distinctly by people then in the  
streets of St Louis, Kansas City and Omaha.

The horrible tearing up of all the building raised vast volumes of fine dust after the storm passed which filled the atmosphere and obscured the storm blackened sky producing a most dense gloom.

I could hear the air full of most doleful sounds the groans of agony from the wounded and life dying screams of despair from the most horrified survivors, wails of lamentation from the suddenly bereaved diurnal howling of dogs and terrified cries of other animals.

In two or three minutes the clouds of dust fell to the ground and disclosed the scene which a moment and 16 seconds had wrought

minutes and 16 seconds had wrought  
as far as you could see the devastated city  
was a window of scattered wreckage or looked  
like an extensive junk yard.

like an eye course just  
The loved twilight had filled the sur-  
rounding city with an impulse of flight  
as I saw the mass of them turn in  
the northward direction of the open country

3058.

low  
what  
trache  
toted  
rail  
wire  
of the

ca  
ca

li

thi

H

wa

f

a

u

u

u

u

u

u

u

u

3064. and succeeded in saving their  
multitude rushed to great numbers line  
near the river thinking the railroad by  
that way. I saw it all. They ran into  
the path of the maelstrom.  
It came rushing on with the force of an  
immense water wheel pool upping up back  
sails the railroad carrying with it all  
sorts of clouds of debris flying in them fiercely  
through the air like tissue paper and washing  
them in down confusion along the railroad  
right of way and did not stop.

Overwhelmed by this huge wave of  
most blinding fury great numbers were  
carried along by it and swept out of sight  
in a cloud of debris and dust.

To me it was an unprecedented universal  
horror succeeding this most frightful tornado  
calamity. I believe many hundreds of the  
people lay buried amidst the torn up  
scattered wreckage the most fortunate of  
them who came to sudden death and escaped  
the long agony that awaited many of those  
who lay under the wreckage terribly  
mutilated and suffering agonies  
untold tortures on those who while unconscious  
were held fast by debris and saw with  
startling eyes the red flag of the flames  
which soon began to smolder and then  
licking the frightful spoil with a new  
devouring rancor until the rain of  
the second thunderstorm swept them  
in down.

Few in comparison I observed were  
those who gained the wreckage strewn  
streets. Lumbering over faces of women  
eyes half closed or unobserved all of whom  
bleeding from painful head wounds  
most of them so worn and so close to  
forget their own hunger for food and water.

all but the instinct of flight. 3065

Streams of horror still continued  
demoniacal cries moans of anguish filled  
the air drowned frequently by the thunders  
of the second thunderstorm coming and upon  
it all came a torrential downpour of rain  
with a fierce squall soaking the survivors  
and adding to the gruesome aspect of this most  
frightful situation.

I suffered terribly from the force of plant driven  
into my back under the left shoulder. Day and night  
I couldn't draw it out or loose. To me the suffering  
of the surviving people were awful to contemplate. I  
despise everything kept in the rescue work some  
having removed that torturing plant from my  
shoulder.

Bodies were found which bore mute testimony  
of the tortures endured before death released them  
suffering. Several of these persons had died gnaw-  
ing at their arms and hands evidently  
delirious from pain. Other bodies brought from  
the ruins had portions of shawls and particles  
of clothing in their mouths and  
one woman had her teeth firmly fixed in the  
neck of a seven year old girl.

Hearings groans from a pile of debris nearly  
I made a hurried examination. I found two little girls  
dying. The head of one was split open while the other  
chest of the other was or had been crushed in. I picked  
up a baby but it expired in my arms. It took me  
and my comrade rescuers two hours and a heap to  
hoist the stretched out heap of flying wreckage  
between the demolished convent and a few blocks away  
and were obliged to give up the effort. It was im-  
possible to make any weak way back towards  
the convent by this route.

The force of the tempest had never left a  
section of a wooden house where it stood scattering  
the debris every which way in front of the  
convent. No wonder the moving wedge of debris  
being pushed before the storm.  
During most of the night was exposed.



305.6.

low  
what  
lives  
totally  
walls  
with  
un-  
of the

At 7066 as we passed among the  
debris we did not see as yet more  
than 5000 or six thousand of the  
survivors — Am<sup>21</sup> making my state-  
ment too long  
no<sup>22</sup> answered go ahead I'm investigating  
the disaster and what you tell will help a whole  
lot.

All but all of those survivors will tell dis-  
mal stories of the misery they suffered by heat  
and hunger — hunger and thirst after their  
escape or rescue and of the rarity of other  
survivors that will be seen in the streets and  
other places so that often they all believe  
themselves to be the only persons saved  
of the dense choking cloud of dust which  
hung over what is left of the city for a long  
time obscuring their view.

Also to add to the horrors of their sorrow  
and bewilderment...

It was impossible to pass through any  
of the streets which were blocked by the  
wind stream wreckage. Here and there we saw  
bodies were inaccessible places pinned in by  
beams of wood and fastening from upper  
floors of the debris some lying half buried  
and horribly contorted.

With only lanterns it was very difficult  
difficult to walk. Both of Chester Brown and  
the railbed was torn or broken up ties and  
rails ripped loose or off altogether and sunk  
under the water of the river. Behind this  
were long stretches of scattered wreckage  
everywhere. What is left of a lawyer  
once beautiful home home day amidst  
the wreckage near the convent blower twenty  
blocks from where it stood once.

In all places the appalling scene  
beggers all description everywhere horrors  
beyond mention making the scene  
one fit for Dante to write about.

Though dark as it was I did see

306.7

that the frontal walls of the  
convent had fallen out exposing three  
tiers of rooms above another which in nothing  
seemed to have been disturbed Pictures  
hung straight on the walls lamps were on the  
tables and vases and flowers on mantlepieces.

Many dogs and cats had been killed by  
the lumber 31 building south of the ruins  
were not in the path of the lumber yet some of  
those in one of the houses told me that the  
concussion of the falling lumber was so severe  
were flying from their chairs or lounges or  
beds their feet into the air several times before  
they could get upon their feet and make their  
way to the street by stumbling down stairs  
ways to see what was going on.

All day back I saw the Board Heart Convent.  
The numerous absence of first details concerning it,  
found to be due to the fact as I now saw to my  
amusement and horror that not only the four  
upper stories of that 200 foot long building but the  
whole population of children, nuns employees and  
even priests and attendants had disappeared.

What what left of the lower part of the  
building was tottering totally demolished beyond  
rebuilding.

How following the course of the storm  
as far as Ohio by auto as I heard and read  
were unable to discover a trace of anything  
from the convent. The upper part of the great  
convent had vanished as completely as "Abbas  
bladders palace" under the magic spell with  
everybody in it.

The first idea is that the upper part of  
the convent had been completely sucked away  
completely and twisted into the big cloud above  
it and that the remaining under part of  
the firmament little below the present cloud  
was filled with the debris and humors as  
the tornado advanced to with the pressure of a  
huge tidal wave and this was proved later

3056

low  
what  
do  
to  
rail  
with  
of

3068 that this was not the slightest exaggeration of the fact and fully corroborative of the situation. It is still even now very dangerous to come within one hundred feet of the convent.

Refugees near the convent described this story of dreadful savage roaring what is left of the convent has been swallowed up within its lower debris inside and out and totally cut off from the outer world. Sidel buildings from the convent territory told the same story of horror undecipherable.

All trees on the west playground of the convent are gone and playground equipment. A bridge across the river near the convent was carried off by the tornado as were all the entire railroad in sections of the railroad road. What is left of the convent chapel is a shattered ruin though the altar appears altogether intact although torn loose from the floor, dangerous to walk on.

I thought as I claimed that the fury of this immeasurably strong thunder raged for a full minute and sixteen seconds. It is said it took twenty or more seconds to do all this destruction to Chesterton. What all did it do in the other twenty or more seconds? The tornado raged like this one before. Even during this wild rage of the storm I saw it accompanied by remarkable and very strange storms here phenomena.

The unchanged air was filled with clouds of strange sparks and flashes of orange red and green and blue flame which flared up until the heavens seemed afire. These phenomena were undoubtedly followed by clouds of lateral or all directions that threw the people off their feet as they rushed through the

the streets to escape the wild 3069  
machinery. Four times lightning flashes from the funnel made it brighter than the brightest day, and I never heard such deafening exploding thunder all my life as I heard them.

Another peculiar occurrence I believe was the following:

A tornado has usually some general direction from south to north, southwest to northeast, or on rare occasions from west or between those points. Not so this madamom convulsion. The storm ran into Sarnain Ohio and into New York State made a perfect bee line all the way, never rose from the ground going all the way to the northeast. The debris was hurled in all directions and forward like a huge wedge. It was the hoard pressure that was most destructive not the vertical motion of this tremendous whirlpool of air.

The horizontal rush of wind tore away everything. The rapid speed of the vacuum of wind taking away the whole construction of all the houses, wooden and brick or made of iron iron frame work.

Among the most lamented results of this disaster the proper told of was the wiping out of that monstrous St. Vincent's Church or the Cathedral, and Rectory and School also enormous buildings the pride of the city. They vanished also like the upper part of the convent. The priests of the cathedral rectory saw the storm and heard it coming by flying abrupt north

west of it to escape successfully.

The priceless relic of an antiquity representing the enormous value of \$700,000 that a million dollars had disappeared with the wreck and its twenty five granite columns said to have come from a temple of Neptune near the Roman Forum at Rome was gone as is gone.

I heard that those who perished immediately or died about the wreckage from their awful wounds.

3056.

town  
what  
traced  
tortured  
rail  
cotton  
wires  
of the

3070 formed only a part of the awful loss of life. I heard many of the rescued are so seriously injured and mangled, or mutilated that their recovery is hopeless and it is feared fully five thousand will die in the end within two weeks from the day of the storm.

In my opinion it was alone the tornado but its uncontrollable convulsion and a profound violent uplifting of its suction to which I believe the destruction of this great Charleston disaster was due. How do I know? By the awful uprush in the center of the tornado.

This eruption of the tornado inner tube and destruction all the way to New York State as you know the paper stated was the greatest in history and most destructive to human life while this the awful convulsion which destroyed city after city and so many of their inhabitants was felt by towns fifty miles distant north south east and west.

In canes town eighty miles away have felt strange shocks that came like sudden blows in the bottom of the floors of the rooms in the houses. Even chimneys and tubs have been jerked up and down from the rooms by these sudden blows under the floor. Even cannon had been jerked up and down in a fort near So. Dale.

near In this the trees were so violently shaken that they were either split or broken.

In the instance stated there seemed to be no disturbance of the surface of the ground but of the air low and high. I believe if I am not mistaken the first moment of the awful storm was one of stupefaction. It came so utterly without warning

as I had heard catching thousands 3071 unawares while busy at their household tasks to a terrifying vision of sudden death their houses flying to pieces about and

beneath them ceilings and flooring sailing away like kites, furniture and people and wall paper spilt in every direction numbers of those who were not flung to immediate death by the storm were screaming in mortal terror or moaning or groaning in pain.

I saw and heard all this. I saw many bleeding from injuries and almost insane from their terrifying experiences as they fled wildly in all directions trying to escape the mad fury of the roaring storm. The spectacle I did so presented to me was more terrifying than could be described by the most brainy person.

Even being hurled along with the eddies of swirling rushing wreckage mutilated thousands while hundreds of the injured imprisoned in the wreckage were abandoned to their fate by the fleeing mob who could not escape themselves from the furious storm. The whole population were even precipitated along with the swirling wreckage of their homes spun around like top as they revolved through the streets. Many were battered and crushed to death by the flying debris of their homes and others abandoned tried to take refuge for breath beside the flying walls where they soon met the fate of their room companions.

During the wild ungovernable ferocity of the storm many of the victims were for a few seconds imprisoned in their swayed homes found themselves and the wreckage going off like a violent ride with the cruel wind.

To me the streets were a terrible scene. Walls of brick buildings going in all directions like clouds of bricks and debris dust making me distracted people being blown about with the debris thousands of them flying in wild terror for the open streets only to be overtaken, while

3056.

town  
what  
traced  
tortured  
rail  
what  
was  
of the

c

c

cl

thid

H

c

w

f

a

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

l

3072 many children lost by being flung violently through the air and the madness of the storm hurled numbers of the frenzied, prostrate to their doom with the flying wreckage. The suffering among the survivors was intensified by lack of drinking water, as the water system was totally wiped out.

These survivors assuaged their thirst by drinking the river water. Even the wounds of the injured had to be washed with the river water. Yet relief came so promptly from near by Ottawa to Sault and Morris that we were not threatened by famine. While the temporary exodus of the lower stricken commenced after the storm there were others affected by a different sentiment.

They clung instinctively to the idea of their homes desperately refusing to leave the torn up wrecks of their homes within which they had lived crying out that their only safety lay in fidelity to the shattered wreck of their homes.

The most distressing feature of the scene I heard about was the appalling disorganization of the rescue work in distant Cheshire also struck by the storm.

While active desperate efforts at rescue were made here the distant city of Cheshire was left unaided and until a few days after the storm not a morsel of food had arrived to relieve those few hundreds of survivors who for four days had been suffering the pangs of hunger.

So widespread and extensive was the disaster that it was impossible at first to cover the whole field.

We began crowded the roads here carrying away numbers of our survivors and survivors to Sault Ste. Marie, Ottawa, Morris, Kankakee to every region

where help could be hoped for 3073  
That large University building out of the path of the winter was filled with the injured and even the hospitals in Sault Ste. Marie were crowded with the injured.

For people coming to find out their lost children of the Convent camp were regged up everywhere as you've seen for yourself.

Wooden huts were put up in the form of towns with streets for those anxious ones some of whom are in disabled cabs.

Even the railroad right of way are crowded with tents. Mothers are still nursing their babies. In many fires on which nations rooked while younger children played around unheeding.

All are clad in strange and many colored garments. Rich and poor were mingled.

Misery is making comrades of them all and is reducing them to one common level.

You know yourself from what you too have seen what fearful things have happened here.

You can't imagine what fearful things happened here before you came with the first rescue parties that fatal day we were in the midst of suffering and want everybody is still homeless except those of the buildings that escaped. We went daily to the "University" Hospital to find and care for the wounded brought there all hospitals in Sault Ste. Marie are still full.

The worst people are in the shelters in Cheshire. This morning we were still working over them. The women have suffered the most and had their hair and ears and eyes full of debris, dirt, stones and blood.

This University Hospital is a poor complaint. I saw a young woman here in a poor complaint. I saw a young woman who had been two and three quarters of a day in a room under the debris with her two boys and one girl, one six the other ten years old and the girl 8, years old almost dead. She

low  
what  
tooth  
rails  
with  
was  
of

3075 was badly, very badly cut and  
burned but remained quiet and  
not at all complaining. She did not live  
there either. She and her children with  
her husband were blown there twelve blocks  
from her home and had been buried in  
the street floor was worn by heavy lime  
and soaked with the rain by the recent  
heavy rain.

I am still shuddering under the recollection of what seemed a night more rather than actual reality and I bet too Mr Dwyer that many if not all of the survivors of this frightful calamity are trying still to picture in words of graphic intensity the seventy-five seconds of breathing horror and the succeeding more minutes and day of unrepeatable terror which followed the catastrophe which overcame us all on that late afternoon of August 15th.

We all still recount the roar of the storm sending the wreckage of the houses off into flying wildly swirling whirlpools of debris and the pitiful cries and groans of those mingled with the flying wreckage. We could tell of the caravan of homeless refugees in their wild flight to the shelter of the storm path for safety and I bet again Mr Dwyer that all of their accounts could reach the climax of most dramatic presentation of human peril and that insane terror.

Also Mr Dwyer I can tell you this and news paper had testified this I happened to be present about noon one day when the big bank of Chestnut was constructed in the Northwest section and the work was unusual. They say the building was the strongest in this country and it had been specially designed to ever resist earthquakes which should they occur here at any time. The authorities had insisted upon a very deep foundation of tough concrete.

Above this were several layers of alternating iron steel and concrete upon

which rested the sheet floor and the strong room. In this were stored 3076 the bulk of the savings banks deposits of Tillman and great other sums amounting to more than \$60,000,000 in gold and cash and securities representing \$950,000,000 more. You would not believe this Mr Dwyer if I say the whole Bank with that whole sum disappeared like the upper parts of that convent would you? It is not my word though but the survivors and the paper testified to that fact.

"You ask if I believe that?" I asked. Who wouldn't when three quarters of that strong Convent was swept into nothing. St Vincent's Church disappeared that way and so did the town of Danville. It is but a kind view of the most destructive wild cat if indeed the most terrible tornado calamity that nature has visited upon mankind since the days of the Biblical flood.

The most conservative estimates of the destruction wrought instantly and that which followed immediately after the tornado shows of seventy seconds in the torn cities from Chester to Kansas and all the country beyond stagger the human mind to comprehend.

It is a calamity before which civilization still stands aghast aghast. Yes I believe everything. No other storm has even did that terrible things to the zoo animals and birds of the park.

It is said that Northern Illinois lost more of her people than all other places hit by tornadoes put together.

St Louis loss of life in 1876 when a tornado tore up a part of that part of the city is insignificant in comparison with this great disaster calamity which devastated this garden spot of all Tillman. The destruction of Omaha last March 13th Easter Sunday and other places put all together is hardly on that part as great in the sacrifice of human life as is this modern calamity which still fills the world with

3056.

low  
what  
drac  
to the  
rally  
with  
way  
of

3076 narrow. His lunster scattered the debris  
along its course like wind driven straw.  
It is a picture of the most tragic  
pathos and grief which civilization stands in  
terrible and yet in its farcical way. Yes  
I do believe that earthquakes are the most terrible  
phenomenon of nature.

I don't believe I've read again and again in  
in looks about the horrible earthquake at  
Aegio and Messina and all the destruction it  
did. But it left the ruins in place, it ne-  
ed not sweep everything away. I do be-  
lieve every thing.

"This city suffered the worst of all it is said."  
he continued. St. Vincent's great cathedral and  
the rectory are gone eighteen parish churches all  
the other convents, the Mayor's residence the  
warehouses filled with merchandise the public  
grain areas filled with corn wheat oats and  
barley and large lumber yards with their  
stores of lumber were either gone with the  
wind or their wreckage scattered like snow-  
flakes along the ground.

Eight hundred lost their lives in our County  
and I ask what I witnessed myself was a proof  
that that terrible down wreckage of the front of  
the convent was and still is exceedingly dangerous.

The intrepidity of myself and our other  
rescuers led us to dare the most greatest risks  
as I will tell shows. The incident I followed  
the morning after the fatal storm. We  
knew that that mound of tumbled down  
wreckage was precariously remaining.

A foot or two of the third and  
fourth floor frontal section remained in  
a jagged heap and upon this narrow  
very shaky top were clinging two women  
a man and four children all little girls and  
boys crying for help.

I wondered exceedingly how they got up there.  
There were no ladders and rescue seemed  
impossible. I yelled up at them how they

come to be up there. They said 3077  
I may make a date do some friends  
and recorded in climbing up. But something  
just way as the reached the top and now  
I can get down.

Improvised ladders were constructed from the  
debris in the street. Then we did a reckless most heroic  
heroic thing.

We placed the ladder against the tumbled down  
heap one of us carrying a pick, climbed the very un-  
safe ladder and using his implement as an  
ice pick drove it into the wreckage above high  
above his head. By this means he pulled him-  
self further up to the main upper shambles and  
finally reached the terror stricken refugees  
high on top.

He lowered them with a rope to us below  
the dangerous masses and then came back down  
the ladder carefully himself. In little party then  
assembled ourselves below prepared to depart and  
one of the men was wrapping his jacket around  
one of the almost naked little boy.

All of a sudden I screamed vehemently "Look out  
the underpart is tottering." It was too late.  
As I quickly slipped back it swayed with a crackling  
sound and fell upon burying them under it.  
Alas, the victims so perilously saved  
and the brave rescuers.

A large rescue squad came quickly up at  
the sound of the crash. Through heroic efforts  
they reached the ruins from under which came  
groans indicating that they were still living.

This fact infused fresh vigor into the men  
and we worked heroically but although we  
continued till noon in our efforts no success  
rewarded our efforts.

More came to our help with crowbars axes  
and other tools and fell to their task with a  
firm feeling certain that the sea rescues  
and the rescued were alive beneath the debris.  
Only a voice was heard now and that  
resembling in amount about still in rescuers.



what  
traced  
tortured  
rail  
with  
we  
of it

3077 among whom were some teen agers  
perished. One P.M. full and there was  
a distinct shock at the shambles which  
rendered the situation to us who were en-  
deavouring to give succor extremely dangerous as the  
swaying wreckage near them and about  
us threatened momentarily to collapse more  
and bury us with the victims already there.

We however forgetful of the danger continued  
our task refusing to be denied the chance of  
rescue and ~~their~~ persistence was rewarded for  
we found two men rescuers and one of  
the girls the three seriously injured and banged  
up by the wreckage.

Still we kept unflaggingly at work  
our incessant cry "Is any one there?" being  
heard on every side as we searched diligently  
among those awful shambles.

A voice, a groan even in response would  
set us vigorously at work. By evening we  
got the others out and escaped just as more  
of the shambles came down. I got caught  
this time. I was pinned under beams.  
Only my head and shoulders were free.

My helper effected my release. The first  
rescuers, the man and woman and the children  
were dangerously injured and taken to the Simon  
Segres Barn converted a hospital too. One of the  
little girls was covered with blood, her clothing  
tattered and torn.

The people were still roaming about the  
streets acting like lunatics. Some were rummaging  
among the ruins in tattered ragged clothes search-  
ing for father, mother, brother or sister. Through  
the tumbles scattered here and there people that  
were still living cried to those they feared had  
died. Other survivors whom I met had wound  
around themselves bits of carpet or bed clothes,  
while others had forgotten all about  
apparel, apparel. I fortunately I was not  
overcome by the debris.

All day during our desperate rescue work 3078  
the wreckage strewn streets were filled  
everybody who had escaped that fearful  
afternoon were in ragged clothes. Terrified  
shrieks still arose from all sides and we still  
heard heart rending appeals for help from the  
unfortunates still held between the wrecked  
timbers and debris.

I and the other rescuers were with me and  
even in a frenzy of terror we groped our way  
through the weak stream streets with the burden  
of injured we rescued holding our own against  
the panic stricken people until we finally  
reached Simon Segres hospital barn a place of  
comparative safety from the crowd.

All along the way we were gossled by  
scores of people on flight half clad. When I  
reached the Barn Hospital I saw a crowd of  
utterly terrified people assembled. None knew  
what to do. They were waiting in an agony of fear.  
Men and women praying, groaning or even  
ever shrieking.

We were admitted into the Barn hospital.  
In the excitement I did not at that moment  
notice the windmill structure coiled around  
the barn. The hospital full of injured were  
shrieking from their beds of agony. Horror had  
fueled on horror. The groan and shriek almost  
unnerved me.

The districts beyond here were full of  
anarchy even though not struck by the disaster.  
They were thrown out this far by the distant  
tumbler. I feel my nerves will never recover  
from the atrocious impression to which they were  
subjected and my eye will retain as long as  
they remain open the vision of death and horror  
destruction which appeared them. Men women  
and children stupefied by the disaster and  
wrecking among the debris looked at us with  
vacant staring eyes as if their thoughts  
were wandering or gazed at us like stilled oxen.

to  
what  
used  
tortured  
rail  
with  
us  
of

3079 Around the barn a lot of refugees were found sitting in isolated groups. Physically they were now utterly exhausted and seemed scarcely conscious of their surroundings.

The following morning I got a glimpse of the long windmill structure wrapped around the barn. Not knowing the real cause I thought he owned it and for some reason believed he had workers place it around the barn that way. I asked him the reason why he did it. I could not comprehend it when he told me the story.

I could not believe my eyes and believed I was in a cage. He said in furnishing the story I have now explained it to you and I can scarcely expect you to put more faith in what I tell you than if I were the most beggarly fiddler on earth. But it can be proved very easily. I can tell you you can count the number of witnesses who will be able to tell you the same thing.

"Well I answered I've heard a lot about this from other witnesses too. Yet a windmill about five being wrapped around a barn or house is too common to be extraordinary. It frequently has happened. A wild cat tornado can do anything. Not too far from here was a two and half inch thick rope believed to be a thousand yards long wrapped around what is left of a windmill like you wind thread on a spool and so tight it cannot be unwound. A tornado can do everything except control itself.

But the most extraordinary thing about this windmill affair is that no trace of where it came from. All farmers interviewed say they lost one windmill and have found it. This is the profound mystery. A windmill structure was discovered around a house in Oklahoma, and also where it came from is the

same kind of mystery. Against the north side of the 31 house not hit by the storm is splattered by the passing storm. strange blue colored mud and for all these days of search and investigation no trace of where it came from can be discovered. Tornadoes can do, and do the strangest things even far beyond imagination. Pulling a heavy street car on the roof of the Scared Heart at La Halle is also a most astonishing thing. Tornadoes are masterful in what they do. Simmons story is believable.

"It is strange," he said. I have seen the ends of barn, map, and spade or shovel handles driven into the walls of the wooden and brick structures not even hit by the storm. It must have flung these forth with the speed of bullets. I know from what I have read the heart of us all men, women and older children beats most uniformly throughout the world. Mr. Danger, and sympathy for each other extends to the ends of the earth.

Let the occasion arise and the reply is prompt and heart felt. This is especially the case in our days when the means of most common communication between parts of our country and the nations of all regions and climes are so prompt that we learn of disaster in the Antipodes about at the moment of their occurrence and have them detailed to us in such vivid reality that we seem almost to be gazing at them as they occur.

And our hearts beat with desire to help our brothers of whatever race or color for in these days Mr. Danger the universal brotherhood of man is linked so closely linked we all the people of the world by bonds of immediate and close association.

A very recent example of this was in the case of the destruction of a long wide stretch of St. Louis in May 1896 when the people of the whole United States stood up, half paralyzed in startled sympathy feeling toward the tornado sufferers as though they were brothers in blood, and pouring out of their wealth



3056.

low  
what  
track  
treated  
rail  
with  
was  
of

3081 an unstinted profusion for the relief of the sufferers and homeless, there no doubt Mr Dager were sons of an gun land but linked to us by the ties of nationality but in the care of the fragrant tornado or hurricane at Yalveston on September 8 1900 with 25,000 believed dead and missing a few years later the sentiment felt for the victims and survivors was none the less intense and the haste to aid them was the less immediate.

The same brotherly feeling was manifested in that other recent disaster in Easter Sunday March 13 at Omaha which devastated that proud city and that the loss of life was not as great as it could have been because the majority of the people were not home at the time of that disaster.

Here too the strong sympathy and aid of the whole country were hailed for as might be expected from these examples the terrible tornado disaster here St. Louis Chesterburg Janelle and so on awakened a like heart felt response. As I read Mr Dager the heart of the whole world was touched by this dire disaster and the suffering of its numerous survivors and expressers of sympathy and offers of aid came from all the nations of Europe and of our own country and Canada to Rio Janeiro and other capitals of the far south even from Mexico.

From the rulers came expressions of condolence and from their subjects spontaneous contributions of that aid which brings the world closer together in times of greater calamity. A hundred trains bearing supplies were quickly on the way to our desolated region but were for some lengths of time set off from reaching us as all rail and bridge communication were cut out

off by this savage and ruinous storm. 3082  
Among the earliest and most and at prompt to offer condolence and aid was Chicago which entered upon the work with a spontaneous activity that promised the best results, yet halted for a time by the cut off of rail and bridge communication. The United States president Wilson sent a telegram to the Mayor of St. Louis as the paper stated but he has not received it.

He tried to send an appeal to Washington D.C. but got no answer because all other communications is destroyed by the storm. No mail of any kind can go or come, not even now.

As I learned the appeals for contributions here mentioned Mr Dager was quickly and most abundantly responded to throughout our country as similar appeals were being responded to in all the countries of Europe.

Richer brotherhood. All of 2000 Tornado and ninety miles of field fires have brought the nations of the world together in a common cause as never before since the Messina earthquake disaster. From every quarter of civilization relief funds and supplies poured into our country to be sent to the tornado disaster area zone desolated by the mad twister. A work marked with a magnitude and displaying a unanimity without parallel in all the centuries that have gone before or even will be.

Coming at a time of profound and universal peace the Chester Brown Tornado disaster became a greater force towards the accomplishment of peace and brotherhood among the nations than the most promotion of the conferences at the Hague, you know Mr Dager the first material response from Chicago was supposed to come on August 17th when the railroad freight train on the Rock Island laden with one million nine hundred thousand ration for the supply of

3056.

for  
what  
road  
towed  
rail  
with  
was  
of

3087 of another train then to go to  
So Salla ran out of the station for  
that small city under orders of the Chicago  
Relief Committee. "We will have enough  
food to feed thirty thousand people" said the  
Relief Committee. Aboard also was one  
million five hundred thousand full army  
rations which can easily be made into  
three million ordinary rations for all the  
homeless.

On board another freight were lumber  
and tents to provide shelter for the  
homeless. Shacks and canvas were  
furnished for 5000 people. Some of the  
tents were of the hospital size each one  
of which can shelter a score or more.

Yet these two trains found themselves  
blocked by that large great bridge which  
is destroyed; and had to make a long  
distance round to So Salla. They have  
not arrived yet.

Yet what Chicago did, as far as possible  
on this occasion is magnificent and shall  
never be forgotten. The city of Chicago stands  
first out distancing all others in sympathy  
and generosity. Our gratitude is so  
great that we cannot find words in  
which to express it fittingly.

Yet Mr. Dwyer all this was problem.  
Every day since the disaster the  
United States Congress spoke for the whole  
American people in voting the splendid  
sum of five million dollars for relief  
work in our tornado torn cities in response  
to the full army message from President  
Wilson.

The appalling extraordinary tornado  
calamity which has befallen the people  
of Charleston and other places is followed  
by due distress beyond comprehension and also

3084  
immeasurable suffering throughout all  
that territory among many thousands who  
have escaped with their lives but whose shelter  
and food and means of living are destroyed  
in a rapid visit by the wildest and most strongest of all  
tornadoes on all record.

The ordinary means for supplying the wants  
are totally upset and other facilities is  
paralyzed or paralyzed all roads and  
are blocked and an exceptional emergency exists  
which demands that the obligation of humanity  
shall regard no limit of relief.

The immense debt of civilization to So Salla  
Charleston and other places the warm and steady  
friendship between the cities the affection for  
their friends and relatives felt by great numbers  
of American citizens the alacrity with which God  
has blessed us in our safety all these should  
prompt us to immediate and effect and  
quick relief.

All this was unusual. Mr. Dwyer. Even the  
Canadian Government contributed \$1,000,000 and  
every civilized nation of Europe and South America  
added generously to the sum total. Yet all that  
had a very difficult time to reach its  
destination because the storm so disastrously  
cut off all railroad and wire communication.

While our Government thus sprang actively  
to the stricken tornado region the people of  
our country were similarly engaged. Crowds  
were eager to contribute the city fund  
everywhere adding their quota until the  
total surpassed millions.

While my house was struck it was severely  
shaken by the vibration of the passing water. I called  
to the tenants of the house and we all managed  
to get down stairs while the shaking caused by  
the twister which away still continued with  
ever increasing violence. The last and worst  
persecution was finishing as we reached the



3056.

for  
what  
had  
tasted  
such  
with  
was  
of

this  
H

u  
f

re  
of  
with

t  
f

g  
a

3057 structures the fury of a tornado  
has afforded in this case the most entire  
convincing evidence of its overwhelming  
strength. It is said a tornado can rip the  
side of a hill of "small or big hill".  
As we all see by this disaster the wind  
for instance is a demon in chains.

At times it breaks its fetters and rushes  
on in mad fury rending and destroying  
and sweeping such trifles as cities and  
those who dwell therein to common ruin,  
death, suffering and privation.

This Chautauque calamity proves it.

"What is your theory of the strange shower  
of debris that kept up for a week?" asked  
myself I know nothing. The paper said

that the suction of the tornado was so violent  
that it sucked up such voluminous volumes of  
dust from the brick buildings and plastered  
walls of all other houses that the atmosphere  
may be loaded with it for weeks.

It also sucked up into the air great  
quantities of debris and everything else  
believable torn from the houses.

The paper said the immense wheel  
of the highest part of the tornado curled debris  
outward so far that it dropped to the  
ground as far as Morris S. Halle and  
other places, a dust fall was noticed  
as far as St. Louis. This dark tornado in  
whirling and throwing things so far,  
and giving off dirt storms was really  
as bad as an volcanic eruption and covered  
the ground in many places.

During the time it was whirling out  
Chautauque and Janelle it was sucking  
up such a quantity of dirt from all  
the buildings that the fall was noticed  
even in Chicago and covered the ground  
at Bloomington to a white snow-like  
covering.

I don't believe this in Dungen, but 3058  
the papers say there are many witnesses  
to this tornado who all say a block of  
something weighing 200 tons was thrown  
more miles by it and masses of fragments  
of brick buildings weighing as much as twenty  
tons to be seen some ejected sideways by the  
winds for miles, to a distance of thirty or  
more miles.

"Some tornado" I exclaimed "but" too good that  
in the papers. It sure must have whirled faster  
than anything known in tornadoes before. But  
this is proved surely even as you say. There is  
no doubt about it. The rock or block weighing  
twenty tons is seen in a field near Morris.

Another strange freak of this winter of what it  
must cause the far flung dust to do.

So excessively fine was this brick and mortar, also  
plaster dust that it is said it penetrated into all  
drawers, boxes and most closely fastened receptacles  
filling them completely or at houses  
five miles away I have here with me a paper with a  
written description from a man to a friend about  
himself and his Uncle Ben's. I'll read it to you.  
It reads as follows:

"My Uncle Ben's was on the afternoon of August  
15 with my elderly mother about three thirty in  
the afternoon and during slow darkness coming on  
she desired him to observe a very large dark  
cloud which appeared of a unusual size and crazy  
shape.

He had just returned from the dining room during  
an afternoon snack when she spoke. He immediately  
went out onto the country town house from whence  
he might more distinctly view the uncommon  
appearance. The mighty long cloud shaped  
like a little girl child's head with long bobbed  
hair turned sideways with tongue sticking out  
its full length.

From the apparent throat connecting with the  
protruding tongue came a loud choking sound.

3056.

to  
what  
had  
taken  
real  
with  
us  
of

3089 The mouth opened more there was a loud brief choking half coughing sound. The tongue stuck out further long then suddenly fell strikingly to the ground with a little shape at its base collected with the earth and the child's head shape became full of terrible convulsions.

The strange long cloud seemed to rise to back to the mouth and could not while even at that distance you could hear a sound like a dozen saw mills at one. It quickly was wrapped around its base with a large high circular shroud, and strange clouds like stuff was flung from around it far and wide with a strange shattering noise dreadful to hear.

It whirled so fast that I do believe the fastest electric motor could not turn in such a speed. The way the main child's head cloud changed, and being in such confusion it was not at that distance discernable from fast what parts of that cloud the strange long cloud issued, but it was soon found to have been the "child's tongue" from the "child's head" cloud formation.

I cannot give an exact description of the long cloud as to compare it to an elephant's trunk or even pencil and it strangely was turned a little sideways, moving with a dizzy swagging motion.

It extended up to a great height extending itself to the bosom of the main cloud which too now churned with an ungovernable fury.

It spread out far and wide. This most extraordinary phenomenon excited my turn under philosophical curiosity to take a new nearer view of it. I myself knew what was wrong. I told him no and he would not believe me never having seen or heard of

a tornado before. Fortunately on fair 3090 was not in its path. From all appearances at its base it was tearing up the distant fields most terribly with an awful hissing, coming with now a noise like the howling of a circle with countless number of dogs all howling at once and at their loudest from much higher up there was an awful loud rough humming sound.

The black cloud became dreadfully large the lower edges rushing swiftly to a common center. Terrible blinding lightning came from it each flashing sheet making it brighter than day, and awful thunder came from it.

We had scarcely went to the deep basement of an house when darkness overspread us not like that of a cloudy night, or when there is no moon, but of a room, when it is all shut up and all the lights are put out.

The noise came closer in a confusion of awful sounds, and there came such a peculiar violent shaking of the house that we fled from the basement out into the open. Out here it was so dark you couldn't see your hand before your face. Our wagon standing near the barn was so agitated backwards and forwards though upon the most level ground that we could not keep it steady even by supporting it with large barrels against the wheels.

It was very surprising to me that a tornado could shake us like that from that distance. I might boast that during all this scene of horror not a sigh or expression of fear escaped me, had not my support been founded in that invincible though strong consolation that all mankind were involved in the same calamity, and that I imagined I wish going to perish with the world itself.

For a time also I heard something close by like the shrieks of women, the scream of women children and the shouts curses and yells of men, some calling for their children



3056.

for  
what  
had  
tossed  
rail  
with  
us  
of

3091 others for their parents, others  
for their husbands and I lament-  
ing his own fate another of his family  
What ever caused this confusion of sound

I do not know, but it was some distance  
above us the sky in the location of the  
storm. The sound was like the last and  
eternal night had come which was to destroy  
the heavens and the world together.

At length a glimmering light began  
to appear this dreadful darkness being slowly  
dissipated by degrees like a cloud of smoke  
the real day partially appeared but soon it  
soon started to rain a cloud burst of hail  
stones as big as ostrich eggs.

Admitt all this we saw the storm  
slowly moving away towards the northeast.  
It was an actual valley of hailstones.

Hailstones that the passing whistles also flung  
at us and were of such size as to cause a  
disagreeable sensation in the parts upon or  
against they fell or were flung. We escaped  
into our house. My Uncle still did not  
believe it was a tornado until we heard what had  
happened at Chester Brown.

We went there with all other farmers not  
as spectators but to rescue the eggs injured.  
It took four hours to get there by horse and  
wagon. We came upon the first scene of  
the frightful disaster. It was the blasted  
remains of a large one story stone  
market building called the Idlewild  
market Center. It was two blocks long and more  
than a block long and of strong tornado belated  
resisting wood and iron frame work.

The roof was all of thick iron  
workshop two inches thick.

The building swarmed with large windows  
all around and had large high large  
entrances. The roof had not been flat as  
I found but had slants you see on every

conservatory like the one in Lincoln 3092  
Park Chicago. The building was considered  
earthquake fire and tornado proof  
I could not now tell if it had ever been

a building. This huge market had been crowded  
with buyers and their children and it was the  
lastest hour of the day on the great roof  
Court market building covering a space as they tell  
one six hundred feet long and two hundred  
feet wide and twenty five feet high, when with scarcely  
a tremor of warning there came a fearful crash  
and soon the building was being wrecked and  
flung in all directions as if thousands of tons  
of gun cotton had blown it to pieces.

And it happened that sudden the tornado striking  
it with such sudden force. Iron beams all hurch  
of re were chag all sorts of market merchandise  
and bodies were scattered far and wide and  
more than five hundred people were buried  
under what was left of the building. Tornado  
proof Ha.

The exploded appearance of this vast structure  
proves there never been yet a building  
constructed that can resist a vaulting cloud. The  
ligger and stronger they seem to be the worst  
they get it. Even when I got there I observed  
the scene from out of which came heartrending  
screams of agony. I here were at the blasted  
ruins surrounding it a great number of people  
survivors of the storm cursing and screaming  
in their exclamation endeavoring with frantic  
haste to remove the heavy beams of wood  
and iron from beneath the appalling calls  
for help, many of the rescuers sobbing aloud  
as they worked. From what I heard them say  
they were also frantic with wild grief  
and savage indignation against the iron and  
God. They insisted He had no right to allow  
this tornado to explode their city. I was  
shaken at their awful unreasonable blasphemies.  
I joined the trained workers to carry on most

3056.

to  
what  
was  
told  
said  
cut  
up  
of

th

re

at

f

g

a

3092 systematic work of relief. It was with the most utmost difficulty to which aimed what was left of the building; shattered to smithereens and all the roof gone. Five hundred persons proved to have been killed within the remains of the market. Out twenty-four hunched severely hurt, and over eight hundred badly bruised and cut.

Among these were many children whose parents had sent them to do the marketing without a dream of danger and yet there were not many parents of to grieve over them as they too were victims of the storm in their own homes. I got the commission to direct the work of rescue. As I went into an improvised improvised shelter to give a cooling drink to a badly injured little girl I felt a

knock upon my hand. Looking down I saw a woman bleeding on her head kneeling down who gratefully said "Please master she is ill? I have my husband was killed in the market building I escaped with this blood head. I am now a widow. What made the building explode so. May God reward you."

I told her it was done by the tornado. She wouldn't believe it and said vehemently "A tornado never could do this to such a big structure. It must have been a big explosion caused by gas escaping gas."

The scenes I witnessed when the victims were unearthed were often pitiful and terrible. His position of the bodies showed that the victims had died while in a state of great terror the faces being convulsed with fear and horror.

Three bodies were found under what was left of a merchandise counter. One body was that of an old woman who was lying across the wreckage with her right arm raised as to

ward off the sudden danger. The second was that of a little girl about eight years old. She was found dead in a position which would indicate that she had been flying from one section of the building to another with a little haken in her arm and had died with one arm raised across her face to protect herself and yet as she was hurled among the flying debris.

The third body also flying about the building was a young woman. She was an unrecognizable mass but strange to say she had in her possession a bag of eggs of which not one was even cracked.

All of the victims killed or hurt appeared from their positions of to have been flying here and there inside the structure. There first three victims were reverently laid side by side for identification from relatives or friends. No one came to do so. It was found out later they too were killed, though some other people offered up prayer for them.

I heard a woman's voice in weak tones and I worked my way through the scattered debris towards the spot from which the voice seemed to come.

As I made my way over the wreck by climbing over, or working my way under the beams and with difficulty worked among scattered ruined merchandise I shouted words of encouragement and cheering over long broken wooden and iron beams and bearing a pile of tottering wreckage reached the spot.

Here among debris I found the bodies of six children all boys. Near them was a woman barely alive half naked who by almost superhuman efforts for hours had succeeded in freeing herself from a mass of timber and iron bars and other debris which had been thrown upon her by the violent wind. I picked her up in my arm and carried her to a place of safety. It was found that both legs were broken and that she had

3093.

3050.

lay  
what  
had  
totally  
ruined  
the  
city  
of

3094 been badly crushed about the body. From here by others a man, his wife and five children were rescued from under the beams after being flung there a day or two ago. They were sent to the hospital at So. Falls. Before we had left our farm we had a magnificent view of the receding storm, three miles away from where it had passed us.

Rising at an angle of sixty degrees the vast mass of tumult roundness was almost beautifully accentuated by the lightning flashes the upper section shifting into two strange unrolls parts one above the other but in the descent from them of all sorts of objects flung off far near, filled with the mysterious malignance of God's underworld.

In spite of this I did not expect to see a building like the immense supermarket gone with the wind like that. We found about a hundred of dead persons, and there were shapeless unrecognizable masses of flesh and bones showing the wind had flung them violently here and there among the scattering ruins inside the structure.

There were two women for found buried amidst wreckage for six hours. The fallen rafters of the ceiling had protected them, and the bags of food they had bought in the super market had aided to keep them alive. Fortunately they were only slightly scratched and bruised.

The bodies of women and children were found in whose hands were food packages, pocket books, bags of vegetables, fruit and canned corn and one woman held a large bag of potatoes.

The main for the newspapers 3095 continued. This unusual Chesterbrown tornado was remarkable for the electric phenomena which it produced in the atmosphere. Violent thunderstorms with showers of rain and unusually big hail are frequent accompaniment of tornadoes wherever they occur but owing to the violence of this Chesterbrown tornado their condensation was so sudden and violent that a great quantity of electricity was developed, with the most vivid lightning I ever saw.

I never heard such thunder in my life. Near my farm I heard lightning flashing from the upper tornado cloud killed four sheep, five horses and eleven cows and three men and two farm children then out in the fields watching the mad rage of the monster going by.

One man, who afterwards I found was the owner of the supermarket was very difficult to rescue. The wind picked him from his desk as it was demolishing his office and half conscious he was flung as so to say precipitated into a niche of a remaining small section of a wall on the east side of the building and he was pummed by a heavy blow flung against him by the wind his face being covered by a carpet also flung at him that had threatened to suffocate him.

He managed to move the carpet with his teeth until he made an opening in the folds through which he could breathe. The man stood in this position for six hours expecting death at any moment. He heard one and my men men men by and he called to us.

"Help me out please for God's sake - Get me out please."

It took in four hours to free him. He was only slightly injured.



3056

for  
what  
was  
totter-  
ing  
with  
of

3096 Some of my rescue crew also devoted their attention principally to the little children and I rescued with my own hands a little boy seven years old, bleeding from many cuts and wounds and carried him to the nearest relief station who handed him over to members of an imprisoned hospital corps.

Many others with me continued their work by saving a family of five who were imprisoned under beams and plaster and showed such courage and daring in their work among the unsafe ruins of what was left of the supermarket as to win the highest commendation their superiors being on every lip.

They hesitated before no danger digging under or pulling on tottering beams of wood or iron or entering the unsafest sections of the ruin when asked to do so by some frantic man, woman or even child who had lost all hope.

The untiredness of these heroes led them to dare the greatest risks as I observed myself. We found on the west side of the supermarket a wall twenty feet high standing precariously and upon its narrow ledge were clinging two women and three children.

They were crying for help. There were no ladders and rescue seemed impossible.

My brave men did a heroic thing. While one stood on another's shoulders against the inside of the wall a third carrying a pack climbed over them and using his implement as a vice pack drove it into the mortar above his head. By this means he pulled himself up to a window sill above and finally reached the lower station refugees. I lowered them with a rope.

to his comrades and then slid down himself. The little party edged away from the wall and one of the men wrapped his jacket around one of the naked children, a girl whose clothes had been torn completely away by the fierce wind inside the supermarket.

At that moment the tottering wall fell and had they been four feet closer it would have come down upon them killing every one alike. The victims so peculiarly saved and the brave rescuers. What a narrow escape indeed? Some were hit by some flying debris but only scratched or bruised, I'm surprised it missed them even that near.

Everywhere the rescue parties kept unflaggingly at work inside of what was left of that dangerous structure searching diligently among the beam plaster iron girders and other substances and counters which were overturned or stood upright on their ends.

A voice or a groan or some cry for help even in response would set them vigorously at work. All those left from the supermarket wreckage at the north end were covered with powdery meal like flour and a other floor that made them look like living images of flour or white dust. This came from hurled or torn up flour bags flying about them by the violence of the wind inside the large building.

So thick was it that some were probably smothered beneath the choking weight of some of the big heavy bags. This is such a description of the catastrophe as might be unexpected from any one who were unfamiliar with such a dread occurrence and now are apt to attribute this unusual event to automatic causes from the premonitory force of the tornado.

What I saw here during my rescue work clearly indicates the nature of the storm, yet useful

3097

3056.

long  
what  
that  
total  
rail  
car  
was  
of

3098 cataclysm even if one includes the episode of the building being blown apart in all directions by a mighty explosion of gas, for this substance would have to have come in the most enormous and most immeasurable quantity to as quick as you would crush an egg shell with your fist, to erupt such a large structure as this supermarket.

And it was proven too, there was no means of the slightest amount of gas to escape inside the structure anywhere.

In the case of another question the fragments of the building and the wooden and iron beams and all sorts of merchandise and bodies of dead and injured customers were flying and strewn too far and wide to be done by a gas explosion of any magnitude for two districts of the city in every direction have been covered with it mingled with the stream debris of other buildings and extends as far as the eye can even reach.

Surely the building if struck by the tornado with such wild force could have gone to pieces in the work of an eye as well as the block long Men Minus denish building near it which the tornado seemed to swirl away into a cloud of dust just as quickly and kill every one in the seven story block and quarter wide brick structure.

Our knowledge of this unspeakable disaster may cause the knowledge of this great catastrophe to be preserved in writings in the news papers in which we will be told that the longest, longest and strongest constructed supermarket building was torn and flung all over the nearest districts of the town by the mightiest tornado on record, for it could not for an

instant withstand withstand withstand 3099 the terrific irresistible shock and of itself the violent sections of the strongest parts were flying for many blocks or destroyed by the force of the wind itself. This includes that the force of the wind might have been three thousand ~~and~~ miles an hour believe it or not.

In the eyes of religious people and those of unfamiliar with such occurrences it is natural that such an event as this would be regarded as a visitation from God a punishment for crime and wickedness but priest or even other Catholic officials told me later on my questions about it that it only was the result of one of the ordinary but most extremely violent convulsions of our old mother Nature.

Of this supermarket according to the papers say to the testimony of the construction it was the largest and most strongest structure of its kind ever built.

On the day of this great disaster there could be no reason to believe that all this two block long and block wide twenty five feet high structure with all its iron frame wall between the walls its sheeted roof and all the merchandise in it of all weights could be blasted like a mighty explosion of its full size at once. Of course the supermarket was on a large square unprotected by other buildings.

Even now for some unknown reason on the southern side of the devastated structure the ground seemed to have sunk. The remains of the shattered structure seems strangely altered. The whole roof of the huge structure had vanished. Debris of all sorts from other buildings was strewn around the shattered structure once the home of a busy population of eager buyers the seat of the greatest merchandise structure in all the world. As the supermarket

3056

log  
what  
is  
not  
rail  
co  
up  
of

303100 appeared then it does not so  
now I see now an expanse of  
scattered beams of wood and iron, masses  
of etc. scattered debris within the shattered

structure all sorts of scattered merchandise  
overturned, or upturned counters, scattered  
broken walls three feet high and only an  
in a few places about twenty feet and the  
vast iron girders stretched along the wreck  
straw floor.

This shattered structure of such an immen-  
se size of which only one third remains ex-  
ists as the fitting result of such a mass  
unbelievable catastrophe.

Evidences of disaster so great as here  
were never to be found in the present  
epoch of any country though ~~the~~ other  
records are found in the Sacred Heart  
Convent the Visitation and St Vincent  
Church destructions but I believe of the  
Supermarket to be of the most of prodigious  
cataclysm, because of the immense size  
of the supermarket.

I got details from some of those who  
miraculously escaped without scratches  
the supermarket. The morning of the 15th  
of August dawned with a heavy unusually  
severe thunderstorm that lasted until noon  
and yet there was no sign of such a  
alarmity approaching.

Of course the thunderstorm was very un-  
usually severe for a storm of its kind.

It was the Feast of the Assumption a  
high festival of our Church of Rome. The  
Sacred edifices were thronged with eager  
crowds and the Holy Mass was in full  
progress until its end.

After Mass the huge Supermarket  
was soon crowded with many huge  
thongs of buyers despite the wild  
thunderstorm. Afternoon found it packed

as much as a supermarket can be 3101  
packed I was outside of the place at the  
time it being too crowded to get in even at  
the main entrance. I notice it was  
the getting much clearer than even during  
the coming of a thunder storm.

There was at a distance up high in a large  
quently looking abroad a horrid strange very  
loud humming sound while below near  
the lower part of the ~~the~~ should lower down  
was a noise like a crowd of kids screaming  
and yelling and like the howling of a big swarm  
of dogs howling their loudest.

Mingled with all that was a confusion of many  
other sounds and the tearing and rending of  
buildings. It was loud enough even at that distance  
that could have drowned the peal of the Church  
organ and the voices of the choir.

I could see the multitudes in the Supermarket  
were paralyzed with terror and passed panic and  
shrieks of horror arose from the terrific assembly.

Some did run out by the entrance with the  
impulse of flight. The more fortunate of them  
ran in the direction of the northwest and suc-  
ceeded in saving their lives but the greater part  
of the multitudes were too panicky to move.

The shroud came rushing on like an immense  
wave carrying with it clouds of house wreckage  
and all other debris and like a wildly torn  
torn blizzard of snowflakes dashing them down  
the street right of ways in dire confusion  
everywhere and turning in clouds of debris and  
dead the lines of houses a block from the  
place or square on which was the supermarket.  
I threw myself down a city man hole just  
in time.

With a hoarse deafening and shrieking  
commot of yell all that horror headed  
for the large believed tornado proof  
supermarket in its maddest fury it tore  
through the full length and width of  
the Supermarket and it looked like an explosion

3056

to  
what  
was  
tossed  
and  
carried  
off

3103 from the most violent volcanic eruption. The down struck and embraced the huge structure with all its might. The great iron thick sheeted roof its full length but recently completed at the cost of much labor labor and enormous expense disappeared instantly on what you call instantaneously into a cloud of steel sheets away through the air with an awful metallic sound.

Nearly everyone within the supermarket were flying violently out of the supermarket down the streets or in every direction inside the structure like a flock of butterflies and flying wreckage.

The walls of the structure seemed to turn into clouds of dust.

All those on the streets did not escape for they were blown away and the flying wreckage like feathers.

Inside the supermarket there came a volume of doleful sounds the groans of agony from the injured and the dying scream of despair from the horrified survivors curses blasphemies and obnoxious wails of lamentation from the suddenly bereaved. There were dramatic scenes of howling injured dogs caught in the wreckage shrieks of wounded or terrified cats and terrified lament of voices of other trapped or injured animals.

Usually many customers brought their pets in with them. The sudden pulling away of so much of the huge structure caused great volumes of fine motor mortar and other dust especially from lots of flour sacks ripped up violently which filled the atmosphere after the passage of the twister and obscured every thing fifty feet away.

But in two or three minutes the clouds of dust was dispersed to the ground by a cloud burst of rain and a torrent

of ostrich sized eggs and dis - 3104 closed the scene of immeasurable devastation which a few seconds had wrought to the supermarket, the seven story building nearly and the rest of the city as far as you could see through the rain shroud.

The ruin was general all the loose wreckage of the houses especially the wooden buildings being scattered like wind blown straw. Brick buildings no matter what size were completely overthrown their debris scattered far and wide like wind blown snow.

Even after the passing of the twister the dark cloud overhead and eastward continued for a long time in a state of tumultuous commotion and great agitation.

The most distinguishing peculiarity of the storm was the tearing away so suddenly such a long and immense sheeted iron roof the sudden destruction of such a large supermarket and the vast extent of the city over which of so much of the supermarket debris persons and merchandise were flying and scattered. I was told that the extent of the distance this twister traveled is estimated to have been far times greater than any tornado to travel before. Its path was found some where yet in New York state.

I saw this twenty second later after sweeping so much of the supermarket away it struck with all its might some more than a block long seven story building hurling it away as fast as you wink your eye, lunging with it the few working people inside of it over the whole territory within sight dashing to the floor the whole of the structure killing all that were in it and wafting the fragments far out of sight. It also swept away of a whole flocking multitude in the streets who were in its path.

Then the old man said to me as he looked

to  
what  
was  
total  
ruin  
of  
it

7106 at other parts of the paper.  
The paper continues to say that according to official reports made soon after the event that destruction caused by the twister all the way from Jamestown to New York state was immense. About 320 towns and villages were entirely reduced to scattered ruins and about fifty wiped out entirely. The loss of life was appalling, four thousand having perished by the tornado and two thousand five hundred more having subsequently died from starvation and exposure or from mortal injuries.

The greater number were scattered among the swift along ruins of the houses while others perished in the fires that were kindled by fires in cooking stoves lighted lamps and so on. "Do you believe that man's statement in the paper about the sudden destruction of such a huge supermarket building?" he asked me.

"Believe it? Say Mr. Jeff, he didn't tell half it. I helped in the rescue work there soon as I came here after the storm. The wreck of the structure is still there and the same. I while here for a while did a lot of buying there. From the appearance of the great supermarket I didn't believe the word of all earthquakes could do it any harm. But an earthquake isn't a tornado. If I have time I'd like to take you over to see it. It's a sight."

"I'd like to continue the man." People who were in the buildings which were missed, told me of some strange atmospheric phenomenon or disturbance caused by the rushing twister a block away caused furniture to be violently moved and dashed to the floor. Tables and chairs and dogs and cats rose from the floor to the ceiling, pictures were swung from the walls and in some cases turned with

with their backs to the walls and every move more marvellous. 3107  
thing was thrown into extraordinary convulsions. In one of the houses a great grand father clock danced a jig as its leg and down ports beds, easy chairs and couches acted as if the place was possessed by evil spirits.

Even rocking horses of children and rocking chairs rocked back and forth violently for several minutes and let light fixtures swayd back and forth. Even people told me, woman, man, or child that something made them dance the jig and they could not prevent it or stop themselves either for several minutes. Was that true.

"Confoundedly true," I answered. "The people told me that those who were taking an afternoon 'fourtty work' felt their beds lifted beneath them as if by a Titan hand and saw every thing in their rooms tossed madly about while through their windows came the loud roar of an awful tornado disaster without. People were also flying from their beds to the floor or also forced to do various kinds of crazy dances.

Chairs and tables also franced, picture frames flapped back and forth against the walls and all other house hold goods acted so crazily that as they told me they and other people were sent flying out of their houses and into the street in utter panic and terror.

Then the terror stricken fugitives saw the swirling tornado passing by and knew the cause of it all. The distant twister did it by its strange attraction. While the people were stunned by the awful suddenness of the passing disaster and stood rooted to the ground they began to be bombarded by clouds of flying debris and fled back into their surviving homes.

3108 It was with grief and horror that the people from the north windows of their homes gazed on the steady march of the storm past them flinging clouds of wreckage every where and against their homes.

They even struck windows and damaged them with broken glass. Boards and other debris came through the windows and onto the rooms hitting some of them.

These people told me they believed that for a time they were half dazed by the magnitude of the ensuing disaster strangely passive in the face of the ruin rushing swirling past them as if stunned by despair and not yet awakened to a realization of the main horrors of the situation.

I had read in the paper that if we seek to discover the actual floor flung damage done by the tornado to the great supermarket the fact stands out that the twister did it so suddenly that the traces of its ravages <sup>are</sup> ~~were~~ in many cases completely obliterated.

The inside looks like what is left of a junkyard with everything having been thrown every which way or anywhere. Because of this the actual fierce work of the tornadoes inconceivable forces are made very difficult and in many sections of obliterated inside of the structure impossible to discover.

This fact was one that is leading still to considerable dispute and delay when the question of insurance adjust ment came up many of the insurance companies having confirmed their risk to fire damage and claiming exemption from all liability in the case of damage due to earthquake or tornado.

But he had no need of fire insurance but he had it built fire proof also the Wicker Castle which he also owned. The Supermarket before the disaster a tall and very large picture square dome standing loftily above the center of the structure. This dome was still left erect from its ground floor of the building despite the wild fury of the maddened storm.

But it was left only as a skeleton might stand, with its flesh gone and its iron spars ribs exposed to the searching air. What is still left of its iron sheeted roof has been scattered around the inside of the vast structure in the most frightful array and the once proud edifice is now a miserable total wreck, half of it more completely swept away.

It was never believed that such a enormous steel and brick structure should meet such a fearful fate. Along side the structure is a branch line of train or railway tracks on which local freight brought all sorts of supplies and merchandise to the huge supermarket.

The movement of the tornado was in general slight southwest to northeast and the train up and snake like fashion in which the railroad was bent and twisted and indicated a strange 'vertical' and a 'lateral' movement of this very light storm winds. Also at another section the railway railway track was very curiously distorted and torn up high ties and all from the ground.

This shows that even a steel steel frame work building no matter how strongly constructed can withstand the thunderbolt walls of a tornado. Evidently as has been seen at the San Francisco earthquake steel structures had withstood the shock with out harm but a wild tornado one.

In the ruins of the Supermarket strange manifestations of the twister were seen the ground being torn open in many places like a



7118 large stretch of ground torn or blown up like right volcanic disturbances. Great rents were seen in the ground. Here too the supply railroad freight tracks were badly injured, much or service I believe for good.

The railroad tracks were twisted crazily and strange as it seemed eight hundred feet of the other section of the track had sank ground and all five feet."

"How in the world could the tornado do that?" asked Jannuff.

"That is a mystery never to be solved I answered. "In fact the devastating effects of this tornado immensely exceeded those of any similar Calamities East of Catastrophe even before known in the United States, and when this type of destruction done by the force of the tornadoic gale is taken into account the Chester Brown tornado of this August 15th 1913 takes rank with the most strongest wildest and destructive of all those recorded in all history.

### Another description of the Gleason Orphange Honor,

Another patient then said to me and Nick Jannuff.

I saw the same honor that you did but maybe worse and the shape of the cloud too. I have in the Gleason village, I was at that time with some officials at Gleason Court House.

At three thirty in the afternoon, I had just returned home from studying the agitation of the large black brown clouds, didn't bother any more about them and retired to my library.

I thought I heard my little eight year old daughter coughing as if she was half

strangling or something else swallowed 311C the wrong way. I asked her what happened. "It's not me" she said "It's coming from the dark cloud" the John said my wife come but and look at a most peculiar cloud formation.

I immediately arose and went out with my wife and daughter upon the open porch from which I most distinctly observed this very uncommon and singular cloud.

Like you told I also appeared to us like a little girl child's head turned sideways with clouds from like hands around the neck in a strangling grip, with her tongue sticking out and mouth wide open.

Turning from the wide open mouth and tongue was that coughing strangling sound. It at first was not discernible from what part of the main cloud it was at that distance but we soon saw it issued from the rear of the main cloud.

As I said before I cannot give an exact description of its figure than comparing it to the form of a child being strangled, head slightly lowered and tongue sticking out as far as it could go.

The lower part of the cloud connected to the neck was in awful convulsions like a strangling child would be, another section of the cloud seem to rise up to a great length like struggling arms and legs.

The abdominal part of the cloud spread or bulged outward as if it was going to burst open as by a sudden gust of too much air that impelled it.

Then it seemed pressed back by its own inward motion. Finally the tongue seemed to come to protrude out more, and at that instant from its connecting with the belly shot forth a snake like form of lightning the brightness of which I never saw before and turned the usual coming darkness in light as the most brightest day. As my

3112 God, I never in all my life heard such heave splitting thunder. It shook the trees and windows of my house and the pitch swayed my hat in something I forgot to mention. I put in I am sure that lightning flash temporarily blinded me, and two thousand of the biggest cannon going off at one time at that spot I believe could not have roared or banged half as loud as that thunder crash. And it was no riot uproar either and lasted a minute without ever stopping.

That night said John. When I looked again the tongue though the mouth was open somewhat wider was gone completely.

The tongue had suddenly very very suddenly assumed a different distinct and different definite existence in a long revolving whirling column of a more than a mile and a half in diameter near the ground.

It seemed to be inclined to the horizon at an angle of forty or more degrees speeding dizzily around faster than an electric motor with some kind of a swaying and sweltering motion and sending forth every where an appalling sound which even a legion of the loudest and shrieking demons could not make, with a howling sound of thousands of dogs at once, also like shrieks of thousands of children yelling at their utmost and confusion of other sounds.

The upper part of the funnel shrouded up a below gave forth the worst type of a humming sound ever imagined and so loud loud as thunder.

Even the lower part of the main cloud directly above the connecting funnel assumed a monstrous volume.

Each moment added to its speed to its

its most head long impetuosity. 3113 The part of the cloud that had formed like the head of a child being strangled was in awful convulsions, or lashed in the most ungovernable fury but it was it and also the cloud part that had connected with the neck that the main uproar held its sway.

That whole what had been the head reared and reared into a thousand conflicting cloudy channels also all in the most frenzied convulsions, while the cloud connecting with the neck was gyration in gyration gigantic and unnumberable vortices and all whirling and plunging in to the eastward with a rapidity which even water never else where assumes except in very swift precipitous descent. I cannot dare to describe even to save my life the terrible shrieks and yells that went up for to heaven and sheer from the upper cloud connected with the revolving torso.

Oh God help those who are in its path" I cried. I never saw a storm that varying mad before and its forward movement was being retarded badly by the speed of its whirl.

All those who ever experienced or saw tornadoes ever saw anything like it. Before it got very dark the great holed beautiful beauty of the scene revealed itself. The column seemed higher longer and more massive seeming to be longer three times longer than any tornado before. It had a strange very strange concentric motion where it connected with the main cloud showing exquisite whirling surfaces due to the upper moving currents. It was like the decoration of the side of a great whirling sarcophagus.

The roaring of the twister coming nearer was deafening and the electric display of lightning was terrifying constant claps of thunder following the flashes of lightning.



3114 which gave the darkening sky  
a dazzling electrical brightness.  
And this vast mass of tumult sound-  
ness was beautifully accentuated by  
these lightning flashes. Then there came  
again one of those most awful lightning flashes.  
The frightful explosion of thunder that followed  
I felt sure was the worst of all of the dreadful  
display of lightning the thunder diminishing  
in intensity for two minutes.

That thunder crash again shook our house  
to its very foundation the door and window  
swinging upon their hinges.

This thunder was immensely more loud  
than the loudest thunder of any violent storm  
I ever heard. Later I heard that roar of thunder  
was heard as far as Chicago, Bloomington, Kankakee  
So. La. and Mobile, and violently vibrated  
all windows in these cities and caused great  
consternation.

I was greatly excited by this extraordinary  
phenomenon which appeared to head for our town,  
the base on the ground like a large convulsed  
high black shroud. People seeing it coming  
left their homes in utmost consternation and as  
to a mind distracted with terror every suggestion  
seemed more prudent than its own friend in  
great crowds about our house.

We still remained on our porch on the  
midst of a most dangerous and dreadful  
scene. On the other hand a black and  
most dreadful cloud hurled with an  
ignominious serpentine flash of lightning  
but the largest and longest lightning ever  
seen. It was followed by a thunder roll  
that seemed to split earth and sky together.

At this moment the cloud seemed to  
descend and cover the whole country side.

A terrible darkness overpread us, not  
like that of a dark cloudy night, or when there  
is no moon but of a small room when

it is all shut up, the window  
curtains drawn down and all the  
light are extinct. Nothing then was to be  
heard but the wailing shrieks of women,  
the screams of children the cries of men, a  
tumultuous barking and howling of dogs and the  
mad roar of the storm.

Another big lightning came worse than the  
others put together in one, and the same of the  
thunder whose shock broke the windows of my house.  
Then again we were immersed in thick darkness  
and a heavy shower of hail began to fall, I be-  
lieve the size of cricket eggs.

I may say that during all this scene  
of horror, not a sign or expression of fear escaped me  
had not my support been founded in that  
miserable though strong consolation that all  
mankind were involved in the same calamity  
and that I imagined I was going to perish  
with the town and people with the world itself.

A distance I heard a frightful noise in  
the direction of the orphanage but it was too dark  
to see what was happening.

When darkness somewhat slackened we  
saw no trace of the orphanage, its school  
building or park like grounds. From the state-  
ments made by those fortunate to  
escape with their lives and from a personal  
examination of the ground I doubtfully inferred  
that the wreckage of the building must  
have been flying fully six miles through  
the air and the killed and injured children  
and attendants and other waken so far  
four miles further.

All this was done in thirty seconds  
so that the wreckage of the building and  
its occupants were hurled over the country  
at the rate of two miles a minute.

The velocity of all this may be way  
over estimated but in its awful suddenness  
this catastrophe was evidently an untold tragedy.

3116 Indeed the force of this winter was most enormous beyond any conception. I now what later was told what made the horror all the greater was a frightful error of judgment.

The superior or superintendent of the Gleaner Orphanage, had refused to be warned in time of the mad cap winter coming and prevented the orphans or the employees from making their escape until it was too late. Dashed as it fell, was it swept so slowly forward that all who could have had time to escape if he believed the warning.

Not until the maelstrom of horror had actually reached the wall, was the order for departure given. Before the order could be acted up the tornado sent the fragments of the building flinging in all directions and other directions falling around and scattering the vast majority of the inmates including him, his wife and most precious office possessions.

His sense of security was dreadful and fatally disrupted when with almost savage screaming fury the tornado struck it like an immense colossal explosion and flung the fragments of the Orphanage and School and play-ground so far forward into the air as to disappear out of sight into the wilderness.

Fifteen or twenty most violent explosions in one could not have done this. The buildings and all other property had literally been blown away and scattered up and down all over the face of the country.

It took a week working day and night to recover all the injured children and some employees they were scattered

so far and wide. Scattered huge machinery was also found 3117 beyond Janeville and the superintendent's office property consisting of a wooden big book table and other utensils. The original foundations of the building also was pulled out of the ground he continued to us "as I saw. For some reason very extraordinary, a slight mud slope falls away for half a mile, where there had been no mud slope before, it sloped until it reached a level.

All our night still below us was a brick shattered wall a half block long, probably the remains of the hospital, all in a long stretch of strange purple blue mud, broken up into small ripples and waves and beams upon its bottom or even into its fragments of window sash and broken glass.

I was standing near the ragged edge of what was left of the wall. I wondered exceedingly where the purple blue mud came from and where did the tornado pick it up.

### Very unbelievable scenes Some tornado.

A long length of railroad track rails with ties attached lay upright abut across the shattered wall and it did not come from our ruined railroad bed along side the river either.

Before the tornadoic explosion, there had been three buildings, the main orphanage, the three story school and four story hospital. Of these the highest was the Asylum five stories up. Each building had the same length and as wide and almost very truncated slate roofs as same.

That tornado was just like a most gigantic boiler explosion. I believe the three buildings and most of the ground beneath the foundations was blown without much in

3118 a strange forward lateral sort of direction and all of the buildings must have been converted by the force of the tornado at the moment of the violent contact into clouds of debris, brick and swirling dust of all of which was projected through the air in a northeasterly direction to be scattered a long distance far and wide and then take the form of a big cloud of dust which was blown with vast inconceivable rapidity and covered the country for thirty square miles in such devastation. At least that is what the survivors told me.

The superlendant though surviving will never be able to walk again and never will his wife. In the devastated buildings many lives were lost. As no one because of the intense darkness could see what was actually happening no one can describe the mass features of the catastrophe.

The gathering gloom of the forenoon part of the storm cloud was suddenly changed into a darkness more intense than that of midnight. The velocity of the wind force as could be seen was far from being overestimated even in the awful suddenness of this catastrophe.

The buildings destroyed may have been largely composed of strong brick work while the ground floor consisted of large long gray stone layers. Yet by the force of the twister they must have almost instantaneously been whirled into clouds of debris and flying bodies of the storm the distance they must have flown must have been very very enormous.

As I and the people of my team of Gleason had always seen there was formerly a play ground of about two hundred and seventy five acres in area which was on its way one of the most remarkable

play grounds upon as far as to 3119 been located upon the earth. It had a dozen beautiful very large oak trees and five stately elms. The play ground equipment including the seated carriage like swings were too many to describe. Formerly I say for this play ground no longer exist trees and all it having been destroyed by the forces of this wild cut tornado.

Here against the school house south side had been constructed a series of beautiful terraces two to six feet high being brown being hewn from white yellow pink and emerald green colored marble.

These terraces consisted in broad steps towards the main entrance of the school building and looked like a series of round staircases change into stone each within an upward stepping distance.

There on were no more beautiful produced products of manufacture upon the earth I believe than those colored stepping terraces as they were called. The first of the wide and long terraced steps was of the purest white the others all the colors of the artists paint box. But all their beauty and costly magnificence could not save them from the utter and irremediable destruction by the force of this unmeasurable twister.

Of course the tornado made rapid progress sent a spectacle of never equalled grandeur. But the greatest resultant loss is the destruction of those well made famous in construction the white pink and other colored terrace like steps in the front of the school house. It all was broken up and disappeared and the beautiful terrace like steps are no more. Unfortunately in this case the tornado destroyed the most beautiful marble construction on the surface of the globe.

3120 I think we all screamed at this sight of indescribable devastation. I know we all wept but we of the town were all speechless for a new horror and terror had been added to the earth. It was the most unutterable of horrible yet wonderful things.

The words of common speech was quite useless, it was unnamable, indescribable a sight to remember forever a sight which at once took possession of every faculty of sense and soul remaining one altogether out of the range of ordinary life. Here what was done by the furious demoniacal tornado known, as if no power on earth or heaven could land it.

It was beyond any conception. I thought no one could see what was happening because of the intense darkness, the sound of the storm to me when it was wiping out the Gleason aphanage buildings and the terrace, was like a tremendous roaring of ten thousand blast furnaces all at work at once.

This terrible tornado had raged with full circumstances of indescribable terror and utmost and dignity exhibiting its marvellous phenomena through all its courses.

Yet after the stormer had passed we noticed that the main part of the black cloud, especially nearest to it was giving growling and strange rumbling sounds and even detonations, rushing hissing splashing and the crashing sound of breakers on the coast.

But what can I say. Such words as its fountain fountain down and waves spray convey some idea of order and regularity, but here there was none.

The foremost object was the vast dark cloud in the most crazy motion but for a moment the under surface of the